



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

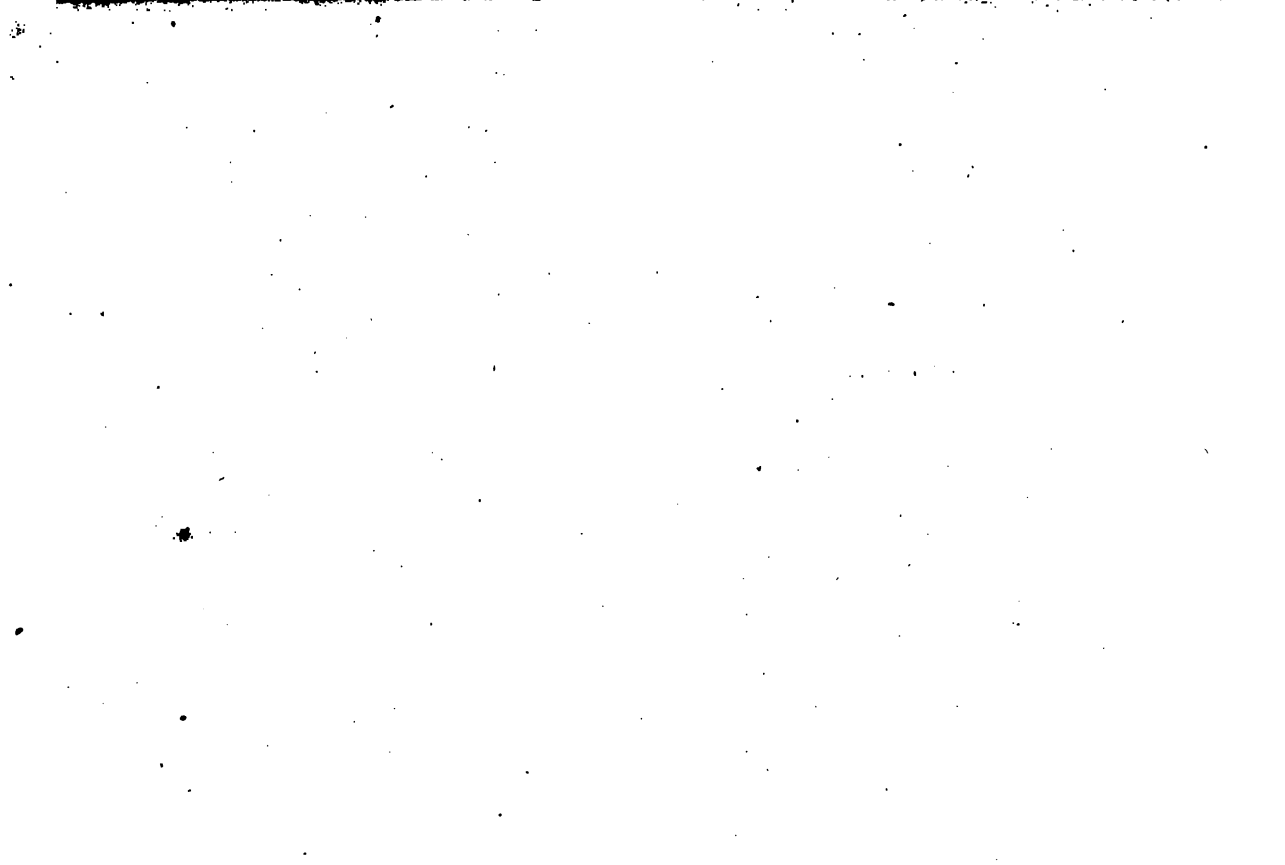
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





**GRAMMAR**  
OF  
**HOUSEHOLD WORDS IN FOUR LANGUAGES**

ADAPTED TO THE SEPARATE OR SIMULTANEOUS STUDY OF

**ENGLISH, GERMAN, FRENCH, AND ITALIAN;**

FORMING A COMPARATIVE APPENDIX,

**TRAVELLER'S VOCABULARY, AND CONVERSATIONAL COMPANION TO ALL GRAMMARS AND READING BOOKS.**

CONTAINING

A COMPLETE COURSE OF GRAMMATICAL EXERCISES: MONEY TABLES, SHOWING THE RELATIVE VALUE OF FOREIGN AND BRIT  
COINS, WEIGHTS, AND MEASURES: A VOCABULARY OF MERCANTILE TERMS: EXAMPLES FOR MERCANTILE  
CORRESPONDENCE: AND COMPLETE LISTS OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF EACH LANGUAGE.

---

**BY J. DE POIX-TYREL.**

---

*'SERVATÂ SEMPER LEGE ET RATIONE LOQUENDI.' — Juv.*

SECOND EDITION, REVISED.

LONDON:  
**LONGMAN, GREEN, LONGMAN, ROBERTS, & GREEN.**

1863.

Entered at Stationers' Hall





LONDON

PRINTED BY SPOTTISWOODE AND CO.

NEW-STREET SQUARE

## PREFACE.\*

---

“Yes, Education Reform will come and conquer.”

WYSE. — *Speech in the House of Commons, 1835.*

It is somewhere recorded, that once upon a time a boy found in his book the following definition:—“A noun is the name of anything, as *horse, hair, justice.*” He misconceived the passage, and read thus:—“A noun is the name of anything, as *horse-hair justice.*” Being of a reflective turn, he pondered long over the wonderful mysteries of a noun, but in vain; he could not make it out. His father happened to be a justice of the peace, and one day the old gentleman was holding a justice’s court;—there he sat in state on an old-fashioned horse-hair seat. A new light suddenly broke in upon the tyro’s mind,—“My father,” said he, mentally, “is a horse-hair justice, and therefore a noun.” It is, however, with the hope that a new and brighter ray of light than the one just mentioned may break in upon those who are desirous of acquiring the power of speaking foreign languages, that this work is offered for study and perusal. Besides forming a conversational companion to all grammars, the present publication is in itself a complete work and self-instructor, containing all the essential rules of grammar, concisely and progressively worked up in the thirty-three exercises. *It is*

\* This Preface should be carefully read.

not intended to suit any particular grammatical theory, but its object is to assist both learned and unlearned in the acquirement of a conversational power in foreign languages hitherto considered so difficult of attainment, but which can easily be accomplished by keeping before the student the grammatical resemblance or difference of each language, together with the idioms as they daily and naturally occur. The present conversational course is based on the broad philological principle of comparative grammar; it is the result of a multitude of facts and experiments, developed step by step with a mathematical precision, that will not allow of a transposition of any of the sections any more than a transposition of the problems in Euclid, of which the truth will soon become patent to the student whose motto is "Try."

As no work of this kind has yet appeared, experiment alone can decide whether it will be successful; that it can be made eminently useful to persons desirous of acquiring a conversational power in foreign languages the Author has no doubt, and he is confident that any Englishman will be able to accomplish the task on the simple condition that he proceeds in the right way.

Most grammars profess to deal with grammatical difficulties only, leaving the difficulty of idiom for future and prolonged studies. Can this be wise? Does not idiom mingle with the earliest and the most simple sentence uttered by a child, whose fluency at an early age is often and deservedly a subject of envy to the student of mature age? And how has this fluency been attained? Has it been attained by practising the eye in studying a multiplicity of rules and the hand in writing interminable themes? No; the child has never been to school, and cannot *even read*; it is to the exercise of ear and tongue alone that he owes this fluency, and it is to the *neglect of this exercise alone that must* be attributed that lamentable deficiency of conversa-

## PREFACE.

v

tional power of which the most industrious student so often complains. "*Fabricando fabrifimus*" is an old proverb and a true one, and will ever remain so. It is well echoed in the words of the celebrated Roger Ascham, tutor to Queen Elizabeth, — "All languages, both learned and mother tongues together, are gotten solely by imitation." The art of speaking will never be acquired through the exercise of the eye and hand alone, any more than the power of performing on a musical instrument can be attained without practice. What would a pupil think of his music-master, if he were to say to him,—Study all the best rules for performing and fingering, but never touch the instrument, and some time or other you will be a magnificent player? Yet this is what is daily and hourly done in the study of language. Persons learn rules, but neglect putting them into practice.

The words introduced into the present work differ from those generally used in grammars. Words of daily use and hourly occurrence have been selected and grouped according to their associations; in fact, they are all "Household Words," and expressions which are acquired by children by the time they are three or four years old.

As many are deterred from the study of the German language on account of the imaginary difficulty created by the form of the German letters (alphabets and specimens of which appear in the work), the Roman character has been adopted, to simplify this difficulty to students who only wish to speak the language, without prolonging their German studies and carrying their researches into its literature.\*

\* That the student may the better distinguish ff from f in German, the characters sz have been adopted to represent the latter throughout the work. See observation on ss and sz, page 10.

## PREFACE.

The genders of nouns, which offer many difficulties, particularly in French, are presented in a new light.

The rules, *i. e.* the terminations by which the genders are said to be known, have been inserted, but unfortunately the exceptions to the rules are so numerous, that the student may well look at these rules in despair. It is not by such rules, but through the ear, that the native recognises the genders, and acquires the power of using them correctly, while scarcely an Englishman can be found who in speaking foreign languages is not frequently liable to make some egregious mistake, and simply because he tries to work by rule, and not by ear, as is the case with the native. Let the Englishman adopt the same plan through the means of *vivâ voce* exercises, and he will soon find his ear acquire a sensitiveness which is generally thought unattainable.

In this work, the proper article indicating the gender has been inserted before each noun. Instead, therefore, of paying any attention to the terminations, let the student consider the article as a prefix or part of the word, and the difficulty resolves itself into remembering the following additional syllables: *le, la, un, une*, for the French; *il, lo, uno, una*, for the Italian; and *der, die, das*, for the German, which clearly indicate without any exceptions, instead of a multitude of doubtful terminations, and as many

ties connected with the German declensions, the genitive case plural have been given in addition to the usual rules; experienced in declining the noun, and deciding

In order to diminish the difficulties

## PREFACE.

vii

connected with the terms "government" and "concord," and in order to follow a principle of uniformity, the nominative, genitive or possessive, dative, accusative, and ablative cases have been equally applied to all four languages: for it matters little whether it be by inflections or through the means of prepositions or post-positions that the different cases be made apparent; either way the cases must be clear to the mind, although perhaps invisible to the eye, or the rules of grammar cannot be understood. As much confusion arises respecting the government of verbs from the use of the term "objective case" only, the name "direct objective case" has been adopted, to correspond with the accusative case, because that case is directly governed and acted upon by the verb without the assistance of a preposition. For the same reason, the name "indirect objective case" has been adopted, to correspond with the dative and ablative cases, because these cases are indirectly governed and acted upon by the verb through the assistance of a preposition expressed or understood.

As it is impossible through description to teach the various shades of sound given to letters in their different combinations, a few rules only, of a simple and concise nature, have been given; these, however, will be sufficient to show that difficulty of pronunciation arises in many instances more from a different mode of representation and spelling than from a pronunciation really different; for it is just as easy for an Englishman to utter the sound belonging to the translation of the English word "yes," *oui*, as to pronounce the English personal pronoun *we*. A few lessons on this point from a master will do more towards a correct pronunciation than pages of written rules can effect.

As the student has to start from the mother tongue, i. e. from a known to an

known language, he should in the first place study the vocabulary, rules, notes, and observations belonging to each section and exercise previously to writing the exercise in the language which he wishes to acquire; he must then carefully compare his translation with the text in juxtaposition, and correct any error he may have committed. This done, he must turn his attention to by far the most important part of the system, *i. e.* the *vivâ voce* practice of translation and repetition,—with a master if possible, with a companion, in a class, or even alone; for there must be **SPEAKING-PRACTICE** until the utmost fluency is attained in each successive section, and this fluency will be acquired in much less time than is generally supposed: indeed, if a diligent use is made of this simple oral system, the Author is fully convinced, by more than thirty years' experience in teaching, that the power not only of translating, but also of *conversing* and even *thinking* in several languages, is within the reach of many who have longed for the accomplishment, but who have hitherto longed in vain.

January 1859.

It having been suggested to the Author by many heads of schools who have tested the utility of this conversational grammar, and who are eminently qualified to judge upon educational matters, that his "Household Words" would form an invaluable school-book if published in separate parts, he has much pleasure in stating, that the English and French and the English and German parts have been published separately, and the success they have met with fully corroborates the high opinion entertained of their value and utility.

The Author's plan being based on the principle of imitation and double translation, so strongly recommended by Roger Ascham and Locke, with endless combinations and transmutations, each work is *its own key*, thus saving the necessity and expense of a second book.

November 1862.

# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

<b>Grammatical Definitions</b> applicable to Universal Grammar. Thoughts; Words; Language; Particular Grammar; Parts of Speech; Concord; Government; Articles; Substantives, proper, common, and collective.—Gender; Number; Case shown by inflections or prepositions.—Adjectives, qualificative, possessive, demonstrative, numeral, interrogative.—Pronouns, personal, possessive, demonstrative, relative, interrogative, reflective, indefinite.—Difference between Pronouns and Adjectives.—Verbs, active or transitive, neuter or intransitive, passive, reflective or pronominal, reciprocal impersonal or unipersonal, defective, auxiliary.—Mood; Tense; Number; Person, the chief properties of Verbs.—Simple Tenses; Compound Tenses.—Different Meaning of <i>shall</i> and <i>will</i> .—Different Moods.—The Participle; its power as a Verb and Adjective.—Adverbs.—Prepositions.—Conjunctions.—Interjections . . . . .	1—7
<b>Alphabets and Pronunciation</b> . . . . .	8—11
<b>German Writing</b> . . . . .	12
<b>Important Observations</b> . . . . .	13
<b>SECTION I.—Interrogations, Affirmations, Negations.</b> To have; haben; avoir; avere. — Yes, no, not, but, and; ja, nein, nicht, aber or sondern, und; oui, non, ne or n'—pas, mais, et; si, no, non, ma, a. — Sir, Madam, Miss; mein Herr, Madame, Fräulein; Monsieur, Madame, Mademoiselle; Signore, Signora, Signorina. — <b>Nouns</b> relating to travelling. — <b>EXERCISE 1.</b> . . . . .	14—17



	Page
<b>SECTION II.—Definite Article.</b> The man's; des Mannes; de l'homme; dell' uomo.—To see; sehen, voir, vedere.— <b>EXERCISE 2.—Nouns</b> relating to travelling . . . . .	18—21
<b>SECTION III.—Gender of Nouns.</b> Irregular Terminations.—To find; finden; trouver; trovare.—To lose; verlieren; perdere; perdere.—Who? whom? wer? wen? qui? chi?— <b>EXERCISE 3.</b> . . . . .	22—25
<b>SECTION IV.—The Indefinite Article.</b> Not a, no; keinen; ne pas de; non, un.—I have one, I have not one; ich habe einen, ich habe keinen; j'en ai un, je n'en ai pas; ne ho uno, non ne ho (uno).—To bring, to take away; bringen, wegnehmen; apporter, emporter; portare, portare via.— <b>EXERCISE 4.—Nouns</b> relating to furniture . . . . .	26—29
<b>SECTION V.—Plural of Nouns.</b> Irregular plurals.—To buy, to sell; kaufen, verkaufen; acheter, vendre; comprare, vendere.— <b>EXERCISE 5.—Nouns</b> relating to furniture . . . . .	30—33
<b>SECTION VI.—Declension of Nouns.</b> Diminutives.—To give; geben; donner; dare.—To lend; leihen; prêter; prestare.—The man's; den des Mannes; celui de l'homme; quello dell' uomo.— <b>EXERCISE 6.—Nouns</b> relating to professions and trades . . . . .	34—39
<b>SECTION VII.—Personal Pronouns, in the Direct and Indirect Objective Case.</b> Where? where is? wo? wo ist? où? où est? dove? dov' è?—Here is; hier ist; voici; ecco qui.—There it is; da ist es; le voilà; eccolo.—To look for; suchen; chercher; cercare.— <b>EXERCISE 7.—Nouns</b> relating to dress . . . . .	40—43
<b>SECTION VIII.—Personal Pronouns, combined in the Direct and Indirect Objective Case.</b> To have the kindness to; die Güte haben zu; avoir la bonté de; aver la bontà di.—To have a mind to; Lust haben zu; avoir envie de; aver voglia di.—To have time to; Zeit haben zu; avoir le temps de; aver tempo di.—To be willing, to wish to; wollen; vouloir; volere.—Will you? &c.; wollen Sie? &c.; voulez-vous? &c.; vuol Ella? &c.— <b>EXERCISE 8.—Nouns</b> relating to dress . . . . .	44—47
<b>SECTION IX.—Personal Pronouns, in the Ablative or Indirect Objective Case.</b> From; von; de; da.—To send, to receive; senden, erhalten; envoyer, recevoir; mandare, ricevere.—To come, to carry ( <i>take</i> ); kommen, tragen; venir, porter; venire, portare.—To go, to send home, &c.; nach	

# CONTENTS.

xi

	PAGE
Hause gehen, senden, &c.; aller, envoyer à la maison, &c.; andare, mandare a casa, &c.—To go; gehen; aller; andare.—EXERCISE 9. . . . .	48—51
<b>SECTION X.—Possessive Adjectives.—EXERCISE 10.—Nouns of relationship</b> . . . . .	52—55
<b>SECTION XI.—Declension and Gender of Adjectives.</b> —Good, bad, large, great, big; gut, schlecht, groß; bon, mauvais, grand, gros; buono cattivo, grande.—Fine, handsome, ugly, small, little; schön, hässlich, klein; beau, vilain, petit; bello, brutto, piccolo.—Pretty, old, young; hübsch, artig, alt, jung; joli, vieux, jeune; leggiadro, vezzoso, grazioso, vecchio, giovane.—To read; lesen; lire; leggere.—To write; schreiben; écrire; scrivere.—EXERCISE 11.—Nouns relating to materials of dress; names of nations.— <b>List of Household Adjectives</b> . . . . .	56—67
<b>SECTION XII.—Possessive Pronouns.</b> —The good; der gute; le bon; il buono.—My good; mein guter; mon bon; il mio buono, &c.—EXERCISE 12. . . . .	68—71
<b>SECTION XIII.—The Verb "To Be,"</b> combined with Adjectives. To be; sein; être; essere.—Here, there; hier, da, dort; ici, là, y; quì, quà, là; ci, ce, vi, ve.—To be at home, &c.; zu Hause sein, &c.; être à la maison, &c.; essere in casa, &c.—To be right or wrong in; Recht, Unrecht haben zu; avoir raison, tort de; aver ragione, torto di.—To be hungry; hungrig sein; avoir faim; aver fame.—To be thirsty; durstig sein; avoir soif; aver sete.—EXERCISE 13. . . . .	72—75
<b>List of Household Verbs</b> . . . . .	76—87
<b>SECTION XIV.—Partitives combined with Nouns,</b> some, any. Any, some ( <i>not used in German</i> ); du, del.—No, not any; kein; ne pas de; non.—To eat, to drink; essen, trinken; manger, boire; mangiare, bere.—To taste, to take; kosten, nehmen; goûter, prendre; gustare, prendere.—A few, several; einige, verschiedene; quelques, plusieurs; alcuni, parecchi.—EXERCISE 14.—Nouns relating to the dinner-table . . . . .	88—93
<b>SECTION XV.—Partitives combined with Verbs.</b> Any, some; welchen; en; ne.—None, not any; keinen; n'en pas; non ne.—A few, several; einige, etliche; en, quelques-uns; ne, alcuni.—To pay for, to overcharge; bezahlen, überfordern; payer, demander trop; pagare, domandare troppo.—EXERCISE 15.—Nouns: fish and vegetables . . . . .	94—97

	PAGE
<b>SECTION XVI.—Something, Anything, Nothing.</b> Something, anything; etwas, irgend etwas; quelque chose; qualche cosa, alcuna cosa.—Nothing, not anything; Nichts; ne rien; non niente, non nulla.—To want, to be in want of; nöthig haben; avoir besoin de; aver bisogno di.—Anything, something good, nothing good; etwas gutes, nichts gutes; quelque chose de bon, nerien de bon; qualche cosa di buono, non niente di buono.—Instead of; anstatt; au lieu de; in vece di.—Anybody, somebody; Jemand; quelqu'un; alcuno.—Nobody, no one; Niemand; personne ne, ne personne; nessuno, niuno, non nessuno, niuno.— <b>EXERCISE 16.</b> — <b>Nouns:</b> beverages and fruits	98—101
<b>SECTION XVII.—Demonstrative Adjectives.</b> That, those; jener, jene; ce, ces; quello, quelli.—The other, another; der andere, ein anderer; l'autre, un autre; l'altro, un altro.—The one and the other, both; der eine und der andere, beide; l'un et l'autre, tous deux; l'uno e l'altro, ambidue, ambo.—Or, neither, nor; oder, weder, noch; ou, ne, ni, ni; o, non, nè, nè.—Where? whither? there, thither; wo? wohin? da, dahin; où? dove, ove? vi or ve, ci or ca.—To carry it there, to, into; es dahin tragen auf; l'y porter à; portarcelo a.— <b>EXERCISE 17.</b> — <b>Nouns:</b> writing materials, and future tense of the verb <i>to have</i>	102—107
<b>SECTION XVIII.—Demonstrative Pronouns.</b> This one or this; dieser; celui-ci; questo.—That one, that; jener; celui-là; quello, &c.—This, that; dies, das; ceci, cela; ciò, questo.—When? to-day, to-morrow, yesterday; wann? heute, morgen, gestern; quand? aujourd'hui, demain, hier; quando? oggi, domani, ieri.—The man's; den des Mannes; celui de l'homme; quello dell'uomo.—To; um, zu; pour; per.—Which, what; welchen; quel; quale.— <b>EXERCISE 18.</b> — <b>Nouns:</b> metals, &c.	108—111
<b>SECTION XIX.—Relative Pronouns.</b> To speak; sprechen; parler; parlare.— <b>EXERCISE 19.</b> — <b>Nouns:</b> parts of a town and country, the present tense of the verb <i>to speak</i> interrogatively, &c.— <b>Nouns:</b> names of countries	112—117
<b>SECTION XX.—Demonstrative and Relative Pronouns combined.</b> What, of which; was, wovon; ce qui, ce dont; ciò che, ciò di che.—Before I; ehe ich; avant de; prima di.—Why? because, for; warum? weil, denn; pourquoi? parce que, car; perchè? poichè, perchè.— <b>EXERCISE 20.</b> — <b>Nouns:</b> flowers, plants, trees, animals, and proper names	118—123

# CONTENTS.

xiii

PAGE

**SECTION XXI.—Interrogative Adjectives and Pronouns.** What? was für? quel? che? —To say, to tell; sagen; dire; dire. —To do, to make; thun, machen; faire; fare. —What did you tell the servant? was haben Sie dem Bedienten gesagt? qu'est-ce que vous avez dit au domestique? che cosa ha Ella detto al domestico? —What have you done? was haben Sie gethan? qu'est-ce que vous avez fait? che ha Ella fatto? —What sort of weather is it? was für Wetter ist es? quel temps fait-il? che tempo fa (or è)? —To pick up; aufheben; ramasser; raccogliere. —Present tense of the separable verb *aufheben*. —To think of; denken an; penser à; pensare a. —To think of something; an etwas denken; penser à quelque chose; pensare a qualche cosa. —EXERCISE 21. . 124—131

**SECTION XXII.—Personal Pronouns declined.** To go for, to fetch; holen; aller chercher; andare a cercare. —To send for; holen lassen; envoyer chercher; mandare a cercare. —To have or get made; machen lassen; faire faire; far fare. —To kill, slaughter; tödten, schlachten; tuer; uccidere, macellare. —To listen; anhören; écouter; ascoltare. —To answer; antworten; répondre; rispondere. —In, on, for, with; in, auf, für, mit; dans, sur, pour, avec; in, su, per, con, —their combination with the article. —How? well, badly, ill; wie? wohl, gut, schlecht; comment? bien, mal; come? bene, male. —Ill, unwell; krank, unwohl; malade; malato, ammalato. —Ever, never, now, just now; je, nie, jetzt, sogleich; jamais, ne jamais, à présent, tout à l'heure; mai, non mai, adesso, subito (or ora). —It, in it, to answer it; darauf, darin, darauf antworten; y, y répondre; ci, vi, risponderci. —EXERCISE 22.—Nouns: birds, insects, reptiles . 132—141

**SECTION XXIII.—Indefinite or Improper Pronouns.** All, something, nothing; alles, etwas, nichts; tout, quelque chose; tutto, qualche cosa, niente. —It, so; es; le; lo. —Do you like? gern essen; aimez-vous? Le piace? —Must I? am I to? muß ich? soll ich? dois-je? me faut-il? Debbo? devo? deggio? —Can I? may I? kann ich? mag ich? darf ich? puis-je? posso? —EXERCISE 23.—Nouns: musical, instrumental. —Impersonal verbs denoting the state of the weather . 142—149

**SECTION XXIV.—Words expressing Quantity combined with Nouns.** How much? how many? wie viel, wie viele? combien de? quanto? quanti? —Much; viel; beaucoup de; molto. —Too much; zu viel; trop de; troppo. —So much; so viel; tant de; tanto. —A little; ein wenig;

un peu de; poco, un poco di.—But; nur; ne que; non che.—Enough; genug; assez de; abbastanza.—Not enough; nicht genug; ne pas assez de; non abbastanza.—Any more; noch; encore de; ancora.—No more; kein mehr; ne plus de; non più.—A few more; noch einige; encore quelques; ancora alcuni.—Not yet; noch nicht; ne pas encore; non ancora.—**EXERCISE 24.**—Miscellaneous household nouns . . . . .

150—155

**SECTION XXV.—Words of Quantity combined with Pronouns and Verbs.** How much (of it)? wie viel davon? combien en? quanto ne? Much (of it); (dessen) viel, viel; en—beaucoup; ne—molto.—Too much (of it); (dessen) zu viel; en—trop; ne—troppo.—So much (of it); (dessen) so viel; en—tant; ne—tanto.—A little (of it); (dessen) wenig; en—un peu, peu; ne—poco, &c.—To put on, to take off; anziehen, ausziehen; mettre, ôter; mettersi, levarsi.—Before, after; vor, nach; avant, après; avanti, dopo.—Then, afterwards, as soon as; dann, nachher, so bald als; puis, ensuite, aussitôt que; poi, indi, subito che, tosto che.—To let, to allow, to excuse, to beg pardon; lassen, erlauben, verzeihen; laisser, permettre, excuser, demander pardon; lasciare, permettere, scusare, perdonare.—**EXERCISE 25.**—Nouns relating to the parts of the body . . . . .

156—161

**SECTION XXVI.—Numbers, Cardinal, Ordinal, and Fractional.** An hour and half; anderthalb Stunden; une heure et demie; un' ora e mezzo.—A week, in a fortnight, to-morrow week; acht Tage, eine Woche, in vierzehn Tagen, Morgen über acht Tage; huit jours, une semaine, dans quinze jours, demain en huit; otto giorni, una settimana, fra quindici giorni, domani in otto giorni.—How often? wie oft? combien de fois? quante volte?—Early, late, in the morning, in the evening; früh, spät, des Morgens, des Abends; de bonne heure, tard, le matin, le soir; di buon' ora, tardi, la mattina, la sera.—**EXERCISE 26.**—Nouns relating to time, seasons, &c. . . . .

162—171

**SECTION XXVII.—Degrees of Comparison.—Formation of the Comparative and Superlative Degrees.** Irregular English, German, French, and Italian Adjectives.—Irregular Adverbs.—As much as; so viel wie; autant que; tanto quanto.—To show, to be worth; zeigen, werth sein; montrer, valoir; mostrare, valere.—To get, to be better; verschaffen (sich), besser sein; procurer (se), valoir mieux; procurare (si), esser meglio.—To get rid of, to be worth while to; losmachen (*sich*) (*von*), der Mühe werth sein zu; se défaire, valoir la peine de; disfarsi, valer la pena di.—To

## CONTENTS.

PAGE

sell cheap, to sell dear; wohlfeil verkaufen; vendre à bon marché, vendre cher; vendere a buon mercato, vender caro.—**EXERCISE 27.**—**Nouns** relating to God and the elements . . . . . 172—179

**SECTION XXVIII.—Comparison between Words of Quantity combined with Nouns and Pronouns.** Two too many, two less: zwei zu viel, zwei weniger; deux de trop, deux de moins; due di troppo, due di meno.—**Examples of the different tenses of verbs.**—To owe, to wear; schuldig sein, tragen; devoir, porter; dovere, portare.—To try, to ask for somebody; versuchen zu, nach Jemand fragen; essayer de, demander quelqu'un; provare a, domandare di qualchuno.—To succeed, to ask for something; gelingen, etwas verlangen; réussir à, demander quelque chose; riuscire a, domandare qualche cosa.—To like to; lieber mögen; aimer mieux; amar meglio, più.—**EXERCISE 28.** . . . . . 180—185

**SECTION XXIX.—Participles**—Their power as verbs and adjectives; **nouns** relating to the army; reflective and other verbs.—**EXERCISE 29.** . . . . . 186—193

**SECTION XXX.—Adverbs.** Lists of adverbs—the place they occupy in a sentence.—To manage; anfangen; s'y prendre; prendersi.—To pay ready money; baares Geld bezahlen; payer argent comptant; pagare contanti.—To be in trouble about; sich bekümmern über; être en peine de; s'inquiéter de; inquietarsi.—To be the matter; sich handeln um; s'agir de; trattarsi di.—To long to; sich sehnen zu; tarder de; esser impaziente di.—In vain; vergebens, so viel—auch; avoir beau, en vain; in vano, aver bel.—**Nouns** and **EXERCISE 30.**—**Nouns** relating to secular and clerical dignities, &c. . . . . 194—201

**SECTION XXXI.—Prepositions.** Lists of prepositions with the cases they govern.—**EXERCISE 31.**—**Nouns** relating to secular and clerical dignities, &c. . . . . 202—209

**SECTION XXXII.—Conjunctions**—Their influence over other words; subjunctive mood, &c. **Nouns** relating to the navy.—**EXERCISE 32.**—**Nouns** relating to arts and sciences, &c. . . . . 210—217

**SECTION XXXIII.—Interjections.** Verbs and nouns relating to playing at cards, &c.—**EXERCISE 33.**—**Nouns**; the passions, mental faculties, &c. . . . . 218—223

## TESTIMONIAL FROM THE REV. JOHN DAY COLLIS, D.D.,

*Head Master of the School of King Edward VI., Bromsgrove, Worcestershire; Honorary Canon of Worcester; late Fellow of Worcester College, Oxford; First Class in Classics, Easter 1838; Hebrew Scholar in the University of Oxford, 1839 and 1841.*

~~~~~  
‘I was much struck with the *plan* of M. de Poix-Tyrel’s “Household Words in Four Languages” on its first announcement, and a close examination of it has convinced me that its execution as well as its plan is excellent. It is so simple in its arrangement, and yet so progressive, that the pupil is insensibly carried on from the first elements of grammar to complete idiomatic conversations, involving a knowledge of the more advanced parts of grammar—and that, too, without the usual dry routine of unapplied rules. M. Tyrel’s book has also this advantage, that the words and phrases are the real modern phrases of every-day life; the words and phrases that every traveller wants on his first arrival in a foreign country. It is not merely a Grammar of Four Languages, but, as its title states, “Household Words in English, German, French, and Italian,” so systematically arranged that the four languages can be studied either singly or simultaneously.

‘I strongly urged upon M. Tyrel the advisability of publishing the English and French and the English and German parts separately, with a view to their introduction into schools. Useful as are the four languages, as arranged in his book for the traveller (and I have tested its utility in a late tour on the Continent), the separate Grammars form *invaluable school books*. I have used them largely with my own pupils, and have sat by while M. Tyrel has used them in my school, and I feel sure that their plan is sound, their execution good, their utility immense for readily imparting knowledge, and also for keeping up attention on the part of the pupils.

‘I was also struck with the *endless variety of conversations* that can at a moment’s notice be formed out of the materials of M. Tyrel’s books; and how, by a slight insertion or change of numbers, mood, or tense, affirmative or negative particles, he could keep the attention of a *large class* alive, and prevent the apparent easiness of his exercises from engendering idleness or inattention. Any one who has mastered the *thirty-three* exercises of which the book consists will find himself well supplied with a large *copula verborum* and all the most useful grammatical constructions, and the constant iteration of nearly similar phrases tends to make the lessons, once acquired, fixed for ever in the memory, and will doubtless facilitate the art of speaking as well as writing either French, German, or Italian, in the case of any one who diligently uses this very practical manual.

‘JOHN DAY COLLIS, D.D.,

Hon. Canon of Worcester; Head Master of Bromsgrove School;  
late Fellow of Worcester College, Oxford.’

In addition to the above Testimonial from the Rev. Dr. Collis, who has been engaged upwards of *twenty years* in teaching the Classics and Modern Languages, all the leading literary and educational critics have also bestowed the highest commendation on the *originality, comprehensiveness, and simplicity* of M. de Poix-Tyrel’s ‘Grammar of Household Words.’

The Author, having previously been permitted to submit a copy of his work to the inspection of his late lamented Royal Highness the Prince Consort, was, on the 27th of February, 1860, honoured with a most gracious command to forward to his Royal Highness six copies of the ‘Household Words in English, German, French, and Italian.’

NEW EDITION JUST PUBLISHED.

# PRELIMINARY PHILOLOGICAL AND GRAMMATICAL DEFINITIONS

APPLICABLE TO

## LANGUAGES IN GENERAL.

---

**Language** taken in the most comprehensive view may be said to imply certain *sounds*, having certain meanings embodied in *voices articulate*, or *words* called *speech*.

**Speech** enables man to communicate his *ideas* or *thoughts of perception* and *volition*.

**Grammar** teaches how *speech* may be naturally *resolved*; or how, when *resolved*, it may be again *combined*. Philosophical or universal grammar is a science, and teaches the principles essential to all languages, without regarding their particular idioms.

**Particular Grammar** is an art based on the science of universal grammar, and teaches the rules belonging to any *particular language*.

As thought refers to things that exist (nouns), or to actions (verbs), independently of spoken or written language, ideas entertained will be identical in all languages; that is, a singular, plural, partitive, qualificative, definite, indefinite, possessive, demonstrative, or active idea, must exist as such, independently of the peculiar manner in which it may be expressed.



|                                                                                                  |                                 |                                  |      |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------|----------------------------------|------|
| Simple or nominal idea ; as,                                                                     | chicken,                        | expressed by the noun,           | 1.   |
| Definite idea,                                                                                   | „ the chicken,                  | „ definite article,              | } 2. |
| Indefinite idea,                                                                                 | „ a chicken,                    | „ indefinite article,            |      |
| Partitive idea,                                                                                  | „ some chicken,                 | „ partitive article,             |      |
| Qualificative idea,                                                                              | „ young, good chicken,          | „ adjective,                     | } 3. |
| Possessive idea,                                                                                 | „ my chicken,                   | „ possessive adj. or pronoun,    |      |
| Demonstrative idea,                                                                              | „ this, that chicken,           | „ demonstrative adj. or pronoun, |      |
| Interrogative idea,                                                                              | „ which chicken ?               | „ interrogative adj. or pronoun, |      |
| Relative idea,                                                                                   | „ the chicken which,            | „ relative pronoun,              |      |
| Idea of number,                                                                                  | „ one, &c., chicken,            | „ numeral adjective,             | } 4. |
| Pronominal idea,                                                                                 | „ I, we, you, &c., mine, yours, | „ pronoun,                       |      |
| Active idea, implying action ; as, to cook, to eat,                                              | „                               | „ verb,                          | 5.   |
| Passive idea, denoting state }<br>or qualification,                                              | „ cooked, eaten,                | „ participle,                    | 6.   |
| Connecting words conveying ideas of circumstance, time, place, manner,<br>feeling, emotion, &c., |                                 | adverb,                          | 7.   |
|                                                                                                  |                                 | preposition,                     | 8.   |
|                                                                                                  |                                 | conjunction,                     | 9.   |
|                                                                                                  |                                 | interjection,                    | 10.  |

It must be evident that similar ideas to the above will arise in the mind, whether the thought be conceived in English, French, German, Italian, or any other language.

The following definitions, based on these previous observations, are intended to convey ideas of universal grammar and comparative philology.

#### CONCORD.

**Concord**, or agreement, means that words relating to each other must agree in gender, number, case, and person, as may be required ; as, *The boy is reading—The boys ARE reading—The boy and the girl ARE reading—Neither the boy nor the girl is reading.*

## GRAMMATICAL DEFINITIONS.

### GOVERNMENT.

**Government** means that one word governs another in some particular case, mood, or tense ; as, *The boy has given THE GIRL A BOOK, or The boy has given a book TO the girl that she may read it and profit BY it.*

**An Article** is a word prefixed to the noun to show in what sense the noun is used, either definite, indefinite, or partitive ; as, *THE cake, A cake, SOME cake.*

**Substantive** or **Noun** is a name given to anything that exists, or of which we can have any notion, and which can be made the subject of discourse ; as, *man, mercy.*

There are two kinds of nouns, *proper* and *common*.

Proper nouns are the names of persons and places ; as, *Victoria, London, the Thames.*

Common nouns can be subdivided into abstract, collective, derivative, verbal, and compound nouns ; as, *wisdom, the people, artist* (from art), *reading, court-martial.*

Collective nouns are singular or plural, according to their signification.

Nouns are subject to Gender, Number, and Case.

**Gender** is the distinction of sex. The English language has three genders, masculine, feminine, and neuter, following the simple arrangement of nature ; males are masculine, females are feminine, and inanimate things are neuter. The German language has also three genders, masculine, feminine, and neuter, but has not adopted the simplicity of nature. The French and Italian languages have only two genders, masculine and feminine. For the rules of gender, see Section on Genders and Preface.

**Number** is the distinction between one and many.

The singular number expresses but one object ; as, *pear, apple.*

The plural number expresses more than one object ; as, *pears, apples.* See Section on Rules for Formation of Plural.

**Case** means the state in which a noun, pronoun, article, or adjective, may be in relation to each other, or to other words in a sentence. In some languages the variety of case is exhibited by inflection of the termination ; in others, by prefixing a preposition or article to the noun, by means of which the

signification is expressed ; as, THE BOY *has given* THE GIRL *her* BROTHER'S PORTRAIT ; and in others, as in the Eastern languages, by means of a *post-position* after the noun.

An **Adjective** is a word that cannot stand by itself, but always refers to some noun expressed or understood, and is used to mark the quality of any person, place, or thing.

In English the adjective is invariable, no matter what may be the gender or number of the word it qualifies ; but in French, German, and Italian it is variable, and is subject to the rules of concord. See Section on Adjectives.

The adjective has, in all four languages, the same property of being subject to degrees of comparison.

1. Adjectives may be **qualificative** ; as, *good, bad.*

2. **Possessive** ; as, *my, thy, his, her, its, our, your, their*, which cannot be used for *mine, thine, ours, yours*, which are possessive pronouns, and which are always used instead of a noun.

3. **Demonstrative** ; as, *this, that, these, those*, which must be parsed as demonstrative adjectives

when joined to nouns, and as demonstrative pronouns when standing alone.

4. **Numeral** ; as, *one, two, three, four, &c., first, second, third, fourth, &c.*

5. **Interrogative** ; as, *What or which book do you want?*

A **Pronoun** is a word that cannot be joined to a noun, but is always used instead of it ; as, *That book is your book, but this is mine* ; i. e., instead of saying, *but this book is my book.*

**Pronouns** are divided into *personal, possessive, demonstrative, relative, interrogative, reflective, and indefinite*, and are subject to concord and government. See Sections on Pronouns.

A **Verb** is a word that denotes a state of existence or action ; as, *I AM a man—I SEE you.*

**Verbs** are subdivided into auxiliary, active, or transitive, reflective, reciprocal, neuter, or intransitive, impersonal, or unipersonal, passive, and defective.

An **active** or **transitive** verb denotes that its subject acts on something ; as, *I see you.*

## GRAMMATICAL DEFINITIONS.

A **neuter** or **intransitive** verb denotes that the subject exists or acts, but that it does not act on anything ; as, *I sleep, I stand, I am.*

A **passive** verb denotes that its subject receives or suffers an action ; as, *I am punished—I am being punished.*

A **reflective** or **pronominal** verb denotes that the action reflects back on the subject, and has two pronouns ; as, *I hurt myself.*

A **reciprocal** verb denotes an interchange or reciprocity of action between two or more subjects, and consequently cannot be used in the singular number ; as, *They struck each other—We assist one another.*

An **impersonal** or **unipersonal** verb denotes an action in which the subject is not named ; as, *It rains, it snows.* These verbs have no relation to any person or thing.

**Defective** verbs are those which are only used in certain tenses ; as, *Can, may, must, could, might.*

**Auxiliary** verbs are verbs that are joined to other verbs to assist in conjugating them through their varieties of mood, tense, number, and person.

*To have* and *to be*,—*Haben, sein, werden—Avoir, être,—Avere, essere,* are the auxiliary verbs belonging to the English, German, French, and Italian languages, which are used to conjugate the tenses not inflected. See Appendix of Verbs.

**Mood, Tense, Number, and Person** are the chief properties of verbs.

**Mood** means the manner in which the being, action, or passion of a verb is represented ; as, *to write, he writes, write ! he could write, if he write ;* giving five moods, the infinitive, the indicative, the imperative, the conditional, and the subjunctive.

Moods consist of tenses, by which is meant a distinction of time ; properly speaking, there are only three divisions of time, *past, present, and future.* Other tenses have been added to these, and a multiplicity of names given them, the solution of which is as yet a problem both to teacher and pupil, as there is no conformity of definition carried throughout the various names adopted in different grammars : the following is the most simple nomenclature common to most languages :—

1. The *present*, denoting the time that now is ; as, *I write, I am writing, I do write.*

2. The *imperfect* or *past* tense, denoting the time past, indefinitely or indeterminately ; as, *I wrote, I was writing, I did write.*

3. The *perfect*, which denotes the time past definitely ; as, *I have written, I have been writing.*

4. The *pluperfect*, which denotes the time past, but relatively prior to some other specified time ; as, *I had written my letter when you arrived, I had written my letter before I left home.*

5. The *future*, which denotes the time to come ; as, *I shall write, we shall write, he will write, you will write, they will write a letter to-morrow.*

As the future is equally denoted by *shall* and *will*, many persons find a difficulty in the use of these two words.

*Shall* is used in the first persons of both numbers to indicate futurity ; in the second and third persons of both numbers *shall* is used to command, threaten, or promise ; as, *I shall be punished, I shall go to-morrow, and he shall go also, because I wish it.*

*Will* in the first person of both numbers implies

resolution, and in the second and third persons of both numbers futurity of action ; as, *I will punish you—He will hurt himself.*

In asking a question, *shall* and *will* exchange their meaning ; as, *I shall go, you will go, they will go*, only foretell a future event ; but, *Shall I go ? shall we go ?* refer to the will and permission of another person. *Will you go ? will he go ?* imply intention and will, and not futurity of action ; *Will I ? will we ?* cannot be put as a question, because we cannot be ignorant of our own will.

In German the student must take care not to confound the verbs *wollen, sollen*, and the future which is formed with the auxiliary *werden*.

**Compound tenses** are those which are formed by combining the past participle of any verb with either of the auxiliaries ; as, *I have written, I had written, I shall have written, I should have written.*

The **infinitive mood** is the radical verb which simply names the action ; as, *to write.*

The **indicative** affirms ; as, *I write, I wrote, I did write, I have written, I shall write.*

The **imperative** commands ; as, *Write !*

## GRAMMATICAL DEFINITIONS.

The **conditional**, or **potential**, corresponding with the imperfect of the subjunctive in Latin, affirms with a condition ; as, *I could or should write if . . . .*

The **potential** implies ability, will, duty, liberty, and may be resolved into the infinitive of any verb combined with the present and past tenses of the defective auxiliary verbs of mood, *I may, I can, I must*, and may refer to a present, past, or future action ; as, *I may write, I might write, I might have written : would* implies inclination, and *should* obligation ; they must not be used indiscriminately.

The **subjunctive** or **conjunctive** is so called because it makes no complete sense of itself, and is subjoined to some preceding sentence or verb by means of a conjunction : it is generally used in combination with verbs implying doubt, fear, desire, &c. ; as, *I desire that she MAY do it ; but whether she DO it or not, I fear she MAY be accused of neglect.*

A **Participle** is a word derived from a verb, and is so called because it participates in the power of a verb by denoting action and government, and of an adjective by denoting qualification ; as, *The master is WRITING a letter—The WRITING-master has WRITTEN*

*the letter—He is an ACCOMPLISHED man, but he has not ACCOMPLISHED his task.* See Section on Participles.

**Adverbs** are words used to express circumstance or to modify quality of action in verbs, adjective and other adverbs ; as, *How does he write ? He writes VERY WELL WHEN he has a VERY good pen.* See Section on Adverbs.

**Prepositions** are words used to express relation between two or more objects, i. e., to show the relation that one word has with another ; as, *Will you sit BY me, and tell me ABOUT the affair that happened DURING your stay IN London ?* See Section on Prepositions.

A **Conjunction** is a part of speech used to connect words and sentences while joining or separating ideas ; as, *Take the book AND the letter to your brother, BUT mind you do not stay.* See Section on Conjunctions.

**Interjection** is a name given to all words, sounds, or sudden exclamations used to express the feelings and emotions of the mind ; as, *Fie ! For shame ! Why did you write such a letter !* See Section on Interjections.

## ALPHABETS AND PRONUNCIATION.

## ENGLISH.

A as in *father, fat, fate, fall.*B<sup>1</sup>C soft before *e, i*—civil, cell; hard before *a, o, u*—

D [cat, cot, cut.

E as in *me, met, there, mercer.*

F

G as in *ginger, gig.*

H

I as in *fine, fin, fir, caprice.*J as in *jig.*

K

L

M

N

O as in *grove, got.*

P

Q

R

S

T

U as in *funne, fustian, fur, full.*

V

W

X

Y as in *yes, folly, try.*

## GERMAN.

A as in *English, father, fat.*

B

C like *ts* in *sits* before *e* and *i*; other-

D [wise hard.

E as in *met, there.*

F

G as in *get*; never as in *ginger.*

H never mute at the beginning of words.

I as in *feel, fill, caprice.*J as *y* in *yes.*

K never mute.

L

M

N

O as in *grove, got.*

P

Q

R

S, *s* final. Sounds like *s* in *seal* at the beginning of words and between two vowels, like *s* in *sea* at the end of a syllable or after a vowel.

St

T like *ts* before *ion.*U as in *fool, full.*V like *f* in *father* or *feel.*W like *v* in *veal.*

X

Y like *y* in *yes, folly.*Z like *ts* in *haunts.*<sup>1</sup> The letters standing with — have the same sound and vowel as in English.

## ALPHABETS AND PRONUNCIATION.

### FRENCH.

- A** as in *father, fat* ; as *a* in *fall* in the nasal *an*. It has the sound of the English *a* in *late* in *pays, paysan, payer*, and derivatives.
- B**
- C** as in English, but soft before *a, o, u*, when it has
- D** as in English. [the cedilla *c*.
- E** as in *met, there*, as *a* in *fall* in the nasal *en*.
- F**
- G** resembling *s* in *measure* before *i* and *e*.
- H** [the nasal *in*.
- I** as in *feel, fill, caprice* ; resembling *a* in *angry* in
- J** resembling *s* in *measure* before vowels.
- K**
- L**
- M**
- N**
- O** as in *grove, got (gros, grotte)*.
- P**
- Q**
- R**
- S** like *z* in *zeal*, or *s* in *please* between two vowels.
- T**
- U** like *tu* (two), Norfolk, or *tu*, Devon.
- V**
- W** sometimes like English *w*, and sometimes like *v*.
- X**
- Y** like *y* in *yes, folly*.
- Z**

### ITALIAN.

- A** as in *father, fat* ; never as *a* in *fall*.
- B**
- C** before *i* and *e*, as in *Chichester* ; otherwise
- D**
- E** as in *met, there*.
- F**
- G** before *i* and *e*, as in *ginger* ; otherwise har
- H** mute, equivalent to English *k* in *chi, che*.
- I** as in *feel, fill, caprice*.
- J** like *y* in *yes*, or German *j*, when forming a syllable with *t* vowel ; like *si* at the end of a word, otherwise like *i* in *ca*
- L**
- M**
- N**
- O** as in *grove, got (amore, ancora)*.
- P**
- Q**
- R**
- S** like *z* in *zeal*, or *s* in *please* between two v
- T**
- U** as in *fool, full*.
- V**
- Z** like *dz* and *ts* in *adze, wants*.



## ALPHABETS AND PRONUNCIATION.

The English alphabet consists of twenty-six letters, which are divided into consonants and vowels.

The vowels are, *a, e, i, o, u*; *w* and *y* are consonants when pronounced before a vowel in the same syllable, as in *wine, we, and year, yes*; otherwise, they are vowels, as in *few, view, folly*. *Y* has a broad sound at the end of monosyllables, or words accented on the last syllable, as in *try, shy, apply, comply*.

**Diphthongs and Triphthongs.**—When two vowels meet in the same syllable, they form a diphthong, as *praise, author, &c., &c.* When three vowels meet in the same syllable, they make a triphthong, as *buoy, eye, view, precious*; when all the vowels are not heard, they are called improper. Names of the Deity, days, months, holidays, titles of honour, proper names, words derived from proper names of persons or places, objects personified, the first word of every sentence or quotation, and every line of poetry, and all chief words, should commence with a capital letter. *I* and *O*! should always be written in capital letters. The following signs are also used in punctuation and orthography to assist in conveying the sense of words:—

|                          |                   |                 |
|--------------------------|-------------------|-----------------|
| Comma (,)                | Interrogation (?) | Diæresis (¨)    |
| Semicolon (;)            | Admiration (!)    | Quotation (" ") |
| Colon (:)                | Apostrophe (')    | Dash (—)        |
| Period, or full stop (.) | Hyphen (-)        | Parenthesis ( ) |

The diæresis is placed over the latter vowel of a diphthong, to indicate the pronunciation of both vowels, as in *aërial, naïveté*.  
The apostrophe denotes the omission of one or more letters; as, *e'er, tho', for ever and though*.

The German alphabet is composed of twenty-six letters. Besides the vowels, *a, e, i, o, u*, as in English, French, and Italian, it has what are called

## MODIFIED VOWELS.

*Äe*, or *ä*, sounded like *a* in *gamester, Aemter, Gärtner*.  
*Oe*, „ *ö*, as *eu* in French *jeune*, *Oede, Schön*.  
*Ue*, „ *ü*, as in French *dure*, *Uebel, Thüre*.  
The modified vowels express a simple sound.

## DIPHTHONGS.

*Ai, ay, ei, ey*, as in *eye, mine, Hain, mein*.  
*Au*, „ „ as in *house, Haus*.  
*Aeu, äu, eu, oi, oy*, as in *boy, Häuser, Beutel*.  
*ie* „ „ as in *see, die, Thier*.  
*ee* is pronounced like *e* long, as in *Thee, Seele*<sup>1</sup>; but when they belong to two syllables they are sounded separately; as, *be-erdigen*, to bury.  
Vowels are long when accompanying *h* in the same syllable. They are generally short before double consonants.

## DOUBLE CONSONANTS.

*ch* *ch* *ck* *ff* *ff* *ff* *ff* *pf* *pf* *pf*  
*sch* *ss* *ss* *st* *tz*

*ch* sounds like *ch* in the Scotch word, *Loch*.  
*sch* „ „ „ *sh* in the word *shilling*.  
*ss* used as a final, or after a long vowel, sounds like *ss* in *hiss*; *ss* is only used after short vowels in the middle of words.  
*th* is sounded like *t*.  
*gn, kn, pf*. Each consonant must be heard, and not pronounced as in English *knife*; they must be sounded as if a short *e* were between them; as, *der Knopf*. *Ph* sounds like *f*.  
All German nouns must begin with a capital letter.

<sup>1</sup> The final *e* in German has a sound resembling *e* in *mercier*.

The French alphabet is composed of nineteen consonants and the six vowels *a, e<sup>2</sup>, i, o, u, y*.

The *w* is only used in foreign words.

The vowel *u* is the only letter offering a little difficulty to the English student; its sound is, however, to be heard in Norfolk *two, tu*.

*U* is generally mute after the letters *g* and *q*, as in *Ai* is sounded as in *aim*, English. [*guerre, qui*.

*H*, as in English, is sometimes aspirate or silent.

*ll* has two sounds, the one resembling that of *ll* in the English word *million* or the Italian *gl*, the other that of *ll* in *excellent*.

*R* is mute in the infinitive of verbs of the first conjugation.

*Th* is sounded like *t*, and *ch* like *sh* in English.

*T* has the sound of *s* in words ending in *tion*, when in English it would be sounded as *sh*; as, *action*.<sup>2</sup>

Many of the consonants are mute at the end of words, but are generally pronounced when the following word begins with a vowel or silent *h* and the two words relate to each other; as, *mon\_ami*.

The nasal sounds are *an, en, in, ein, ien, ain, on, un*, but should never be pronounced as if a *g* were attached to them.

*gn* as in Italian: *un\_o-gnon*, an onion.

The acute accent (´), the grave accent (`), and the circumflex accent (^) affect the pronunciation of the vowels over which they are placed, and cannot be omitted without committing as serious an error in orthography as the omission of a letter would be in English.

The Italian alphabet consists of twenty-two letters the consonants *k, w, x, y*, being excluded; the vowels are *a, e, i, o, u*, and are subject to a modification of sound, being long and short as in other languages.

As the Italian language is rich in vowel sounds, diphthongs and triphthongs are heard more distinctly than in English or French, as in *autore, miei, tuoi, quello, quanto, Guido*, in which all the vowels are heard. All final vowels are sounded.

*H*, combined with *ci, ce*, as *chi, che*, gives the sound of *k*, as in *key*; *sch* like *skill*.

*H* also gives a hard sound when combined with *gi, ge*, as *ghi, ghe*, like *give, get*; otherwise *h* is always mute, and is only found in few words.

*Sce, sci*, have the sound of *sh* in *shilling*; *cc, gg, ss*, have a sharper sound than the single letter, as in *uccello, oggi, sasso*; all double letters are heard more distinctly than in English.

*gl* has the sound of *ll* in the word *million*; this combination, as in *egli*, may be heard in the English sentence, What *ail ye*?

In *anglia, angli, anglicano, negligere* and its derivatives, it is sounded as in English *negligent*.

*gn* resembles the sound of the first *n* in *onion*, as *ogni, ognuno*.

<sup>2</sup> In French poetry *e final* has the sound of *e* in *mercier*, in order to produce a cæsura.

<sup>3</sup> The *t* in *et, and*, is never sounded.

Geben Sie das Gold? Ja, mein Herr,  
 ich habe das Gold. Geben Sie den Leinwand?  
 Ja, mein Herr ich habe den Leinwand. Geben  
 Sie den Hut? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe den  
 Hut nicht. Hat er den Hut? Ja, Madame,  
 er hat den Hut. Hat sie das Gold? Ja, mein  
 Herr, sie hat das Gold. Geben Sie das Gold?  
 Ja, mein Herr, sie haben das Gold. Geben Sie den  
 Leinwand den Raynussien? Ja, mein Herr.

## READ THESE OBSERVATIONS ATTENTIVELY.

---

NOTICE the variation of *type*, intended to attract the attention of the student.

The difficulties of *gender* are easily conquered by the *new* and *simple* method mentioned in the Preface.

When translating *vivâ voce* from the English, let the student cover the text of the language that is being studied, while a fellow-student follows it, alternately taking question and answer.

As the exercises are short, and not intended for mere translation, but as models for endless combinations and transmutations to be made *instantaneously* by the student, all the nouns, adjectives, and verbs in the vocabulary should be worked up in a similar manner, until perfect fluency is acquired.

As the power of conversing in a living language can only be obtained through *speech*, it is of the utmost importance that the *ear* and *tongue* should be exercised; the student must therefore study aloud, should he be alone.

All the verbs should be studied and conjugated throughout all their tenses, after the example of the auxiliary verbs to *have*, *haben*, *avoir*, and *avere*, given in Section I. (see Appendix), i. e. question must

be immediately followed by answer, according to the order in which they are wanted in conversation taking particular care to remember, that a QUESTION asked in the *first* person will be answered in the *second* person, a question asked in the *second* person will be answered in the *first* person, and a question asked in the *third* person will be answered in the *third* person when readiness in conversing will soon be the result.

Each section introduces the student to a new subject for grammatical analysis, which should be worked upon the preceding exercises, forming a *continuity* of instruction without which no *accretion* of knowledge can be obtained.

When fluency is attained in each section, and fresh combinations are being made, make them at once from the French, German, or Italian text, in order to discard English, and to obtain the power of *thinking* in a foreign language.

While progressing through the work, the student must also repeat the exercises from the beginning, making as many fresh combinations as possible, in order to follow out the principle upon which language is naturally acquired and remembered.

## SECTION I.—INTERROGATIONS, AFFIRMATIONS, NEGATIONS.

I, thou, he, she, it; we, you, they.

Infinitive.  
**To have,**Past part.  
**had.**

Indicative Present.

Have I?                   you have, thou hast.  
 Hast thou?            I have.  
 Has he?                he has.  
 Has she?               she has.  
 Has it?                 it has.  
 Have we?               you have, we have.

Have you?            I have, we have.  
 Have they?           they have.

**Yes, no, not, but, and, also.**

Sir, Madam, Miss.

|                  |                       |
|------------------|-----------------------|
| The purse.       | the padlock.          |
| The money.       | the stick.            |
| The passport.    | the cloak.            |
| The carpet-bag.  | the shawl.            |
| The portmanteau. | the hat-, bonnet-box. |
| The key.         | the umbrella.         |

Accusative or direct objective case { *The,*  
 governed by active or transitive { all genders and  
 verbs. { both numbers.

m. & f.

 Ich, du, er, sie, es; wir, (ihr, Sie,) sie.
Infinitive.  
**Haben,**Past part.  
**gehabt.**

Indicative Present.

Habe ich?            <sup>1</sup> Sie haben, ihr habt, du hast.  
 Hast du?            ich habe.  
 Hat er?              er hat.  
 Hat sie?              sie hat.  
 Hat es?              es hat.  
 Haben wir?           Sie haben, ihr habt, wir  
                                  haben.  
 Haben Sie? <sup>1</sup> Habt ihr? Ich habe, wir haben.  
 Haben sie?           Sie haben.

**Ja, nein, nicht<sup>2</sup>, (aber, sondern<sup>3</sup>), und, { auch,  
                                   Mein Herr, Madame, Fräulein.        { nebst.**

|                 | Gen.   | Pl.   |                   | Gen.   | Pl.   |
|-----------------|--------|-------|-------------------|--------|-------|
| der Beutel,     | s,     | —     | das Hängeschloß,  | sses,  | sser. |
| das Geld,       | es, s, | er.   | der Stock,        | es, s, | "e.   |
| der Paß,        | sses,  | "ssc. | der Mantel,       | s,     | —     |
| der Nachtsack,  | es, s, | "e.   | der Shawl,        | s,     | e.    |
| der Mantelsack, | es, s, | "e.   | die Hutschachtel, | —      | n.    |
| der Schlüssel,  | s,     | —     | der Regenschirm,  | es, s, | e.    |

m.                   f.                   n.   pl. m. f. n.

Accus. *Den,       die,       das,       die.*  
 (See Declension, Sections II. and VI.)

<sup>1</sup> In polite address the Germans use the third person plural, *Sie*, which is then written with a capital letter.<sup>2</sup> The negative *nicht* is placed after the verb and the object, but before adjectives, participles, and infinitives.<sup>3</sup> *Aber* may be used after an affirmative or negative sentence, but *sondern* can only be used after a negative sentence.

## 15

<sup>6</sup> In polite address the Italians use the feminine pronouns *Ella*, *Lei*, which represent *Vossignoria*, and are written with capital letters.

## EXERCISE 1.

Have you (got<sup>1</sup>) the money? Yes, Sir, I have (got) the money.  
 —Have you the purse? Yes, Sir, I have the purse. —Have you the passport? No, Sir, I have not the passport. —Has he (got) the passport? Yes, Madam (or Ma'am), he has the passport. —Has she the money? Yes, Sir, she has the money.  
 —Have they the money? Yes, Sir, they have the money.  
 —Have we the stick and the umbrella? We have the stick and the umbrella. —You have the stick and the umbrella. —Have you the portmanteau and the carpet-bag? Yes, Sir, I have the portmanteau and the carpet-bag. —Have you the key? No, Miss, I have not the key. —Have you the padlock? No, Sir, I have not the padlock, but I have the stick. —Have you the cloak? Yes, Sir, I have the cloak, the umbrella, and the hat-box. —Have I the money? Yes, Sir, you have the money. —Have I the passport? Yes, Miss, you have the passport. —Have I the carpet-bag? No, Sir, you have not the carpet-bag, but you have the portmanteau. —Has he the key? Yes, Madam, he has the key and the padlock. —Has he the stick? Yes, Sir, he has the stick. —Has she the cloak? Yes, Miss, she has the cloak and the bonnet-box. —Have they the umbrella? No, Sir, they have not the umbrella, but they have the cloak. —Have you had the passport? Yes, Sir, I have had the passport.

|                   |                       |
|-------------------|-----------------------|
| The box (little). | the ticket.           |
| The luggage.      | the bill of exchange. |
| The note.         | the letter of credit. |
| The letter.       | the bill.             |
| The newspaper.    | the washing-bill.     |

Haben Sie das Geld? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe das Geld.  
 —Haben Sie den Beutel? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe den Beutel. —Haben Sie den Pasz? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe den Pasz nicht.<sup>2</sup> —Hat er den Pasz? Ja, Madame, er hat den Pasz. —Hat sie das Geld? Ja, mein Herr, sie hat das Geld. —Haben sie das Geld? Ja, mein Herr, sie haben das Geld. —Haben wir den Stock und den Regenschirm? Wir haben den Stock und den Regenschirm. —Sie haben den Stock und den Regenschirm. —Haben Sie den Mantel- und den Nachtsack? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe den Mantel- und den Nachtsack. —Haben Sie den Schlüssel? Nein, Fräulein, ich habe den Schlüssel nicht. —Haben Sie das Hängeschloß? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe das Hängeschloß nicht, aber ich habe den Stock. —Haben Sie den Mantel? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe den Mantel, den Regenschirm, und die Hutschachtel. —Habe ich das Geld? Ja, mein Herr, Sie haben das Geld. —Habe ich den Pasz? Ja, Fräulein, Sie haben den Pasz. —Habe ich den Nachtsack? Nein, mein Herr, Sie haben den Nachtsack nicht, aber Sie haben den Mantelsack. —Hat er den Schlüssel? Ja, Madame, er hat den Schlüssel und das Hängeschloß. —Hat er den Stock? Ja, mein Herr, er hat den Stock. —Hat sie den Mantel? Ja, Fräulein, sie hat den Mantel und die Hutschachtel. —Haben sie den Regenschirm? Nein, mein Herr, sie haben den Regenschirm nicht, aber sie haben den Mantel. —Haben Sie den Pasz gehabt? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe den Pasz gehabt.<sup>2</sup>

|               | Gen.   | Pl. |                   | Gen.   | Pl. |
|---------------|--------|-----|-------------------|--------|-----|
| das Kästchen, | s,     | —   | das Billet,       | s,     | e.  |
| das Gepäck,   | es, s. | —   | der Wechselbrief, | es, s. | e.  |
| der Zettel,   | s,     | —   | der Creditbrief,  | es, s. | e.  |
| der Brief,    | es, s. | e.  | die Rechnung,     | —      | en. |
| die Zeitung,  | —      | en. | der Waschkettel,  | s,     | —   |

<sup>1</sup> Got, which is often used in familiar language, is omitted in German, French, and Italian.

<sup>2</sup> See Note 2, page 14.

## SECTION I.—INTERROGATIONS, AFFIRMATIONS, NEGATIONS.

### EXERCISE 1.

Avez-vous (*or* Est-ce que vous avez) l'argent? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai l'argent. — Avez-vous la bourse? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai la bourse. — Avez-vous le passe-port? Non, Monsieur, je n'ai pas<sup>1</sup> le passe-port. — A-t-il<sup>2</sup> le passe-port? Oui, Madame, il a le passe-port. — A-t-elle l'argent? Oui, Monsieur, elle a l'argent. — Ont-ils (*or* elles) l'argent? Oui, Monsieur, ils (*or* elles) ont l'argent. — Avons-nous la canne et le parapluie? Nous avons la canne et le parapluie. — Vous avez la canne et le parapluie. — Est-ce que vous avez la valise et le sac de nuit? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai la malle et le sac de nuit. — Avez-vous la clef? Non, Mademoiselle, je n'ai pas la clef. — Avez-vous le cadenas? Non, Monsieur, je n'ai pas le cadenas, mais j'ai la canne. — Avez-vous le manteau? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai le manteau, le parapluie et le carton à chapeau. — Ai-je l'argent? Oui, Monsieur, vous avez l'argent. — Ai-je le passe-port? Oui, Mademoiselle, vous avez le passe-port. — Ai-je le sac de nuit? Non, Monsieur, vous n'avez pas le sac de nuit, mais vous avez la valise. — A-t-il la clef? Oui, Madame, il a la clef et le cadenas. — A-t-il la canne? Oui, Monsieur, il a la canne. — A-t-elle le manteau? Oui, Mademoiselle, elle a le manteau et le carton à chapeau. — Ont-ils le parapluie? Non, Monsieur, ils (*or* elles) n'ont pas le parapluie, mais ils ont le manteau. — Avez-vous eu le passe-port? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai eu le passe-port.

la cassette.

le bagage.

le billet.

la lettre.

la gazette, le journal.

le billet.

la lettre de change.

la lettre de crédit.

la note.

la note de linge à blanchir.

Ha Ella il danaro? Sì, Signore, ho il danaro. — Ha la borsa? Sì, Signore, ho la borsa. — Ha Ella il passaporto? No, Signore, non ho il passaporto. — Ha (egli) il passaporto? Sì, Signora, (egli) ha il passaporto. — Ha (ella) il danaro? Sì, Signore, (ella) ha il danaro. — Hanno (egliu *or* elleno) danaro? Sì, Signore, (essi *or* esse) hanno il danaro. — Abbiamo (noi) la canna e l' ombrello? (Noi) abbiamo la canna e l' ombrello. — Elleno hanno (*or* voi avete) la canna e l' ombrello. — Ha Ella il baule e la bisaccia da viaggio? Sì, Signore, ho il baule e la bisaccia da viaggio. — Ha Ella la chiave? No, Signora, non ho la chiave. — Ha Ella il lucchetto? No, Signore, non ho il lucchetto, ma ho la canna. — Ha Ella il mantello? Sì, Signore, ho il mantello, l' ombrello e la cappelliera. — Ho io il danaro? Sì, Signore, Ella ha il danaro. — Ho (io) il passaporto? Sì, Signora, Ella ha il passaporto. — Ho io la bisaccia da viaggio? No, Signore, Ella non ha la bisaccia da viaggio, ma Ella ha il baule. — Ha (egli) la chiave? Sì, Signora, ha la chiave ed il lucchetto. — Ha (egli) la canna? Sì, Signore, ha la canna. — Ha ella il mantello? Sì, Signora, ella ha il mantello e la cappelliera. — Hanno l' ombrello? No, Signore, non hanno l' ombrello, ma hanno il mantello. — Ha Ella avuto il passaporto? Sì, Signore, ho avuto il passaporto.

la cassette.

le robe, *pl*

il biglietto.

la lettera.

la gazzetta.

la polizza.

la lettera di cambio.

la lettera credenziale.

la nota, il conto.

la nota de' pannilini.

<sup>1</sup> In German the past participle is placed after the object.

<sup>2</sup> See Note 4, page 15.

<sup>3</sup> The *l* is placed here to avoid the



## SECTION II.—DEFINITE ARTICLE.

In English the definite article is not inflected, but declined with the assistance of prepositions :—

|                          | Sing. & plur. m. f. n. |
|--------------------------|------------------------|
| <i>Nom.</i>              | The.                   |
| <i>Gen. or Poss.</i>     | of the, the —'s.       |
| <i>Dat. or Ind. Obj.</i> | to the, the.           |
| <i>Acc. or Dir. Obj.</i> | the.                   |
| <i>Abl. or Ind. Obj.</i> | from, by the.          |

|                      |               |
|----------------------|---------------|
| The man.             | the master.   |
| The woman.           | the mistress. |
| The boy.             | the waiter.   |
| The girl.            | the maid.     |
| The porter.          | the boots.    |
| The porter, carrier. | the parcel.   |

Gen. Poss. *The man's, of the man, the woman's.*

Infinitive.  
**To see,**

Past part.  
**seen.**

In German the article is declined by inflection :—

|                 | m.             | f.      | n.              | pl. m. f. n.         |
|-----------------|----------------|---------|-----------------|----------------------|
| <i>Nom.</i>     | Der,           | die,    | das,            | die.                 |
| <i>Gen.</i>     | des,           | der,    | des,            | der.                 |
| <i>Dat.</i>     | dem,           | der,    | dem,            | den.                 |
| <i>Acc.</i>     | den,           | die,    | das,            | die.                 |
| <i>Abl.</i>     | von dem,       | v. der, | v. dem,         | v. den. <sup>1</sup> |
|                 | Gen. Pl.       |         |                 | Gen. Pl.             |
| der Mann,       | es, s, Männer. |         | der Hausherr,   | n, en.               |
| die Frau,       | — en.          |         | die Hausfrau,   | — en.                |
| der Knabe,      | n, n.          |         | der Kellner,    | s, —                 |
| das Mädchen,    | s, —           |         | die Magd,       | — " e.               |
| der Pförtner,   | s, —           |         | der Hausknecht, | es, s, e.            |
| der Packträger, | s, —           |         | das Packet,     | s, e.                |

Gen. *des Mann, es, s, der Frau.*

Infinitive.  
**Sehen,**

Past part.  
**gesehen.**

## EXERCISE 2.

Have you had the money? Yes, Sir, I have had the money.  
— Have you seen the money? Yes, Sir, I have seen the money.— Have you seen the man's money? Yes, Sir, I have seen the man's money.<sup>3</sup>— Have you had the woman's passport? No, Sir, I have not had the woman's passport.— Have you seen the boy? Yes, Sir, I have seen the boy and the girl.— Have you seen the carpet-bag? No Sir, I have not seen the

Haben Sie das Geld gehabt? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe das Geld gehabt. — Haben Sie das Geld gesehen? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe das Geld gesehen. — Haben Sie das Geld des Mannes gesehen? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe das Geld des Mannes gesehen. — Haben Sie den Pasz der Frau gehabt? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe den Pasz der Frau nicht gehabt. — Haben Sie den Knaben gesehen? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe den Knaben und das Mädchen gesehen. — Haben Sie den Nachtsack gesehen? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe den Nachtsack nicht

<sup>1</sup> In German the termination of the dative forms the ablative with the addition of the preposition *von*.  
<sup>2</sup> *In French l'* is used before nouns, masculine or feminine, commencing with a vowel or silent *h*.  
<sup>3</sup> *In French and Italian always place the genitive or possessive case last.*

## SECTION II.—DEFINITE ARTICLE.

19

In French the article is partly inflected and partly declined with prepositions.

|             | m.   | f.     | m.f. vowel.      | pl. m. f. |                        |
|-------------|------|--------|------------------|-----------|------------------------|
| <i>Nom.</i> | Le,  | la,    | l', <sup>3</sup> | les.      | * Never de la, de les. |
| <i>Gen.</i> | du,* | de la, | de l',           | des.*     |                        |
| <i>Dat.</i> | au,* | à la,  | à l',            | aux.*     |                        |
| <i>Acc.</i> | le,  | la,    | l',              | les.      |                        |
| <i>Abl.</i> | du,* | de la, | de l',           | des.*     |                        |

|                       |                        |
|-----------------------|------------------------|
| l'homme.              | le maître.             |
| la femme.             | la maîtresse.          |
| le garçon (l'enfant). | le garçon.             |
| la fille.             | la servante.           |
| le portier.           | le valet de la maison. |
| le porteur.           | le paquet.             |

*Gen. de l'homme, de la femme.<sup>3</sup>*

Infinitive.  
**Voir,**

Past part.  
**vu.**

In Italian the article is declined by inflection and a combination of prepositions.

|            | m.               | f.     | m.f.   | pl. m.    | m.            | f.                |
|------------|------------------|--------|--------|-----------|---------------|-------------------|
| <i>N.</i>  | Il, <sup>4</sup> | lo,    | la,    | l',       | i, or li,     | gli, gl', le, l'. |
| <i>G.</i>  | del, dello,      | della, | dell', | dei, de', | degli, degl', | delle, dell'.     |
| <i>D.</i>  | al, allo,        | alla,  | all',  | ai, a,    | agli, agl',   | alle, all'.       |
| <i>Ac.</i> | il, lo,          | la,    | l',    | i, li,    | gli, gl',     | le, l'.           |
| <i>Ab.</i> | dal, dallo,      | dalla, | dall', | dai, da', | dagli, dagl', | dalle, dall'.     |

|              |                |
|--------------|----------------|
| l'uomo.      | il padrone.    |
| la donna.    | la padrona.    |
| il ragazzo.  | il cameriera.  |
| la ragazza.  | la cameriera.  |
| il portiere. | il servo.      |
| il facchino. | il fardellino. |

*Gen. dell'uomo, della donna.<sup>3</sup>*

Infinitive.  
**Vedere,**

Past part.  
**veduto, visto.**

### EXERCISE 2.

**Avez-vous eu l'argent?** Oui, Monsieur, j'ai eu l'argent. — **Avez-vous vu l'argent?** Oui, Monsieur, j'ai vu l'argent. — **Avez-vous vu l'argent<sup>4</sup> de l'homme?** Oui, Monsieur, j'ai vu l'argent de l'homme. — **Avez-vous eu le passe-port de la femme?** Non, Monsieur, je n'ai pas eu le passe-port de la femme. — **Avez-vous vu le garçon?** Oui, Monsieur, j'ai vu le garçon et la fille. — **Avez-vous vu le sac de nuit?** Non, Monsieur, je n'ai pas vu le sac de nuit, mais j'ai vu le carton à

**Ha Ella avuto il danaro?** Sì, Signore, ho avuto il danaro. — **Ha Ella veduto il danaro?** Sì, Signore, ho veduto il danaro. — **Ha Ella veduto il danaro dell'uomo?** Sì, Signore, ho veduto il danaro dell'uomo. — **Ha Ella avuto il passaporto della donna?** No, Signore, non ho avuto il passaporto della donna. — **Ha Ella veduto il ragazzo?** Sì, Signore, ho veduto il ragazzo e la ragazza. — **Ha Ella veduto la bisaccia da viaggio?** No, Signore, non ho veduto la bisaccia da viaggio.

<sup>4</sup> The Italians have two articles for the masculine; *il* is used before nouns beginning with a single consonant, but *lo* is only used before nouns beginning with *sm* or *sn* followed by another consonant, and nouns beginning with *z*; *l'* is used before nouns beginning with a vowel. In the plural *gli* is used before nouns beginning with *f*. *L'* is used in the feminine plural before nouns beginning with *c*, except *effigie*, *etasi*, *enfasi*, *età*, *estremità*.

## EXERCISE 2.

carpet-bag, but I have seen the bonnet-box.—Have you had the padlock and the key? Yes, Sir, I have had the padlock and the key.—Have you had the money and the passport? Yes, Sir, I have had the money, the passport, and the umbrella.—Have you seen the master and the mistress? No, Sir, I have not seen the master, but I have seen the waiter and the maid.—Have you seen the porter? Yes, Sir, I have seen the porter and the boots.—Have you seen the ticket? Yes, Madam, I have seen the ticket and the box.—Have you (got) the washing-bill? No, Sir, I have not (got) the washing-bill, but I have (got) the note and the letter.—Have we the bill of exchange and the letter of credit? No, Sir, we have not the bill of exchange.—Who<sup>1</sup> has (got) the letter of credit? I have the letter of credit and the newspaper.

|                           |                          |
|---------------------------|--------------------------|
| The banker.               | the berth.               |
| The washerwoman.          | the room.                |
| The coachman.             | the hotel.               |
| The conductor, guard.     | the street.              |
| The custom-house-officer. | the station.             |
| The commissioner.         | the railway.             |
| The consul.               | the carriage.            |
| The postilion.            | the train.               |
| The omnibus.              | the first, second class. |
| The cab.                  | the custom-house.        |
| The stage-coach.          | the post-office.         |
| The steamboat.            | the post.                |

gesehen, aber ich habe die Hutschachtel gesehen. — Haben Sie das Hängeschloß und den Schlüssel gehabt? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe das Hängeschloß und den Schlüssel gehabt. — Haben Sie das Geld und den Paß gehabt? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe das Geld, den Paß, und den Regenschirm gehabt. — Haben Sie den Hausherrn und die Hausfrau gesehen? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe den Hausherrn nicht gesehen, aber ich habe den Kellner und die Magd gesehen. — Haben Sie den Pfortner gesehen? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe den Pfortner und den Hausknecht gesehen. — Haben Sie das Billet gesehen? Ja, Madame, ich habe das Billet und das Kästchen gesehen. — Haben Sie den Waschzettel? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe den Waschzettel nicht, aber ich habe den Zettel und den Brief. — Haben wir den Wechsel- und den Creditbrief? Nein, mein Herr, wir haben den Wechselbrief nicht. — Wer hat den Creditbrief? Ich habe den Creditbrief und die Zeitung.

|                    | Gen.   | Pl.  |                          | Gen.   | Pl.    |
|--------------------|--------|------|--------------------------|--------|--------|
| der Geldwechsler,  | s,     | —    | das Kämmerchen,          | s,     | —      |
| die Wäscherin,     | —      | nen. | das Zimmer,              | s,     | —      |
| der Kutscher,      | s,     | —    | der Gasthof,             | es, s, | " e.   |
| der Conducteur,    | s,     | e.   | die Strasse,             | —      | n.     |
| der Zolleinnehmer, | s,     | —    | der Bahnhof,             | es, s, | " e.   |
| der Lohn-Bediene,  | n,     | n.   | die Eisenbahn,           | —      | en.    |
| der Consul,        | s,     | —    | der Wagen,               | s, —   | " or " |
| der Postillion,    | s,     | e.   | der Zug,                 | es, s, | " e.   |
| der Omnibus,       | ses,   | se.  | der erste, zweite Platz, | es,    | " e.   |
| die Miethkutsche,  | —      | n.   | das Zollhaus,            | es,    | " er.  |
| der Eilwagen,      | s,     | —    | das Postamt,             | es,    | " er.  |
| das Dampschiff,    | es, s, | e.   | die Post,                | —      | en.    |

<sup>1</sup> See pages 24 and 25.

## EXERCISE 2.

chapeau. — Avez-vous eu le cadenas et la clef? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai eu le cadenas et la clef. — Avez-vous eu l'argent et le passe-port? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai eu l'argent, le passe-port et le parapluie. — Avez-vous vu le maître et la maîtresse? Non, je n'ai pas vu le maître, mais j'ai vu le garçon et la servante. — Avez-vous vu le portier (or, le valet de la maison)? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai vu le portier et le valet de la maison. — Avez-vous vu le billet? Oui, Madame, j'ai vu le billet et la cassette. — Avez-vous la note de linge à blanchir? Non, Monsieur, je n'ai pas la note de linge à blanchir, mais j'ai le billet et la lettre. — Est-ce que nous avons la lettre de change et la lettre de crédit? Non, Monsieur, nous n'avons pas la lettre de change. — Qui a la lettre de crédit? J'ai la lettre de crédit et le journal.

le banquier.  
la blanchisseuse.  
le cocher.  
le conducteur.  
le douanier.  
le commissionnaire.  
le consul.  
le postillon.  
l' (un) omnibus, m.  
le cabriolet.  
la diligence.  
le bateau à vapeur.

la case.  
la chambre.  
l' (un) hôtel, m.  
la rue.  
la gare, station.  
le chemin de fer.  
la voiture.  
le convoi, train.  
la première, seconde place.  
la douane.  
le bureau de la poste.  
la poste.

ma ho veduto la cappelliera. — Ha Ella avuto il lucchetto e la chiave? Sì, Signore, ho avuto il lucchetto e la chiave. — Ha Ella avuto il danaro ed il passaporto? Sì, Signore, ho avuto il danaro, il passaporto e l' ombrello. — Ha Ella veduto il padrone e la padrona? No, Signore, non ho veduto il padrone, ma ho veduto il cameriere e la cameriera. — Ha Ella veduto il portiere? Sì, Signore, ho veduto il portiere ed il servo. — Ha Ella veduto la polizza (or il biglietto)? Sì, Signora, ho veduto la polizza e la cassetta. — Ha Ella la nota dei pannilini? No, Signore, non ho la nota de' pannilini, ma ho il biglietto e la lettera. — Abbiamo (noi) la lettera di cambio e la lettera credenziale? No, Signore, (noi) non abbiamo la lettera di cambio. — Chi ha la lettera credenziale? Ho la lettera credenziale e la gazzetta.

il banchiere.  
la lavandaia.  
il vetturino, cocchiere.  
il conduttore.  
il doganiere.  
il servo di piazza.  
il console.  
il postiglione.  
l' (un) omnibus, m.  
il calessino.  
la diligenza.  
il battello a vapore.

la nicchia.  
la stanza.  
la locanda, l' albergo.  
la strada.  
la stazione.  
la strada ferrata.  
la carrozza.  
il convoglio, traino.  
il primo, secondo posto.  
la dogana.  
l' ufficio della posta.  
la posta.

There are three genders in English, the masculine, feminine, and neuter.

**Masculine** are the nouns denoting a male being, by nature, condition, or occupation.

**Feminine** are the nouns denoting a female being, by nature, condition, or occupation.

**Neuter** are the names of inanimate things.

To form the feminine add *ess*, as *lion*, *lioness*; but nouns ending in *er* and *or* drop the *e* or *o* and take *ss*, as *actor*, *actress*, except *author*, *adulteress*, *tutor*, *sorceress*, *governess*, *administratrix*, *conservatrix*, *executrix*, *heretrix*, *mediatrix*, *testatrix*.

The feminine is also formed by changing the prefixes *he*, *male*, *cock*, into *she*, *female*, *hen*. Example: *she goat*, *female friend*, *hen bird*, *moor hen*.

#### DIFFERENT TERMINATIONS.—IRREGULAR.

|            |              |
|------------|--------------|
| abbot,     | abbess.      |
| czar,      | czarina.     |
| don,       | donna.       |
| duke,      | duchess.     |
| hero,      | heroine.     |
| landgrave, | landgravine. |
| margrave,  | margravine.  |

|          |              |
|----------|--------------|
| marquis, | marchioness. |
| master,  | mistress.    |
| negro,   | negress.     |
| prince,  | princess.    |
| sultan,  | sultana.     |
| widower, | widow.       |

#### DIFFERENT WORDS.

|                                   |                                 |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| bachelor,                         | maid, spinster.                 |
| beau,                             | belle.                          |
| boy,                              | girl.                           |
| brother,                          | sister.                         |
| bridegroom,                       | bride.                          |
| earl,                             | countess.                       |
| father,                           | mother.                         |
| friar,                            | nun.                            |
| gaffer,                           | gammer.                         |
| gentleman,                        | lady.                           |
| <i>husband</i> ,<br><i>king</i> . | <i>wife</i> ,<br><i>queen</i> . |

|                 |                |
|-----------------|----------------|
| lad,            | lass.          |
| lord,           | lady.          |
| man,            | woman.         |
| messieurs,      | mesdames.      |
| monk,           | nun.           |
| mover,          | motive.        |
| nephew,         | niece.         |
| sir,            | madam.         |
| sloven,         | slut.          |
| son,            | daughter.      |
| uncle,          | aunt.          |
| <i>wizard</i> , | <i>witch</i> . |

#### ANIMALS.

|                  |                  |
|------------------|------------------|
| boar,            | sow.             |
| buck,            | doe.             |
| bull,            | cow.             |
| bullock,         | heifer.          |
| capon,           | pullet.          |
| cock,            | hen.             |
| colt,            | filly.           |
| dog,             | bitch.           |
| drake,           | duck.            |
| fox,             | vixen.           |
| gander,          | goose.           |
| hart,            | roe.             |
| horse,           | mare.            |
| milter,          | spawner.         |
| ox,              | cow.             |
| ram,             | ewe.             |
| stag,            | hind.            |
| steer,           | heifer.          |
| sun, <i>m</i> .  | moon, <i>f</i> . |
| ship, <i>f</i> . |                  |

In German there are three genders, the masculine, feminine, and neuter.

**Masculine** are the terminations *all*, *el*, *er*, *en*, *ing*, *ling*, and nouns denoting a male being, by nature, condition, or occupation; the names of the days, months, seasons, winds, and precious stones; except *die Woche*, *die Mittwoche*, *das Jahr*.

**Feminine** are the terminations *e*, *ei*, *heit*, *keit*, *schaft*, *ung*, *ath*, *uth*, and nouns denoting a female being, by nature, condition, or occupation; except *das Fräulein*, *das Frauenzimmer*, *das Mädchen*, *das Weib*.

**Neuter** are the terminations *chen*, *lein*, *nisz*, *sal*, *sel*, *thum*, and the names of countries, towns, metals, the letters of the alphabet, nouns beginning with *ge*, and all words employed as substantives; except *der Stahl*, *der Tomback*, *der Zink*, *die Platina*.

Compound nouns take the gender of the last component; as, *die Eisenbahn*, the railway.

Some nouns have two genders with different meanings; as, *das Band*, the ribbon, *der Band*, the volume. *Die Sonne*, the sun, is feminine; *der Mond*, the moon, is masculine. The termination *in* is sometimes added to the masculine to form the feminine; as, *der König*, the king; *die Königin*, the queen.



| Nom. <i>Who?</i> | Interrogative pronoun. | Acc. or Dir. Obj. <i>Whom?</i> | Nom. <i>Wer?</i>  | Acc. or Dir. Obj. <i>Wen?</i> |
|------------------|------------------------|--------------------------------|-------------------|-------------------------------|
|                  | Infinitive.            | Past part.                     | Infinitive.       | Past part.                    |
|                  | <b>To find,</b>        | <b>found.</b>                  | <b>Finden,</b>    | <b>gefunden.</b>              |
|                  | <b>To lose,</b>        | <b>lost.</b>                   | <b>Verlieren,</b> | <b>verloren.</b>              |

## EXERCISE 3.

Have you the ticket? Yes, Sir, I have the ticket. — Have you had the ticket? Yes, Miss, I have had the ticket. — Have you seen the ticket? Yes, Madam, I have seen the ticket. — Have I lost the ticket? Yes, Sir, you have lost the ticket and the passport. — Have you found the hotel? No, Sir, I have not found the hotel. — Have you seen the waiter? No, Sir, I have not seen the waiter, but I have seen the master and the mistress. — Have you seen the banker? I have not seen the banker, but I have seen the washerwoman. I have not seen the banker, but the washerwoman. — Has he found the coachman? Yes, Sir, he has found the coachman. — Who has (got) the purse? I have the purse (or I have, or I have (got) the purse). — Who has found the purse? The man has found the purse, but he has not found the money. — Has the waiter found the umbrella? He has not found the umbrella, but the stick and the little box. — Whom have you seen? (or, did you see?) I have seen the master, the mistress, the waiter, and the maid. — Have you found the railway-station? Yes, Sir, I have found the station and the omnibus. — Have you seen the guard? No, Madam, I have not seen the guard, but I have seen the train.

Haben Sie das Billet? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe das Billet. — Haben Sie das Billet gehabt? Ja, Fräulein, ich habe das Billet gehabt. — Haben Sie das Billet gesehen? Ja, Madame, ich habe das Billet gesehen. — Habe ich das Billet verloren? Ja, mein Herr, Sie haben das Billet und den Paß verloren. — Haben Sie den Gasthof gefunden? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe den Gasthof nicht gefunden. — Haben Sie den Kellner gesehen? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe den Kellner nicht gesehen, aber ich habe den Hausherrn und die Hausfrau gesehen. — Haben Sie den Geldwechsler gesehen? Ich habe den Geldwechsler nicht gesehen, aber ich habe die Wäscherin gesehen. Ich habe nicht<sup>1</sup> den Geldwechsler, sondern<sup>1</sup> die Wäscherin gesehen. — Hat er den Kutscher gefunden? Ja, mein Herr, er hat den Kutscher gefunden. — Wer hat den Beutel? Ich habe den Beutel. — Wer hat den Beutel gefunden? Der Mann hat den Beutel gefunden, aber er hat das Geld nicht gefunden. — Hat der Kellner den Regenschirm gefunden? Er hat nicht den Regenschirm, sondern den Stock und das Kästchen gefunden. — Wen haben Sie gesehen? Ich habe den Hausherrn, die Hausfrau, den Kellner und die Magd gesehen. — Haben Sie den Bahnhof gefunden? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe den Bahnhof und den Omnibus gefunden. — Haben Sie den Conducteur gesehen? Nein, Madame, ich habe nicht den Conducteur, sondern den Zug gesehen.

<sup>1</sup> *Nicht* is placed before the object when followed by an affirmative sentence without another nominative case; *but* is then expressed by *sondern*.

# SECTION III.—GENDER OF NOUNS.

4

## Nom. and Acc. Qui?

Infinitive.  
**Trouver,**  
**Perdre,**

Past part.  
**trouv .**  
**perdu.**

## Nom. and Acc. Chi?

Infinitive.  
**Trovare,**  
**Perdere,**

Past part.  
**trovato.**  
**perduto.**

### EXERCISE 3.

Avez-vous le billet? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai le billet. — Est-ce que vous avez eu le billet? Oui, Mademoiselle, j'ai eu le billet. — Avez-vous vu le billet? Oui, Madame, j'ai vu le billet. — Est-ce que j'ai perdu le billet? Oui, Monsieur, vous avez perdu le billet et le passe-port. — Avez-vous trouv  l'h tel? Non, Monsieur, je n'ai pas trouv  l'h tel. — Avez-vous vu le gar on? Non, Monsieur, je n'ai pas vu le gar on, mais j'ai vu le ma tre et la ma trese de la maison. — Avez-vous vu le banquier? Je n'ai pas vu le banquier, mais j'ai vu la blanchisseuse. Je n'ai pas vu le banquier, mais la blanchisseuse. — Est-ce qu'il a trouv  le cocher? Oui, Monsieur, il a trouv  le cocher. — Qui a la bourse? J'ai la bourse. — Qui a trouv  la bourse? L'homme a trouv  la bourse, mais il n'a pas trouv  l'argent. — Le gar on<sup>2</sup> a-t-il trouv  le parapluie? Il n'a pas trouv  le parapluie, mais il a trouv  la canne et la cassette. — Qui avez-vous vu? J'ai vu le ma tre, la ma trese, le gar on et la servante. — Avez-vous trouv  la gare? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai trouv  la gare et l'omnibus. — Avez-vous vu le conducteur? Non, Madame, je n'ai pas vu le conducteur, mais j'ai vu le convoi.

Ha Ella la polizza? S , Signore, ho la polizza. — Ha Ell avuto la polizza? S , Signora, ho avuto la polizza. — Ha Ell veduto la polizza? S , Signora, ho veduto la polizza. — Ha io perduto la polizza? S , Signore, Ella ha perduto la polizza ed il passaporto. — Ha Ella trovato l'albergo? No, Signore non ho trovato l'albergo. — Ha Ella veduto il cameriere? No, Signore, non ho veduto il cameriere, ma ho veduto il padrone e la padrona. — Ha Ella veduto il banchiere? Non ho veduto il banchiere, ma ho veduto la lavandaia. Non ho veduto il banchiere, ma la lavandaia. — Ha (egli) trovato il vetturino? S , Signore, ha trovato il vetturino. — Chi ha la borsa? Ho la borsa. — Chi ha trovato la borsa? L'uomo ha trovato la borsa, ma non ha trovato il danaro. — Ha il cameriere trovato (or ha trovato il cameriere<sup>3</sup>) l'ombrello? Non ha trovato l'ombrello, ma (egli) ha trovato la canna e la cassette. — Chi ha Ella veduto? Ho veduto il padrone, la padrona, il cameriere e la cameriera. — Ha Ella trovato la stazione? S , Signore, ho trovato la stazione e l'omnibus. — Ha Ella (or avete) veduto il conduttore? No, Signora, non ho veduto il conduttore, ma ho veduto il convoglio.

<sup>2</sup> In French, when an interrogation is made with a noun, the noun is placed before the verb and the pronoun after it; as, *Le gar on a-t-il?* *La fille a-t-elle?* Has the boy? Has the girl? *Est-ce que le gar on a?* &c., &c., may also be used. <sup>3</sup> In Italian the nominative case may follow the verb and participle, for sake of euphony. See Note 4, page 27.



## SECTION IV.—THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

In English the indefinite article is not inflected.

|                       | All genders.        | Before a vowel or silent <i>h</i> . |
|-----------------------|---------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <i>Nom.</i>           | <i>a, or</i>        | <i>an.</i>                          |
| <i>Gen. Poss.</i>     | of <i>a, a —'s,</i> | of <i>an, an —'s.</i>               |
| <i>Dat. Ind. Obj.</i> | to <i>a, a,</i>     | to <i>an, an.</i>                   |
| <i>Acc. Dir. Obj.</i> | <i>a,</i>           | <i>an.</i>                          |
| <i>Ab. Ind. Obj.</i>  | from, by <i>a,</i>  | from, by <i>an.</i>                 |

All genders.  
**Not a, no.**

*I have one.*

*I have not one.*

|                  |                  |
|------------------|------------------|
| The table.       | the cup.         |
| The tablecloth.  | the saucer.      |
| The napkin.      | the basin.       |
| The knife.       | the teapot.      |
| The fork.        | the coffee-pot.  |
| The spoon.       | the jug.         |
| The dish.        | the sugar-basin. |
| The plate.       | the glass.       |
| The salt-cellar. | the pepper-box.  |

|                          |                 |                      |                    |
|--------------------------|-----------------|----------------------|--------------------|
| Inf.                     | Past part.      | Inf.                 | Past part.         |
| <b>To bring (carry),</b> | <b>brought.</b> | <b>To take away,</b> | <b>taken away.</b> |

In German the indefinite article is inflected.

|             | m.                    | f.         | n.                            |
|-------------|-----------------------|------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>Nom.</i> | ein-er <sup>1</sup> , | eine,      | ein- <sup>1</sup> { es.<br>s. |
| <i>Gen.</i> | eines,                | einer,     | eines.                        |
| <i>Dat.</i> | einem,                | einer,     | einem.                        |
| <i>Acc.</i> | einen,                | eine,      | ein- <sup>1</sup> { es.<br>s. |
| <i>Abl.</i> | von einem,            | von einer, | von einem.                    |

|                     | m.            | f.           | n. |
|---------------------|---------------|--------------|----|
| <i>Acc. Keinen,</i> | <i>keine,</i> | <i>kein.</i> |    |

*Ich habe einen.*

*Ich habe keinen.*

|                 | Gen. | Pl. |                  | Gen.   | Pl. |
|-----------------|------|-----|------------------|--------|-----|
| der Tisch,      | es,  | e.  | die Tasse,       | —      | n.  |
| das Tisch-tuch, | es,  | er. | die Untertasse,  | —      | n.  |
| die Serviette,  | —    | n.  | das Becken,      | s,     | —   |
| das Messer,     | s,   | —   | die Theekanne,   | —      | n.  |
| die Gabel,      | —    | n.  | die Kaffeekanne, | —      | n.  |
| der Löffel,     | s,   | —   | der Krug,        | es, s, | e.  |
| die Schüssel,   | —    | n.  | die Zuckerdose,  | —      | n.  |
| der Teller,     | s,   | —   | das Glas,        | es,    | er. |
| das Salz-fas,   | ses, | er. | die Pfefferdose, | —      | n.  |

|                 |                  |                   |                     |
|-----------------|------------------|-------------------|---------------------|
| Inf.            | Past part.       | Inf.              | Past part.          |
| <b>Bringen,</b> | <b>gebracht.</b> | <b>Wegnehmen,</b> | <b>weggenommen.</b> |

## EXERCISE 4.

Have you (got) a first-class place? I have not (have n't got) a first-class place. — Have you a second-class place? Yes, Sir, I have (one). — Have you brought a knife? I have brought one. — Have you brought a plate? No, Sir, I have

Haben Sie einen ersten<sup>2</sup> Platz? Ich habe keinen ersten Platz. — Haben Sie einen zweiten Platz? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe einen. — Haben Sie ein Messer gebracht? Ich habe eins gebracht. — Haben Sie einen Teller gebracht? Nein, mein

<sup>1</sup> *When ein or eine is not joined to a noun, its nom. case mas. ends in er; as, einer, keiner; and the nom. and accusative neuter in es or s; as, eines, eines, keiner, keiner.*  
<sup>2</sup> *Uno is used before nouns beginning with s, followed by another consonant, and nouns beginning with z; as, uno scodellino, uno zio.*

## SECTION IV.—THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

In French the indefinite article is declined by prepositions.

|             | m.    | f.     |
|-------------|-------|--------|
| <i>Nom.</i> | un,   | une.   |
| <i>Gen.</i> | d'un, | d'une. |
| <i>Dat.</i> | à un, | à une. |
| <i>Acc.</i> | un,   | une.   |
| <i>Abl.</i> | d'un, | d'une. |

m. & f.  
**Ne — pas de.**<sup>3</sup>

*J'en*<sup>4</sup> *ai un.*

*Je n'en ai pas.*<sup>4</sup>

|                         |                    |
|-------------------------|--------------------|
| la table.               | la tasse.          |
| la nappa.               | la soucoupe.       |
| la serviette.           | le bol.            |
| le couteau.             | la théière.        |
| la fourchette.          | la cafetière.      |
| la cuillère.            | le pot, la cruche. |
| le plat.                | le sucrier.        |
| l' (une) assiette (f.). | le verre.          |
| la salière.             | le poivrier.       |

*Inf.*      *Past part.*  
**Apporter,      apporté.**

*Inf.*      *Past part.*  
**Importer,      importé.**

In Italian the indefinite article is declined by prepositions.

|             | m.     | f.                      |
|-------------|--------|-------------------------|
| <i>Nom.</i> | un,    | uno <sup>2</sup> , una. |
| <i>Gen.</i> | d'un,  | d'uno, d'una.           |
| <i>Dat.</i> | ad un, | ad uno, ad una          |
| <i>Acc.</i> | un,    | uno, una.               |
| <i>Abl.</i> | da un, | da uno, da una          |

m.      f.  
**Non — un, uno,      una.**

*Ne*<sup>5</sup> *ho uno.*

*Non ne*<sup>5</sup> *ho (un*

|                |                     |
|----------------|---------------------|
| la tavola.     | la tazza.           |
| la tovaglia.   | lo scodellino.      |
| la salvietta.  | il tazzone.         |
| il coltello.   | il vaso da tè.      |
| la forchetta.  | la caffetiera.      |
| il cucchiaino. | l'orcio, la brocca. |
| il piatto.     | la zuccheriera.     |
| il tondo.      | il bicchiere.       |
| la saliera.    | la pepaiuola.       |

*Inf.*      *Past part.*  
**Portare,      portato.**

*Inf.*      *P.*  
**Portare via,      port**

### EXERCISE 4.

**Avez-vous une première place? Je n'ai pas de première place. — Avez-vous une seconde place? Oui, Monsieur, j'en ai une. — Avez-vous apporté un couteau? J'en ai apporté un. — Avez-vous apporté une assiette? Non, Monsieur, je n'ai**

**Ha Ella (or avete) un primo posto? Non ho un primo posto. — Ha Ella un secondo posto? Sì, Signore, ne ho uno. — Ha Ella portato un coltello? Ne ho portato uno. — (or avete) portato un tondo? No, Signore, non ho**

<sup>3</sup> In negative sentences the indefinite article is omitted, and the preposition *de* is used for both genders; as, *Je n'ai pas de couteau*, instead of *J'en ai un*. <sup>4</sup> When the noun is not expressed in a negative sentence, the indefinite article is omitted, but *en* is added before the auxiliary verb *avoir*. <sup>5</sup> In Italian, as in French, when the noun is omitted *ne* is put before the auxiliary verb. <sup>6</sup> See Declension of German Adjective.

## SECTION IV.—THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

## EXERCISE 4.

not brought a plate. — Have you (got) a fork? I have one.  
 — Have you a spoon? I have not (got) one. — Has he taken away the dish? Yes, Sir, he has taken away the dish and the plate. — Has the boots brought the luggage? He has brought the luggage. — Has the waiter brought the tablecloth? Yes, Sir, he has brought the tablecloth and a napkin. — Who has taken away the cup? The maid has taken away the cup and the glass. — Has she brought a jug? She has brought one. — Have they found the spoon? They have not found the spoon. — Has the washerwoman brought the washing-bill? She has brought the washing-bill, the tablecloth and a napkin. — Has the boy brought a letter? He has not brought a letter, but a note. — Has the girl the saucer? She has taken away the saucer, the jug and the sugar-basin. — Who has taken away the newspaper? The boy has taken away the newspaper and the letter. — Have you lost a knife? I have not lost a knife, but the waiter has lost one. — Who has found one? The coachman has found one. — Has he found a cab? Yes, Sir, he has found one.

|                     |                   |
|---------------------|-------------------|
| The inn.            | the water-closet. |
| The house.          | the ground floor. |
| The coach-house.    | the stairs.       |
| The stable.         | the first floor.  |
| The set of rooms.   | the wall.         |
| The furnished room. | the floor.        |
| The bed-room.       | the ceiling.      |
| The dining-room.    | the chimney.      |
| The drawing-room.   | the door.         |
| The servant's room. | the window.       |
| <i>The kitchen.</i> | the blind.        |

Herr, ich habe keinen Teller gebracht. — Haben Sie eine Gabel? Ich habe eine. — Haben Sie einen Löffel? Ich habe keinen. — Hat er die Schüssel weggenommen? Ja, mein Herr, er hat die Schüssel und den Teller weggenommen. — Hat der Hausknecht das Gepäck gebracht? Er hat das Gepäck gebracht. — Hat der Kellner das Tischtuch gebracht? Ja, mein Herr, er hat das Tischtuch und eine Serviette gebracht. — Wer hat die Tasse weggenommen? Die Magd hat die Tasse und das Glas weggenommen. — Hat sie einen Krug gebracht? Sie hat einen gebracht. — Haben sie den Löffel gefunden? Sie haben den Löffel nicht gefunden. — Hat die Wäscherin den Waschkittel gebracht? Sie hat den Waschkittel, das Tischtuch und eine Serviette gebracht. — Hat der Knabe einen Brief gebracht? Er hat keinen Brief, aber er hat ein Billet gebracht. — Hat das Mädchen die Untertasse? Sie hat die Untertasse, den Krug und die Zuckerdose weggenommen. — Wer hat die Zeitung weggenommen? Der Knabe hat die Zeitung und den Brief weggenommen. — Haben Sie ein Messer verloren? Ich habe kein Messer verloren, aber der Kellner hat eines verloren. — Wer hat eines gefunden? Der Kutscher hat eines gefunden. — Hat er eine Miethkutsche gefunden? Ja, mein Herr, er hat eine gefunden.

|                       | Gen.   | Pl. |                        | Gen.    | Pl.  |
|-----------------------|--------|-----|------------------------|---------|------|
| das Gasthaus,         | es,    | er. | der Abtritt,           | es, s,  | e.   |
| das Haus,             | es,    | er. | das Erdgeschoss,       | sses,   | e.   |
| der Wagenschoppen,    | s,     | —   | die Treppe,            | —       | n.   |
| der Stall,            | es, s, | e.  | der erste Stock,       | es, s,  | “ e. |
| die Zimmerreihe,      | —      | n.  | die Mauer,             | —       | n.   |
| das möblierte Zimmer, | s,     | —   | der Fußboden,          | s, - or | “    |
| das Schlafzimmer,     | s,     | —   | die Decke des Zimmers, | —       | n.   |
| der Esssaal,          | es, s, | e.  | das Kamin,             | es, s,  | e.   |
| der Saal,             | es, s, | e.  | die Thür,              | —       | en.  |
| das Bedientenzimmer,  | s,     | —   | das Fenster,           | s,      | —    |
| die Küche,            | —      | n.  | die Blende,            | —       | n.   |

1 See Note 1, page 26.

# SECTION IV.—THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

## EXERCISE 4.

pas apporté d'assiette. — Avez-vous une fourchette? J'en ai une. — Avez-vous une cuillère? Je n'en ai pas. — A-t-il emporté le plat? Oui, Monsieur, il a emporté le plat et l'assiette. — Le valet de la maison a-t-il apporté le bagage? Il a apporté le bagage. — Le garçon a-t-il apporté la nappe? Oui, Monsieur, il a apporté la nappe et une serviette. — Qui a emporté la tasse? La servante a emporté la tasse et le verre. — A-t-elle apporté une cruche? Elle en a apporté une. — Ont-ils trouvé la cuillère? Ils n'ont pas trouvé la cuillère. — La blanchisseuse a-t-elle apporté la note de linge à blanchir? Elle a apporté la note de linge à blanchir, la nappe et une serviette. — Le garçon a-t-il apporté une lettre? Il n'a pas apporté de lettre, mais un billet. — La fille a-t-elle la soucoupe? Elle a emporté la soucoupe, la cruche et le sucrier. — Qui a emporté la gazette? Le garçon a emporté la gazette et la lettre. — Avez-vous perdu un couteau? Je n'ai pas perdu de couteau, mais le garçon en a perdu un. — Qui en a trouvé un? Le cocher en a trouvé un. — A-t-il trouvé un cabriolet? Oui, Monsieur, il en a trouvé un.

l' (une) auberge.  
la maison.  
la remise.  
l' (une) écurie.  
l' (un) appartement.  
la chambre garnie.  
la chambre à coucher.  
la salle à manger.  
la salle, le salon.  
la chambre du domestique.  
la cuisine.

le cabinet.  
le rez-de-chaussée.  
l' (un) escalier.  
le premier étage.  
le mur.  
le plancher.  
le plafond.  
la cheminée.  
la porte.  
la fenêtre.  
la jalousie.

un tondo. — Ha Ella una forchetta? Ne ho una un cucchiaino? Non ne ho. — Ha (egli) portato Sì, Signore, ha portato via il piatto ed il tondo. — il servo (or ha il servo portato) le robe? (Egli) ha robe. — Ha portato il cameriere (or ha il cameriere tovaglia? Signor, sì, (egli) ha portato la tovaglia et vietta. — Chi ha portato via la tazza? La cameriere ha portato via la tazza ed il bicchiere. — Ha (ella) portato la brocca? (Ella) ne ha portato una. — Hanno (eghino) il cucchiaino? Non hanno trovato il cucchiaino. — Ha daia portato la nota dei pannilini? Ha portato la nota nilini, la tovaglia ed una salvietta. — Ha portato una il ragazzo? Non ha portato una lettera, ma un biglietto. — Ha la ragazza (fanciulla) lo scodellino? Ha portato una dellino, la brocca e la zuccheriera. — Chi ha portato la gazette? Il ragazzo ha portato via la gazette e la lettera. — Ha Ella perduto un coltello? Non ho perduto un coltello. — Il cameriere ne ha perduto uno. — Chi ne ha trovato uno? cocchiere ne ha trovato uno. — Ha (egli) trovato un calessi Sì, Signore, ne ha trovato uno.

l' osteria (f.).  
la casa.  
la rimessa.  
la stalla.  
l' (un) appartamento.  
la camera mobigliata.  
la camera da dormire.  
il salotto da mangiare.  
la sala.  
la camera del servo.  
la cucina.

il comodo.  
l' appartamento terreno.  
la scala.  
il primo piano.  
il muro.  
il palco, solaio.  
la soffitta.  
il cammino.  
la porta.  
la finestra.  
la gelosia.

In English the plural is formed by adding *s* or *es*.

Nouns ending in *ch*, *s*, *sh*, *as*, *x*, add *es*; as, *peach-es*, *kiss-es*.  
*y*, preceded by one or more consonants, is changed into *ies*; as, *fly, flies*; preceded by a vowel, *s* only is added; as, *boy, boys*.  
*f*, *fe*, are changed into *ves*; as, *knife, knives*.  
*ff*, *oof*, *ief*, *rf*, take *s*; as, *muffs, roofs, griefs, dwarfs*; but *thief, staff*, make *thieves, staves*.

Some nouns in *o*, preceded by a consonant, take *es*; as, *cargoes, echoes, heroes, manifestoes, potatoes, volcanoes, woes*.

Others take *s*; as, *cantos, folios, grottos, nuncios, porticos, quartos, solos, tyros*.

*us* is changed into *i*; as, *focus, foci*, except *bonuses, boluses, choruses, crocuses, isthmuses, omnibuses, prospectuses, rebuses, syllabuses*. A (Latin origin) is changed into *æ*; as, *lamina, laminæ*.

*is* is changed into *es*; as, *crisis, crises*, except *chrysalides*.

*ex*, *ix*, make *ices*; as, *apex, apices*.

*um, on*, make *a*; as, *datum, data, &c.*, except *asylums, premiums*.

Compounds in *ful* take *s*; as, *spoonful, spoonfuls*; and in compounds in which the principal word stands last, this last takes the sign of the plural; as, *fellow-servants*. In compounds of two nouns joined by a preposition, of a noun and an adjective, the first or principal word takes the sign of the plur.; as, *sons-in-law, courts-martial*. Some nouns have no plur.; as, *gold, corn, pride*: others have no sing.; as, *scissors, tongs, wages*. Some nouns are alike sing. and plur.; as, *a salmon, a few salmon, sheep, deer*. Some nouns have two plurals, with different significations; as, *die*, dies for stamping; *dice*, cubes for games.

#### IRREGULAR.

|                      |                  |                      |
|----------------------|------------------|----------------------|
| brother, { brothers. | genius, { genii. | penny, { pennies.    |
| calx, calces.        | genus, genera.   | seraph, { seraphs.   |
| cherub, { cherubs.   | goose, geese.    | stamen, stamens.     |
| child, children.     | house, houses.   | tooth, teeth.        |
| cow, cows.           | mouse, mice.     | virtuoso, virtuosos. |
| man, men.            | man, men.        | woman, women.        |
| ox, oxen.            | ox, oxen.        |                      |
| pea, peas.           | pea, peas.       |                      |
|                      |                  | cow, { kine.         |

There are three ways of forming the plural in German.

1. By leaving the word unchanged, as in the terminations *el, en, er* (*chen, lein*).

2. By changing the radical vowels *a, o, u*, into *ä, ö, ü*.

3. By the addition of *e, er, n, en*.

#### EXAMPLES.

Das Messer, die Messer; das Büchlein, die Büchlein; der Mantel, die Mäntel; der Vater, die Väter; das Buch, die Bücher; der Tisch, die Tische; das Bild, die Bilder; die Feder, die Federn; der Fürst, die Fürsten.

The dative plural of all words except *uns* and *euch* ends in *n*.

The radical vowels, *a, o, u*, are not softened in the weak declension; nor are neuter nouns ending in *el, en, er*; but *das Kloster*, the convent, makes *die Klöster*.

Mas. nouns in *e* add *n* for all cases of the plural; as, *der Knabe, die Knaben*.

Fem. nouns in *e, el, er*, take *n* in the plural. Others take *en*, but *Tochter, Mutter*, make *Töchter, Mütter*. Monosyllables ending with a consonant take *e*, and soften the radical vowels; as, *die Hand*, pl. *Hände*. Some nouns have a double plural, according to their signification; as, *Band*, pl. *Bänder, Bände*, and *Bande*.

To form the plural, add *s* to the singular; as, *le livre, les livres*. Nouns in *s, x, z*, are alike in the sing. and plur.; as, *le bois, les bois*.

Nouns in *au, eau, eu*, take *x*; as, *le tableau, les tableaux*.

Those in *ou* take *s*; as, *le clou, les clous*, except *bijou, chou, caillou, genou, hibou, joujou, pou*, which take *x*.

Nouns in *al* change into *aux*; as, *le cheval, les chevaux*, except *bal, pal, cal, regal, carnaval*, which take *s*.

Nouns in *ail* take *s*; as, *l'éventail, les éventails*; except *bail, corail, émail, soupirail, travail*, which are changed into *aux, baux, coraux*, &c., but *travail* sometimes takes *s*. *Ail* (garlic) becomes *aux*. *Bétail* and *bercail* have no plural. *Bestiaux* has no singular. *Aieul, ciel, ail*, have two plurals, *aieux* and *aieuls*; *cieux* and *ciels*, *yeux* and *œils*. *Tout* makes *tous*.

When nouns are compounded of two nouns, or a noun and adjective, both take the sign of the plural; as, *le gentilhomme, les gentils-hommes*, except *becfigues, appui-mains, Hôtels-Dieu, brèche-dents*.

When nouns are compounded of two substantives joined by a preposition, the first only takes the sign of the plural; as, *le chef-d'œuvre, les chefs-d'œuvre*, except *coq-à-l'âne, pied-à-terre, tête-à-tête*.

When compounded of a verb, preposition, or adverb and noun, the noun only becomes plural; as, *un essie-main, les essie-mains, l'entre-soi, les entre-sois*, except *porte-monnaie, reveille-matin, serre-tête, contre-poison*.

Nouns compounded of a verb and adverb never take the sign of the plural; as, *le passe-partout, les passe-partout; Monsieur, Madame, Mademoiselle*, make *Messieurs, Mesdames, Mesdemoiselles*. Some nouns, as in English, have a singular or plural only.

The letter *f* is not sounded in plural, *œufs, bœufs*.

In Italian, all nouns and adjectives of the masculine gender are made plural by changing the final vowel into *i*; as, *poeta, poeti; padre, padri; libro, libri*.

Feminine nouns in *a* make *e* in the plural; as, *donna, donne*.

Feminine nouns in *e* and *o* make *i*; as, *madre, madri; la mano, le mani*.

Nouns ending in *i, ie*, an accented vowel and monosyllables, do not change in the plural; as, *la tesi, le tesi; la specie, le specie, la città, le città; il re, i re*.

Nouns in *ca* and *ga* make *che* and *ghe*; as, *amica, amiche*.

Nouns and adjectives ending in *co*, of two syllables, make *chi*; as, *cuoco, cuochi*, except *greco, porco*, which make *ci*. Those of more than two syllables make *chi* when *co* is preceded by a consonant; as, *il Tedesco, i Tedeschi*. They make *ci* when *co* is preceded by a vowel; as, *l'amico, gli amici*, except *abaco, antico, carico, dimentico, fondaco, manico, opaco, rammarico, traffico, ubriaco*, which make *chi*, although *co* is preceded by a vowel. Those in *go* make *ghi*; as, *l'albergo, gli alberghi*, except *asparago, teologi*, which make *gi*.

The following words make either *ci* or *chi*, *gi* or *ghi*: *apologo, analogo, astrologo, chirurgo, dialogo, domestico, mendico, monaco, pratico, reciproco, selvatico, stomaco*.

Nouns in *cia, gia*, make *ce, ge*, when *cia* and *gia* form but one syllable, as *faccia, facce*; but *provincia* makes *province*. In nouns in which the emphasis or accent falls on the *i*, the *i* is retained, and they make *ie*; as, *bugia, bugie*.

*io*, and *jo* make *j*; as, *tempio, libraj; tempj, libraj*; but if *io* be preceded by *c, ch, g, gl*, it becomes *i* plural; as, *l'occhio, gli occhi; figlio, figli*.

*io*, with the emphasis or accent falling on *i*, makes *ii*; as, *zio, zii*.

## IRREGULAR.

Dio, } *gli Dei*; Bue, *buoi*; moglie, *mogli*; mille, *mila*.

Idio, } *uomo, uomini*; cento (invariable).

A few nouns in Italian are very irregular, some having two genders and two plurals, others having different genders and even three plurals. Some nouns, as in English, have a singular or plural only.

## SECTION V.—PLURAL OF NOUNS.

Inf. Past part.  
To buy, bought.

Inf. Past part.  
To sell, sold.

Inf. Past part.  
Kaufen, gekauft.

Inf. Past part.  
Verkaufen, verkauft.

## EXERCISE 5.

Have you bought a table? I have bought a table. — Has he brought the tables? He has not brought the tables. — Have you taken away the napkins? I have not taken away the napkins, but I have taken away the knives. — Have you seen the men? I have not seen the men, but the boys. — Who has seen the men? The waiter has seen the men. — Have you lost the passports? Yes, Sir, I have lost the passports, but I have found the letters. — Has he brought the notes? He has brought the notes and the newspapers. — Have you found the hotel? I have found the hotel. — Has the maid seen the rooms? No, Sir, she has not seen the rooms. — Has he found the custom-house? Yes, Sir, he has found the custom-house and the station. — Has the coachman brought the letters? Yes, Sir, he has brought the letters, and he has taken away the notes. — Have the waiters brought the knives and forks? They have not brought the knives and forks, but they have taken away the dishes, spoons, and glasses.<sup>1</sup>

The bed.  
The feather bed.  
The mattress.  
The sheet.  
The blanket.  
The pillow.

The coverlet.  
The towel.  
The candle.

the looking-glass.  
the chest of drawers.  
the night-waiter.  
the night-vase.  
the water-jug.  
the basin.  
the glass.  
the soap.  
the candlestick.

Haben Sie einen Tisch gekauft? Ich habe einen Tisch gekauft. — Hat er die Tische gebracht? Er hat die Tische nicht gebracht. — Haben Sie die Servietten weggenommen? Ich habe nicht die Servietten, sondern die Messer weggenommen. — Haben Sie die Männer gesehen? Ich habe nicht die Männer, sondern die Knaben gesehen. — Wer hat die Männer gesehen? Der Kellner hat die Männer gesehen. — Haben Sie die Pässe verloren? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe die Pässe verloren, aber ich habe die Briefe gefunden. — Hat er die Zettel gebracht? Er hat die Zettel und die Zeitungen gebracht. — Haben Sie den Gasthof gefunden? Ich habe den Gasthof gefunden. — Hat die Magd die Zimmer gesehen? Nein, mein Herr, sie hat die Zimmer nicht gesehen. — Hat er das Zollhaus gefunden? Ja, mein Herr, er hat das Zollhaus und den Bahnhof gefunden. — Hat der Kutscher die Briefe gebracht? Ja, mein Herr, er hat die Briefe gebracht und er hat die Zettel weggenommen. — Haben die Kellner die Messer und die Gabeln gebracht? Sie haben die Messer und die Gabeln nicht gebracht, aber sie haben die Schüsseln, die Löffel und die Gläser weggenommen.

|                 |             |                  |        |      |
|-----------------|-------------|------------------|--------|------|
| Gen.            | Pl.         |                  | Gen.   | Pl.  |
| das Bett,       | es, en.     | der Spiegel,     | s,     | —    |
| das Federbett,  | es, en.     | die Kommode,     | —      | n.   |
| die Matratze,   | — n.        | der Nachtstuhl,  | es, s, | "e.  |
| das Betttuch,   | es, s, "er. | der Nachtopf,    | es, s, | "e.  |
| die Bettdecke,  | — n.        | der Wasserkrug,  | es, s, | "e.  |
| das Kopfkissen, | s, —        | das Waschbecken, | s,     | —    |
| die Oberdecke,  | — n.        | das Glas,        | es,    | "er. |
| das Handtuch,   | es, s, "er. | die Seife,       | —      | n.   |
| das Licht,      | es, s, er.  | der Leuchter,    | s,     | —    |

<sup>1</sup> An ellipsis of the articles often occurs in English, but they are repeated before each noun in French, Italian, and German. See also Note 1, page 74.

## SECTION V.—PLURAL OF NOUNS.

33

Inf. **Acheter,**  
Past part. **acheté.**

Inf. **Vendre,**  
Past part. **vendu.**

Inf. **Comprare,**  
Past part. **comprato.**

Inf. **Vendere,**  
Past part. **venduto.**

## EXERCISE 5.

Avez-vous acheté une table? J'ai acheté une table. — A-t-il apporté les tables? Il n'a pas apporté les tables. — Avez-vous emporté les serviettes? Je n'ai pas emporté les serviettes, mais j'ai emporté les couteaux. — Avez-vous vu les hommes? Je n'ai pas vu les hommes, mais j'ai vu les garçons. — Qui a vu les hommes? Le garçon a vu les hommes. — Avez-vous perdu les passe-ports? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai perdu les passe-ports, mais j'ai trouvé les lettres. — A-t-il apporté les billets? Il a apporté les billets et les journaux. — Avez-vous trouvé l'hôtel? J'ai trouvé l'hôtel. — La servante a-t-elle vu les chambres? Non, Monsieur, elle n'a pas vu les chambres. — A-t-il trouvé la douane? Oui, Monsieur, il a trouvé la douane et la gare. — Le cocher a-t-il apporté les lettres? Oui, Monsieur, il a apporté les lettres et il a emporté les billets. — Les garçons ont-ils apporté les couteaux et les fourchettes? Ils n'ont pas apporté les couteaux et les fourchettes, mais ils ont emporté les plats, les cuillères et les verres.

le lit.  
le lit de plumes.  
le matelas.  
le drap.  
la couverture.  
l' (un) oreiller.  
la courte-pointe.  
l' (un) essuie-main.  
la chandelle.

le miroir.  
la commode.  
la chaise percée.  
le pot de chambre.  
le pot-à-l'eau.  
le lavoir, bassin.  
le verre.  
le savon.  
le chandelier.

Ha Ella (*or avete*) comprato una tavola? Ho comprato una tavola. — Ha (*egli*) portato le tavole? (*Egli*) non ha portato le tavole. — Ha Ella (*or avete*) portato via le salviette? Non ho portato via le salviette, ma ho portato via i coltelli. — Ha Ella veduto gli uomini? Non ho veduto gli uomini, ma ho veduto i ragazzi. — Chi ha veduto gli uomini? Il cameriere ha veduto gli uomini. — Ha Ella perduto i passaporti? Sì, Signore, ho perduto i passaporti, ma ho trovato le lettere. — Ha *egli* portato i biglietti? *Egli* ha portato i biglietti e le gazette. — Ha Ella trovato l' albergo? Ho trovato l' albergo. — Ha veduto le camere la cameriera? Signor no, non ha veduto le camere. — Ha (*egli*) trovato la dogana? Signor sì, *egli* ha trovato la dogana e la stazione. — Ha il cocchiere portato le lettere? Sì, Signore, ha portato le lettere ed *egli* ha portato via i biglietti. — Hanno i camerieri portato i coltelli e le forchette? Non hanno portato i coltelli e le forchette, ma *egli*no hanno portato via i piatti i cucchiari ed i bicchieri.

il letto.  
la coltrice.  
il materasso.  
il lenzuolo, *pl. a, fem.*  
la coperta.  
il guanciaie, un origliere.  
la trapunta.  
lo sciugatoio.  
la candela.

lo specchio.  
l' armario.  
la sedia da notte.  
l' (un) orinale.  
la brocca.  
la catinella.  
il bicchiere.  
il sapone.  
il candeliero.



## SECTION VI.—DECLENSION OF NOUNS.

In English nouns are partly inflected and declined with prepositions.

|                 |                                               |
|-----------------|-----------------------------------------------|
| <i>Nom.</i>     | The boy, girl, book, boys, &c.                |
| <i>G. Poss.</i> | of the boy, girl, book, the boy's, boys', &c. |
| <i>Dat.</i>     | to the boy, girl, book, the boy, boys, &c.    |
| <i>Acc.</i>     | the boy, girl, book, boys, &c.                |
| <i>Ab.</i>      | from, by the boy, girl, book, boys, &c.       |

|                 |                                           |                    |
|-----------------|-------------------------------------------|--------------------|
| <i>Nom.</i>     | <i>The boy</i> is here.                   | In Latin.<br>Puer. |
| <i>Gen.</i>     | That is the portrait <i>of the boy</i> .  | Pueri.             |
| <i>G. Poss.</i> | That is <i>the boy's</i> book.            | Pueri.             |
| <i>Dat.</i>     | Give the book <i>to the boy</i> .         | Puero.             |
| <i>Dat.</i>     | The book belongs <i>to the boy</i> .      | Puero.             |
| <i>Dat.</i>     | Give <i>the boy</i> the book.             | Puero.             |
| <i>Acc.</i>     | I see <i>the boy</i> .                    | Puerum.            |
| <i>Ab.</i>      | I received the book <i>from the boy</i> . | Puero.             |

## PROPER NAMES.

The cases of proper names are distinguished by the prepositions *of, to, from, by*; but *'s* may be used in the genitive case; as, *This is a portrait of John*, or *this is John's portrait*.

**Diminutives** are not numerous in English, they generally end in *ling, kin, ock, let*; as, *duckling, lambskin, hillock, streamlet*.

## STRONG DECLENSION.

|                  | Sing.                    | Plur.       |                                                                                                         | Sing. | Plur.            |
|------------------|--------------------------|-------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------|------------------|
| <i>Nom.</i>      | —                        | e, — er.    | { Fem. nouns<br>are invariable<br>in the sing. &<br>take <i>s</i> or <i>en</i><br>in all cases<br>plur. |       | n, en.           |
| <i>Gen.</i>      | —es, s.                  | e, — er.    |                                                                                                         |       | n, en.           |
| <i>Dat.</i>      | —e, —                    | en, n, ern. |                                                                                                         |       | n, en.<br>n, en. |
| <i>Acc.</i>      | —                        | e — er.     |                                                                                                         |       | n, en.<br>n, en. |
| <i>Ab. Von</i> , | with dative termination. |             |                                                                                                         |       | n, en.<br>n, en. |

## WEAK DECLENSION.

The genitive inflection *es* or *s* is the characteristic of the strong declension.

The genitive inflection *n* or *en* is the characteristic of the weak declension, and all other cases singular and plural have the same termination: *das Herz* is the only neuter noun belonging to this declension, it makes *ens* in the genitive, and *das Herz* in the accusative.

**Masculine** and **Neuter** nouns ending in *s, sz, tz, z* take *es* for the genitive singular, and for the dative *e*.

Those in *el, en, er, chen, lein*, take *s*.

**Diminutives** in German have only two terminations, *chen* and *lein*, which are added to the noun, taking care to soften the radical vowel. The noun also becomes neuter; as, *der Bach, das Bächlein, die Blume, das Blümchen*.

## SECTION VI.—DECLENSION OF NOUNS.

35

In French nouns are not inflected, but declined with the definite article.

|             | Sing.                |                                                           | Plur.                 |
|-------------|----------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------|
| <i>Nom.</i> | le père, la mère,    | { l' before nouns that begin with a vowel or silent h.    | les pères, mères, &c. |
| <i>Gen.</i> | du père, de la mère, | { de l' before nouns that begin with a vowel or silent h. | des pères, mères, &c. |
| <i>Dat.</i> | au père, à la mère,  | { à l' before nouns that begin with a vowel or silent h.  | aux pères, mères, &c. |
| <i>Acc.</i> | le père, la mère,    | { l' before nouns that begin with a vowel or silent h.    | les pères, mères, &c. |
| <i>Ab.</i>  | du père, de la mère, | { de l' before nouns that begin with a vowel or silent h. | des pères, mères, &c. |

### PROPER NAMES.

In French proper nouns are declined with the prepositions *de* and *à*. They do not admit of a plural unless they are used as common nouns, i.e., to designate in individuals qualities similar to those belonging to the names mentioned; as, *Les deux Rousseau*. *Les Corneille et les Racine ont illustré la scène française*. *La France a eu ses Césars et ses Pompées*.

In Italian *di* and *a* are used; but *d'* and *ad* are used before vowels, and *da* is always used to distinguish the ablative from the genitive, whether the word begins with a vowel or not.

In German proper names are declined in three ways:—

1. By only changing the definite article; *Der, des, &c., David, &c.*

2. Like nouns without the article. Those in *s, sz, sch, st, z, zt*, take *ens* in the genitive, and *en* in other cases. Those in *e* take *ns* in the genitive, and *n* in other cases. Other terminations take *s* in the genitive, *n* in other cases, or simply *s* in the genitive, without any alteration in the other cases; as, *Fritz, Fritzens, Fritzen, &c.; Luise, Luisens, Luisen, &c.; Bertha, Bertha's Bertha'n, &c.; Anna, Anna's, Anna, &c.* According to Heyse, it is better to leave the dative and accusative unchanged.

3. Proper nouns are also declined as in the language to which they belong, as *Jesus Christus, Jesu Christi, —u —o, —um —m, &c.*; they generally form their plural like common nouns, but those ending in *o* add *ne*, as *Cicero, die Cicerone*.

In Italian nouns are not inflected, but declined with the definite article.

|           | Sing.                                 |                                                           | Plur.      |
|-----------|---------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| <i>N.</i> | il padre, lo sprone, la madre,        | { l' before nouns that begin with a vowel or silent h.    | gli, &c.   |
| <i>G.</i> | del padre, dello sprone, della madre, | { dell' before nouns that begin with a vowel or silent h. | degli, &c. |
| <i>D.</i> | al padre, allo sprone, alla madre,    | { all' before nouns that begin with a vowel or silent h.  | agli, &c.  |
| <i>A.</i> | il padre, lo sprone, la madre,        | { l' before nouns that begin with a vowel or silent h.    | gli, &c.   |
| <i>A.</i> | dal padre, dallo sprone, dalla madre, | { dall' before nouns that begin with a vowel or silent h. | dagli, &c. |

**Augmentatives and Diminutives** are peculiar to the Italian language, and consist in the power of increasing or diminishing the meaning of nouns and adjectives by cutting off the last vowel and adding the following terminations; as—

**Augmentatives:** *one, ona*; as, *libro, librone*.

To express strength: *otto, otta*; as, *Giovine, giovinotto*.

For ugliness and contempt: *accio, accia, azzo*; as, *corpo, corpaccio*.

**Diminutives.**—To express beauty, &c.: *ino, ina, lino, lina, ello, ella, erello, erella, etto, etta, icello, icella*; as, *Fanciullo, fanciullino, &c.; Fiumicello* from *fiume*. For ugliness and contempt: *uccio, upola, icciato, icciuolo, uzzo, ame, aglia*; as, *Casa, casupola, donna, donnuccia*. These terminations follow the same rules as other nouns as to gender and number. Words in *co* and *go* require *h* before *e* or *i*, as *fresco, freschetto*. Some feminine nouns indicating inanimate things become masculine when they are changed into diminutives, as *stanza, stanzino*.

The terminations *iccio, igno*, are added to adjectives, and correspond with the adverb "rather." *nero, black, nericcio, rather black.*

## SECTION VI.—DECLENSION OF NOUNS.

| Infinitive.<br><b>To give,</b><br><b>To lend,</b> | Past part.<br><b>given.</b><br><b>lent.</b> |
|---------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|
| Acc. and Gen. <i>The —'s.</i>                     |                                             |
| The man's passport. <sup>1</sup>                  |                                             |
| I have seen the man's passport.                   |                                             |
| I have given the banker the man's passport.       |                                             |
| I have given the man's passport to the banker.    |                                             |
| The gentleman.                                    | the lady.                                   |
| The doctor.                                       | the milliner.                               |
| The surgeon.                                      | the laundress.                              |
| The apothecary.                                   | the bookseller.                             |
| The lawyer.                                       | the music-seller.                           |
| The barber.                                       | the watchmaker.                             |
| The hairdresser.                                  | the upholsterer.                            |
| The tailor.                                       | the draper.                                 |
| The shoemaker.                                    | the hatter.                                 |

**The man's.**

| Infinitive.<br><b>Geben,</b><br><b>Leihen,</b>  | Past part.<br><b>gegeben.</b><br><b>geliehen.</b> |
|-------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------|
| m. f. n. pl.<br>Acc. <i>Den, die, das; die.</i> | m. f. n. pl.<br>Gen. <i>Des, der, des; der.</i>   |

Der Pasß des Mannes.<sup>2</sup>

Ich habe den Pasß des Mannes gesehen.

{ Ich habe dem Geldwechsler den Pasß des Mannes gegeben.

|                  | Gen.   | Pl. |                        | Gen. | Pl.  |
|------------------|--------|-----|------------------------|------|------|
| der Herr,        | n,     | en. | die Dame,              | —    | n.   |
| { der Arzt,      | es, s, | "e. | die Putzhändlerin,     | —    | nen. |
| { der Doctor,    | s,     | en. |                        |      |      |
| der Wundarzt,    | es,    | "e. | die Wäscherin,         | —    | nen. |
| der Apotheker,   | s,     | —   | der Buchhändler,       | s,   | —    |
| der Anwalt,      | es, s, | e.  | der Musikalienhändler, | s,   | —    |
| der Barbier,     | s,     | e.  | der Uhrmacher,         | s,   | —    |
| der Friseur,     | s,     | —   | der Tapezierer,        | s,   | —    |
| der Schneider,   | s,     | e.  | der Tuchhändler,       | s,   | —    |
| der Schuhmacher, | s,     | —   | der Hutmacher,         | s,   | —    |

**Den, &c., &c., des Mannes.**

## EXERCISE 6.

Have you seen the man's money? I have seen the man's money. — Have you given the man the boy's money? I have not given the man the boy's money.<sup>5</sup> — Have you seen the doctor's purse? I have not seen the doctor's but the tailor's.

Haben Sie das Geld des Mannes gesehen? Ich habe das Geld des Mannes gesehen. — Haben Sie dem Manne das Geld des Knaben gegeben? Ich habe dem Manne das Geld des Knaben nicht gegeben. — Haben Sie den Beutel des Doctors gesehen? Ich habe nicht den des Doctors, sondern den des

<sup>1</sup> In English the genitive precedes the nominative and accusative. The dative precedes both genitive and accusative: it may follow them, but then the preposition *to* must be expressed. In such sentences as, *the amount of the bill, the reward of virtue*, the genitive follows the nominative and accusative.

<sup>2</sup> In German the accusative follows the dative. The genitive follows both dative and accusative. The genitive may sometimes be placed first, especially in poetry; as, *des Manns Pasß*.

# SECTION VI.—DECLENSION OF NOUNS.

37

| Infinitive.<br><b>Donner,</b><br><b>Prêter,</b> |    |                                       | Past part.<br><b>donné.</b><br><b>prêté.</b> |    |     |
|-------------------------------------------------|----|---------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------|----|-----|
| m.                                              | f. |                                       | m.                                           | f. | vl. |
| Acc. s. <i>Celui, celle.</i>                    |    | Gen. s. <i>Du, de la, de l' (de).</i> |                                              |    |     |
| „ pl. <i>Ceux, celles.</i>                      |    | „ pl. <i>Des (de).</i>                |                                              |    |     |

Le passe-port de l'homme.<sup>3</sup>

J'ai vu le passe-port de l'homme.

J'ai donné le passe port de l'homme au banquier.

|                      |                         |
|----------------------|-------------------------|
| le monsieur.         | la dame.                |
| le docteur, médecin. | la marchande de modes.  |
| le chirurgien.       | la blanchisseuse.       |
| l' (un) apothicaire. | le libraire.            |
| l' (un) avocat.      | le marchand de musique. |
| le barbier.          | l' (un) horloger.       |
| le perruquier.       | le tapissier.           |
| le tailleur.         | le marchand de drap.    |
| le cordonnier.       | le chapelier.           |

**Celui, &c., &c., de l'homme.**

| Infinitive.<br><b>Dare,</b><br><b>Prestare,</b> |    |                                               | Past part.<br><b>dato.</b><br><b>prestato.</b> |    |        |
|-------------------------------------------------|----|-----------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------|----|--------|
| m.                                              | f. |                                               | m.                                             | m. | f. vl. |
| Acc. s. <i>Quello, —a.</i>                      |    | Gen. s. <i>Del, dello, della, dell' (di).</i> |                                                |    |        |
| „ pl. <i>Quelli, —e.</i>                        |    | „ pl. <i>Dei, degli, delle (di).</i>          |                                                |    |        |

Il passaporto dell' uomo.<sup>4</sup>

Ho veduto il passaporto dell' uomo.

Ho dato il passaporto dell' uomo al banchiere.

|                     |                        |
|---------------------|------------------------|
| il signora.         | la signora.            |
| il dottore, medico. | la crestaia.           |
| il chirurgo.        | la lavandaia.          |
| lo speziale.        | il libraio.            |
| l' (un) avvocato.   | il venditor di musica. |
| il barbiere.        | l' (un) oriuolaio.     |
| il parrucchiere.    | il tappezziere.        |
| il sartore.         | il pannaiuolo.         |
| il calzolaio.       | il cappellaio.         |

**Quello, &c., &c., dell' uomo.**

## EXERCISE 6.

Avez-vous vu l'argent de l'homme? J'ai vu l'argent de l'homme. — Avez-vous donné l'argent du garçon à l'homme? Je n'ai pas donné l'argent du garçon à l'homme. — Avez-vous vu la bourse du médecin? Je n'ai pas vu celle du médecin

Ha Ella veduto il danaro dell' uomo? Ho veduto il danaro dell' uomo. — Ha Ella dato ' all' uomo il danaro del ragazzo? Non ho dato il danaro del ragazzo all' uomo. — Ha Ella veduto la borsa del medico? Non ho veduto quella del medico, ma

<sup>3</sup> In French the nominative comes first. The genitive follows the accusative; the dative follows both genitive and accusative.

<sup>4</sup> In Italian the construction is similar to that of the French, but may be varied for the sake of elegance and harmony.

<sup>5</sup> The letters A. G. D. show the order of the cases in French construction, D. G. A. in English, and D. A. G. in German.

## SECTION VI.—DECLENSION OF NOUNS.

## EXERCISE 6.

— Have you seen the doctor? Yes, Sir, I have seen the doctor. — Have you found the surgeon's knife? I have found the surgeon's knife and spoon. — Have you found a lawyer? I have found a lawyer. — Have you given the lawyer the bookseller's letter? I have given the lawyer the bookseller's letter. — Has the tailor found a cab? He has found a cab. — Has he lost the carpet-bag? He has not lost the carpet-bag, but he has lost a purse. — Have you seen the watchmaker's passport? I have seen the watchmaker's passport and letter of credit. — Has she given the draper's shawl to the milliner? She has given the draper's shawl to the milliner. — Have you seen the hatter's bill? I have not seen the hatter's bill. — Has the gentleman found the stick? He has found the stick. — Has the lady lost a key? Yes, Miss, she has lost a key and a note. — Has she found the note? She has not found the note, but she has found the key.

The dentist.  
The baker.  
The butcher.  
The grocer.  
*The fishmonger.*  
*The poulterer.*  
*The carpenter.*

the wine-merchant.  
the pastry-cook.  
the tobacconist.  
the green-grocer, fruit-woman.  
the peasant.  
the gardener.  
the neighbour.

Schneiders gesehen. — Haben Sie den Doctor gesehen? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe den Doctor gesehen. — Haben Sie das Messer des Wundarztes gefunden? Ich habe das Messer und den Löffel des Wundarztes gefunden. — Haben Sie einen Anwalt gefunden? Ich habe einen Anwalt gefunden. — Haben Sie dem Anwalte den Brief des Buchhändlers gegeben. Ich habe dem Anwalte den Brief des Buchhändlers gegeben. — Hat der Schneider eine Miethkutsche gefunden? Er hat eine Miethkutsche gefunden. — Hat er den Nachtsack verloren? Er hat nicht den Nachtsack, sondern einen Beutel verloren. — Haben Sie den Pass des Uhrmachers gesehen? Ich habe den Pass und den Creditbrief des Uhrmachers gegeben. — Sie hat der Putzhändlerin den Shawl des Tuchhändlers gegeben. — Haben Sie die Rechnung des Hutmakers gesehen? Ich habe die Rechnung des Hutmakers gesehen. — Hat der Herr den Stock gefunden? Er hat den Stock gefunden. — Hat die Dame einen Schlüssel verloren? Ja, Fräulein, sie hat einen Schlüssel und ein Billet verloren. — Hat sie das Billet gefunden? Sie hat nicht das Billet, sondern den Schlüssel gefunden.

|                      | Gen. | Pl. |                     | Gen. | Pl.    |
|----------------------|------|-----|---------------------|------|--------|
| der Zahnarzt,        | es,  | e.  | der Weinändler,     | s,   | —      |
| der Bäcker,          | s,   | —   | der Pastetenbäcker, | s,   | —      |
| der Fleischer,       | s,   | —   | der Tabakhändler,   | s,   | —      |
| der Spezereihändler, | s,   | —   | die Obsthändlerin,  | —    | nen.   |
| der Fischhändler,    | s,   | —   | der Bauer,          | s,   | o r n. |
| der Hühnerhändler,   | s,   | —   | der Gärtner,        | s,   | n.     |
| der Tischler,        | s,   | —   | der Nachbar,        | s,   | n.     |

## SECTION VI.—DECLENSION OF NOUNS.

39

### EXERCISE 6.

mais celle du tailleur. — Avez-vous vu le médecin? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai vu le médecin. — Avez-vous trouvé le couteau du chirurgien? J'ai trouvé le couteau et la cuillère du chirurgien. — Avez-vous trouvé un avocat? J'ai trouvé un avocat. — Avez-vous donné la lettre du libraire à l'avocat? J'ai donné la lettre du libraire à l'avocat. — Le tailleur a-t-il trouvé un cabriolet? Il a trouvé un cabriolet. — A-t-il perdu le sac de nuit? Il n'a pas perdu le sac de nuit, mais il a perdu une bourse. — Avez-vous vu le passe-port de l'horloger? J'ai vu le passe-port et la lettre de crédit de l'horloger. — A-t-elle donné le châle du marchand de drap à la marchande de modes? Elle a donné le châle du marchand de drap à la marchande de modes. — Avez-vous vu la note du chapelier? Je n'ai pas vu la note du chapelier. — Le monsieur a-t-il trouvé la canne? Il a trouvé la canne. — La dame a-t-elle perdu une clef? Oui, Mademoiselle, elle a perdu une clef et un billet. — A-t-elle trouvé le billet? Elle n'a pas trouvé le billet, mais elle a trouvé la clef.

le dentista.  
le boulanger.  
le boucher.  
un épicier.  
le poissonnier.  
le marchand de volaille.  
le menuisier.

le marchand de vin.  
le pâtissier.  
le marchand de tabac.  
la fruitière.  
le paysan.  
le jardinier.  
le voisin.

quella del sartore. — Ha Ella veduto il medico? Sì, Signore, ho veduto il medico. — Ha Ella trovato il coltello del chirurgo? Ho trovato il coltello ed il cucchiaino del chirurgo. — Ha Ella trovato un avvocato? Ho trovato un avvocato. — Ha Ella dato la lettera del libraio all' avvocato? Ho dato la lettera del libraio all' avvocato. — Ha il sartore trovato un calessino? Egli ha trovato un calessino. — Ha egli perduto la bisaccia da viaggio? Non ha perduto la bisaccia da viaggio, ma egli ha perduto una borsa. — Ha Ella veduto il passaporto dell' orioulaio? Ho veduto il passaporto e la cambiale dell' orioulaio. — Ha ella dato lo sciallo del pannaiuolo alla crestaia? Ella ha dato lo sciallo del pannaiuolo alla crestaia. — Ha Ella veduto il conto del cappellaio? Non ho veduto la nota del cappellaio. — Ha trovato la canna il signore? Egli ha trovato la canna. — Ha perduto una chiave la signora? Sì, Signora, ha perduto una chiave ed un biglietto. — Ha ella trovato il biglietto? Ella non ha trovato il biglietto, ma ha trovato la chiave.

il cavadenti.  
il fornaio.  
il macellaio.  
il droghiere.  
il pesciaiuolo.  
il pollaiuolo.  
il legnaiuolo.

il mercante di vino.  
il pasticciere.  
il mercante di tabacco.  
la fruttaiuolo.  
il contadino.  
il giardiniera.  
il vicino.

Acc. *Ihn, sie, es, sie,*  
Dat. *Ihm, ihr, ihm,*  
          *ihnen* <sup>1</sup>.

} placed between the auxiliary  
and participle.

Where? Where is? Where are? in.  
Here is. Here are. There is. There are. on.  
Here he, she, it is. Here they are. under.  
There he, she, it is. There they are. near.

|                       |                |          |          |
|-----------------------|----------------|----------|----------|
| Wo? (repose)          | Wo ist?        | Wo sind? | in.      |
| Hier ist.             | Hier sind.     | Da ist.  | Da sind. |
| Hier ist er, sie, es. | Hier sind sie. |          | unter.   |
| Da ist er, sie, es.   | Da sind sie.   |          | neben.   |

Dative repose :  
accusative mo-  
tion.

|                     |                    |
|---------------------|--------------------|
| Infinitive.         | Past part.         |
| <b>To look for,</b> | <b>looked for.</b> |

**Infinitive.** Suchen. **Past part.** gesucht.

|                           |                        |
|---------------------------|------------------------|
| The coat.                 | the dressing-gown.     |
| The waistcoat.            | the dress, gown.       |
| The trousers, pantaloons. | the petticoat.         |
| The drawers.              | the stays.             |
| The stocking.             | the lace.              |
| The garter.               | the collar.            |
| The sock.                 | the sleeve, wristband. |
| The cravat, necktie.      | the cap.               |
| The braces.               | the hat, bonnet.       |
| The shirt.                | the glove.             |
| The gaiter.               | the slipper.           |
| The boot.                 | the shoe.              |
| The bootjack.             | the string, the tape.  |

|                             |         |        |                  |         |        |
|-----------------------------|---------|--------|------------------|---------|--------|
| der Rock,                   | Gen. s, | Pl. e. | der Schlafrock,  | Gen. s, | Pl. e. |
| die Weste,                  | —       | n.     | das Kleid,       | es, s,  | er.    |
| die Hose,                   | —       | n.     | der Unterrock,   | es, s,  | e.     |
| die Unterhose,              | —       | n.     | die Schnürbrust, | —       | er.    |
| der Strumpf,                | es, s,  | e.     | das Schnürband,  | es, s,  | er.    |
| das Strumpfband,            | es,     | er.    | der Kragen,      | s,      | —      |
| die Socke,                  | —       | n.     | die Manschette,  | —       | n.     |
| die Halsbinde,              | —       | n.     | die Mütze,       | —       | n.     |
| die Hosenträger, <i>pl.</i> | m.      |        | der Hut,         | es, s,  | e.     |
| das Hemd,                   | es, s,  | en.    | der Handschuh,   | es, s,  | e.     |
| die Gamasche,               | —       | n.     | der Pantoffel,   | s,      | n.     |
| der Stiefel,                | s,      | —      | der Schuh,       | es, s,  | e.     |
| der Stiefelknecht,          | es, s,  | e.     | { die Schnur,    | — en,   | e.     |
|                             |         |        | { das Zwirnband, | es, s,  | er.    |

### EXERCISE 7.

Have you seen the coat? No, Sir, I have not seen it.—  
Have you seen the slippers? Yes, Sir, I have seen them.—  
Have you brought the trousers? I have brought them.—Have

Haben Sie den Rock gesehen ? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe ihn nicht gesehen.—Haben Sie die Pantoffeln gesehen? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe sie gesehen. —Haben Sie die Hosen gebracht? Ich habe

<sup>1</sup> When these pronouns in the third person are combined, in English, German, and French, the direct objective or accusative precedes the indirect objective or dative; but in Italian the dative precedes the accusative, with the exception of *loro*. In English the accusative then follows the dative *him, her, me, etc.*; as, *Give him the book*; but in Italian the preposition *a* is not expressed but understood; as, *Give him them*, instead of *give them to him*. <sup>2</sup> The feminine of the past participle is *data*.

# DIRECT AND INDIRECT OBJECTIVE CASE).

41

Acc. *Le, la, l', les,* } placed before the auxiliary verb.  
Dat. *Lui, leur<sup>1</sup>,* }

Où? Où est? Où sont? dans.  
Voici. Voilà. sur.  
Le, la voici. Les voici. sous.  
La, la voilà. Les voilà. près, auprès de.

Infinitive. Past part. f. pl. m. pl. f.  
**Chercher,** **cherché<sup>2</sup>, ée, és, ées.<sup>3</sup>**

|                              |                           |
|------------------------------|---------------------------|
| l' (un) habit.               | la robe de chambre.       |
| le gilet.                    | la robe.                  |
| le pantalon.                 | le jupon.                 |
| le caleçon.                  | le corset.                |
| le bas.                      | le lacet.                 |
| la jarretière.               | le col.                   |
| le chausson.                 | la manchette.             |
| la cravate.                  | le bonnet.                |
| les bretelles, <i>f. pl.</i> | le chapeau.               |
| la chemise.                  | le gant.                  |
| la guêtre.                   | la pantoufle.             |
| la botte, bottine.           | le soulier.               |
| le tirebotta.                | la ficelle, le passement. |

Acc. *Lo, la, l', gli, li, le,* } placed before the auxil. verb.  
Dat. *Gli, le, gli, loro<sup>1</sup>,* } (*Loro* placed after the verb and participle.)

Dove or ove? Dov' è? Dove sono? in.  
Ecco qui or quà. Ecco là. su.  
Ecco lo, la, qui. Ecco li, le, quà. sotto.  
Ecco lo, la (là). Ecco li, le (là). presso.

Infinitive. Past part. f. pl. m. pl. f.  
**Cercare,** **cercato<sup>2</sup>, a, i, e.<sup>3</sup>**

|                                                          |                         |
|----------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------|
| il vestito, l' abito.                                    | la veste da camera.     |
| il giubbotto.                                            | la veste, la roba.      |
| il pantalone.                                            | la gonna.               |
| le mutande, <i>pl. f.</i>                                | il corsetto.            |
| la calza.                                                | la stringa.             |
| la legaccia.                                             | il collare.             |
| il calzetto.                                             | il manichetto.          |
| la cravatta.                                             | la berretta.            |
| le cinghie, <i>pl. f.</i> , gli straccali, <i>pl. m.</i> | il cappello.            |
| la camicia.                                              | il guanto.              |
| la gosa.                                                 | la pianella.            |
| lo stivale, stivaletto.                                  | la scarpa.              |
| il tirastivali.                                          | lo spago, il passamano. |

## EXERCISE 7.

Avez-vous vu l'habit? Non, Monsieur, je ne l'ai pas vu. —  
Avez-vous vu les pantoufles? Oui, Monsieur, je les ai vues.<sup>2</sup>  
—Avez-vous apporté les pantalons? Je les ai apportés. —

Ha Ella (or avete) veduto l' abito? No, Signore, non l' ho veduto. — Ha Ella veduto le pianelle? Sì, Signor, le ho vedute.<sup>3</sup> — Ha Ella portato i pantaloni? Li ho portati. —

formed in French by adding an *e* mute to the masculine; as, *vu, vue*. The plural masculine and feminine is formed by adding *s* to the singular; as, *vus, vues*. In Italian the past participle is changed into *a*, the plural masculine is *i*, and the feminine *e*. <sup>3</sup> In French and Italian, the past participle used with the auxiliary verbs *avoir* and *essere*, and preceded by its direct objective or accusative case, agrees with it in gender and number.



## EXERCISE 7.

I (got) the drawers? You have not (got) them, the servant has taken them away. — Have you looked for them? Yes, Sir, I have looked for them, but I have not found them. — Have you the dress? Yes, Madam, I have it. — Has the servant looked for the stockings? Yes, Miss, he has looked for them. — Has he found them? He has found them, and he has brought them. — Have you brought the gloves? I have brought them. — Who has taken them away? The servant has taken them away. — Has the boy got them? The boy has not got them, but the girl has. — Has the boy lost the necktie? Yes, Miss, he has<sup>1</sup> (lost it). — Have you lost the gloves? No, Sir, I have not lost them. Who has lost them? The master has lost them, but the boy has found them. — Have you brought the boots and shoes? I have not brought them. — Have you seen the hat or bonnet? I have seen it. — Have you seen the banker? I have seen him. — Have you found the custom-house? I have found it. — Where is the coat? Here it is. — Where are the stockings? Here they are. — Where is the maid? Here she is. — Where are the waiters? They are in the kitchen.

|                      |                       |
|----------------------|-----------------------|
| The handkerchief.    | the hair-pin.         |
| The veil.            | the button.           |
| The ribbon.          | the ear-ring.         |
| The fan.             | the bracelet.         |
| The reticule.        | the necklace (pearl). |
| The muff.            | the watch.            |
| The parasol.         | the watch-key.        |
| The apron.           | the watch-chain.      |
| <i>The nightcap.</i> | the seal.             |

sie gebracht. — Habe ich die Unterhosen? Sie haben sie nicht, der Bediente hat sie weggenommen. — Haben Sie sie gesucht? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe sie gesucht, aber ich habe sie nicht gefunden. — Haben Sie das Kleid? Ja, Madame, ich habe es. — Hat der Bediente die Strümpfe gesucht? Ja, Fräulein, er hat sie gesucht. — Hat er sie gefunden? Er hat sie gefunden, und er hat sie gebracht. — Haben Sie die Handschuhe gebracht? Ich habe sie gebracht. — Wer hat sie weggenommen? Der Bediente hat sie weggenommen. — Hat sie der Knabe? Der Knabe hat sie nicht, aber das Mädchen hat sie. — Hat der Knabe die Halsbinde verloren? Ja, Fräulein, er hat sie verloren. — Haben Sie die Handschuhe verloren? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe sie nicht verloren. — Wer hat sie verloren? Der Hausherr hat sie verloren, aber der Knabe hat sie gefunden. — Haben Sie die Stiefel und die Schuhe gebracht? Ich habe sie nicht gebracht. — Haben Sie den Hut gesehen? Ich habe ihn gesehen. — Haben Sie den Geldwechsler gesehen? Ich habe ihn gesehen. — Haben Sie das Zollhaus gefunden? Ich habe es gefunden. — Wo ist der Rock? Hier ist er. — Wo sind die Strümpfe? Hier sind sie. — Wo ist die Magd? Hier ist sie. — Wo sind die Kellner? Sie sind in der Küche.

|                    | Gen.   | Pl. |                     | Gen.   | Pl. |
|--------------------|--------|-----|---------------------|--------|-----|
| das Taschentuch,   | es, s, | er. | die Haarnadel,      | —      | n.  |
| der Schleier,      | s,     | —   | der Knopf,          | es, s, | er. |
| das Band,          | es, s, | er. | der Ohrring,        | es, s, | e.  |
| der Fächer,        | s,     | —   | das Armband,        | es, s, | er. |
| der Arbeitsbeutel, | s,     | —   | die Perlenschnur,   | —      | er. |
| der Muff,          | es, s, | er. | die Uhr,            | —      | en. |
| der Sonnenschirm,  | es, s, | e.  | der Uhrenschlüssel, | s,     | —   |
| die Schürze,       | —      | n.  | die Uhrkette,       | —      | n.  |
| die Nachthaube,    | —      | n.  | das Petschaft,      | es, s, | e.  |

<sup>1</sup> The elliptical power of the English language allows the omission of the object. The whole of a sentence may be represented by an auxiliary verb; as, *I have, and I do, &c., &c.*; but this is contrary to the idiom of the German, French, and Italian languages, in which the direct objective or accusative case of

## EXERCISE 7.

Est-ce que j'ai les caleçons? Vous ne les avez pas, le domestique les a emportés. — Les avez-vous cherchés? Oui, Monsieur, je les ai cherchés, mais je ne les ai pas trouvés. — Avez-vous la robe? Oui, Madame, je l'ai. — Le domestique a-t-il cherché les bas? Oui, Mademoiselle, il les a cherchés. — Les a-t-il trouvés? Il les a trouvés et il les a apportés. — Avez-vous apporté les gants? Je les ai apportés. — Qui les a emportés? Le domestique les a emportés. — Le garçon les a-t-il? Le garçon ne les a pas, mais la fille les a. — Le garçon a-t-il perdu la cravate? Oui, Mademoiselle, il l'a perdue. — Avez-vous perdu les gants? Non, Monsieur, je ne les ai pas perdus. — Qui les a perdus? Le maître les a perdus, mais le garçon les a trouvés. — Avez-vous apporté les bottes et les souliers? Je ne les ai pas apportés. — Avez-vous vu le chapeau? Je l'ai vu. — Avez-vous vu le banquier? Je l'ai vu. — Avez-vous trouvé la douane? Je l'ai trouvée. — Où est l'habit? Le voici. — Où sont les bas? Les voici. — Où est la servante? La voici. — Où sont les garçons? Ils sont dans (or à) la cuisine.

le mouchoir.  
le voile.  
le ruban.  
un éventail.  
le ridicule.  
le manchon.  
une ombrelle.  
le tablier.  
le bonnet de nuit.

une épingle à cheveux.  
le bouton.  
la boucle d'oreille.  
le bracelet.  
le collier or fil de perles.  
la montre.  
la clef de montre.  
la chaîne.  
le cachet.

Ho (io) i calzoni? Ella non li ha, il domestico li ha portati via. — Li ha Ella cercati? Sì, Signore, li ho cercati, ma non li ho trovati. — Ha Ella la roba? Sì, Signora, l'ho. — Ha il domestico cercato le calze? Sì, Signora, le ha cercate. — Le ha trovate? Le ha trovate e le ha portate. — Ha Ella portato i guanti? Li ho portati. — Chi li ha portati via? Il servo li ha portati via. — Li ha il ragazzo? Il ragazzo non li ha, ma la ragazza li ha. — Ha perduto la cravatta il ragazzo, or ha il ragazzo perduto la cravatta? Sì, Signora, l'ha perduta. — Ha Ella perduto i guanti? No, Signore, non li ho perduti. — Chi li ha perduti? Il padrone li ha perduti, ma il ragazzo li ha trovati. — Avete portato gli stivali e le scarpe? Non li ho portati. — Ha Ella veduto il cappello? L'ho veduto. — Ha Ella veduto il banchiere? L'ho veduto. — Ha Ella trovato la dogana? L'ho trovata. — Dov'è il vestito? Eccoli (quà). — Dove sono le calze? Eccoli. — Dov'è la cameriera? Eccoli. — Ove sono i camerieri? Sono nella cucina.

il fazzoletto.  
il velo.  
il nastro.  
il ventaglio.  
il sacchetto.  
il manicotto.  
il parasole.  
il grembiale.  
la berretta da notte.

la spilla di testa.  
il bottone.  
l'orecchino.  
la smaniglia.  
il vizzo or filo di perle.  
l'(un) oriuolo.  
la chiave d'oriuolo.  
la catena d'oriuolo.  
il sigillo.

## SECTION VIII.—PERSONAL PRONOUNS, COMBINED

*Acc. or Dir. Obj.* Me, thee, us, you, } placed after the auxiliary  
*Dat. or Ind. Obj.* (to) Me, (to) thee, } verb and participle in  
 (to) us, (to) you, } compound tenses.

*It, them, &c.*, precede *me, thee, us, you*! if *to* is expressed; but *them* follows if *to* is understood.

| Infinitive.                                            | Past part.           |                        |
|--------------------------------------------------------|----------------------|------------------------|
| To have the kindness to,                               | had the kindness to, | } with the infinitive. |
| To have a mind to,                                     | had a mind to,       |                        |
| To have time to,                                       | had time to,         |                        |
| To be willing to, wish to, been willing to, wished to, |                      |                        |

|                           |                                     |   |
|---------------------------|-------------------------------------|---|
| Will you ?                | I will, we will.                    | } |
| Are you willing to ?      | I am willing to, we are willing to. |   |
| Do you wish to ?          | I (do) wish to, we (do) wish to.    | } |
| Wilt thou ?               | I will.                             |   |
| Art thou willing to ?     | I am willing to.                    | } |
| Dost thou wish to ?       | I (do) wish to.                     |   |
| Will he or she ?          | he or she will.                     | } |
| Is he or she willing to ? | he or she is willing to.            |   |
| Does he or she wish to ?  | he or she does (wish) or wishes to. | } |
| Will they ?               | they will.                          |   |
| Are they willing to ?     | they are willing to.                | } |
| Do they wish to ?         | they (do) wish to.                  |   |

*Acc.* Mich, dich, uns (*Sie or euch*), } placed between the aux-  
*Dat.* Mir, dir, uns (*Ihnen or euch*), } iliary verb and participle  
 in compound tenses.

*Es, ihn, &c.*, precede *mir, dir, uns (Ihnen or euch)*.<sup>2</sup>

| Infinitive.        | Past part.                                             |                        |
|--------------------|--------------------------------------------------------|------------------------|
| Die Güte haben zu, | die Güte gehabt zu,                                    | } with the infinitive. |
| Lust haben zu,     | Lust gehabt zu,                                        |                        |
| Zeit haben zu,     | Zeit gehabt zu,                                        |                        |
| Wollen             | { gewollt,<br>wollen, when combined with another verb, |                        |

Wollen Sie ? Wollt ihr ? Ich will, wir wollen.

Willst du ? Ich will.

Will er, sie ? Er, sie will.

Wollen sie ? Sie wollen.

## EXERCISE 8.

Have you a mind to buy a coat? I have a mind to buy a coat and hat.—Do you wish to buy a table? Yes, Sir, I have a mind to buy a table.—Has the man a mind to sell the knife? The man has a mind to sell the knife.—Do you wish to see

Haben Sie Lust einen Rock zu kaufen?<sup>3</sup> Ich habe Lust einen Rock und einen Hut zu kaufen.—Haben Sie Lust einen Tisch zu kaufen? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe Lust einen Tisch zu kaufen.—Hat der Mann Lust das Messer zu verkaufen? Der Mann hat Lust das Messer zu verkaufen.—Haben Sie Lust

<sup>1</sup> In English, the accusative precedes the dative when a 1st, 2nd, or 3rd personal pronoun is combined with the 3rd; as, Give it me. Give it him. Give me them. Give them them. See Note 1, page 40. <sup>2</sup> In German, the accusative precedes the dative whenever two personal pronouns are combined. <sup>3</sup> In French, the dative precedes the accusative when the 1st or 2nd personal pronouns are combined with the 3rd, except in the imperative affirmative; as, Donnez-le moi, donnez-le lui, when the accusative precedes the dative. <sup>4</sup> In German the infinitive is placed at the end of the sentence.

# IN THE DIRECT AND INDIRECT OBJECTIVE CASE.

45

*Acc.* Me, te, nous, vous, } placed before the auxiliary verb  
*Dat.* Me, te, nous, vous, } in compound tenses.

*Me, te, nous, vous,* precede *le, la, &c.*<sup>3</sup>

| Infinitive.               | Past part.             | } with the infinitive. |
|---------------------------|------------------------|------------------------|
| <b>Avoir la bonté de,</b> | <b>eu la bonté de,</b> |                        |
| <b>Avoir envie de,</b>    | <b>eu envie de,</b>    |                        |
| <b>Avoir le temps de,</b> | <b>eu le temps de,</b> |                        |
| <b>Vouloir,</b>           | <b>voulu,</b>          |                        |

Voulez-vous ? Je veux, nous voulons.

Veux-tu ? Je veux.

Vent-il, elle ? Il, elle veut.

Veulent-ils, elles ? Ils, elles veulent.

*Acc.* Mi, me, ti, te, ci, ce, (*La or vi, ve*), } placed before the  
*Dat.* Mi, me, ti, te, ci, ce, (*Le, gli, vi, ve*), } auxiliary verb in  
 comp. tenses.

*Me, te, ce, (Le, gli, ve,)* precede *lo, la, &c.*<sup>4</sup>

| Infinitive.              | Past part.                | } with the infinitive. |
|--------------------------|---------------------------|------------------------|
| <b>Aver la bontà di,</b> | <b>avuto la bontà di,</b> |                        |
| <b>Aver { voglia di,</b> | <b>avuto { voglia di,</b> |                        |
| <b>{ desiderio di,</b>   | <b>{ desiderio di,</b>    |                        |
| <b>Aver tempo di,</b>    | <b>avuto tempo di,</b>    |                        |
| <b>Volere,</b>           | <b>voluto,</b>            |                        |

Vuol Ella, volete ? Voglio, vogliamo.

Vuoi tu ? Voglio.

Vuol egli, ella ? &c. Egli, ella vuol.

Vogliono eglino, elleno ? Eglino, elleno vogliono.

## EXERCISE 8.

Avez-vous envie d'acheter un habit ? J'ai envie d'acheter un habit et un chapeau. — Avez-vous envie d'acheter une table ? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai envie d'acheter une table. — L'homme a-t-il envie de vendre le couteau ? L'homme a envie de vendre le couteau.

Ha Ella voglia di comprare un abito ? Ho voglia di comprare un abito ed un cappello. — Ha Ella voglia di comprare una tavola ? Sì, Signore, ho voglia di comprare una tavola. — Ha l'uomo voglia di vendere il coltello ? L'uomo ha desiderio di ven-

<sup>3</sup> In Italian, as in French, the dative precedes the accusative when the 1st. or 2nd. personal pronouns are combined with the 3rd. *Gl* then forms one word with *lo, li, la, le*; but an *e* is inserted to prevent harshness of sound; as, *glielo, glieli, gliela, glile*. *Gl* is used instead of *le* in polite address, and also instead of *loro* for the same reason. These pronouns are joined to the infinitive, having previously cut off the final *e*, and *re* if the verb ends in *re*. See Example page 47, and Note 2, page 48. *Gl* coalesces in the same manner with *ne* and is joined to the infinitive; as *dargliene*, to give him some.

## EXERCISE 8.

the knife? I have a mind to see it. — Have you time to look for the stockings? No, Sir, I have not time to look for them. — Have you a mind to give the man the boy's knife? Yes, Sir, I have a mind to give it to him. — Will you give me the master's gloves? Yes, Sir, I will give them to you. — Do you wish to see the doctor? Yes, Sir, I wish to see him. — Have you found the tailor's money? No, Sir, I have not found it; I have not had time to look for it. — Has the tailor brought the boy's clothes? He has not had time to bring them. — Have you a mind to bring them? Yes, Sir, I have a mind, but I have no time to bring them. — Has the doctor seen the apothecaries? Yes, Sir, he has seen them, and given them your notes.<sup>1</sup> — Has the boy brought the slippers? He has not had time to bring them, but the girl has brought them, and she has given them to the waiter. — Will you have the kindness to look for my coat? I will look for it.

|                  |                      |
|------------------|----------------------|
| The ring.        | the spectacles.      |
| The comb.        | the penknife.        |
| The brush.       | the razor.           |
| The tooth-brush. | the scissors.        |
| The tooth-pick.  | the needle.          |
| The tobacco.     | the knitting-needle. |
| The cigar.       | the pin.             |
| The snuff.       | the bodkin.          |
| — snuff-box.     | the sword.           |
|                  | the pipe.            |

das Messer zu sehen? Ich habe Lust es zu sehen. — Haben Sie Zeit die Strümpfe zu suchen? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe keine Zeit sie zu suchen. — Haben Sie Lust dem Manne das Messer des Knaben zu geben? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe Lust es ihm zu geben. — Wollen Sie mir die Handschuhe des Herrn geben? Ja, mein Herr, ich will sie Ihnen geben. — Haben Sie Lust den Doctor zu sehen? Ja, mein Herr, ich will ihn sehen. — Haben Sie das Geld des Schneiders gefunden? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe es nicht gefunden; ich habe keine Zeit gehabt es zu suchen. — Hat der Schneider die Röcke des Knaben gebracht? Er hat keine Zeit gehabt sie zu bringen. — Haben Sie Lust sie zu bringen? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe Lust, aber ich habe keine Zeit sie zu bringen. — Hat der Doctor die Apotheker gesehen? Ja, mein Herr, er hat sie gesehen, und er hat ihnen Ihre Billette gegeben. — Hat der Knabe die Pantoffeln gebracht? Er hat keine Zeit gehabt sie zu bringen, aber das Mädchen hat sie gebracht, und hat sie dem Kellner gegeben. — Wollen Sie die Güte haben, meinen Rock zu suchen? Ich will ihn suchen.

|                        | Gen.   | Pl.  |                      | Gen. | Pl. |
|------------------------|--------|------|----------------------|------|-----|
| der Ring,              | es, s, | e.   | die Brille,          | —    | n.  |
| der Kamm,              | es, s, | " e. | das Federmesser,     | s,   | —   |
| die Bürste,            | —      | n.   | das Rasirmesser,     | s,   | —   |
| die Zahnbürste,        | —      | n.   | die Scheere,         | —    | n.  |
| der Zahnstocher,       | s,     | —    | die Nadel, Nähnadel, | —    | n.  |
| der Tabak,             | s,     | e.   | die Stricknadel,     | —    | n.  |
| die Cigarre,           | —      | n.   | die Stecknadel,      | —    | n.  |
| der Schnupftabak,      | es, s, | —    | die Schnürnadel,     | —    | n.  |
| die Schnupftabaksdose, | —      | n.   | der Degen,           | s,   | —   |
| der Fingerhut,         | es, s, | " e. | die Pfeife,          | —    | n.  |

<sup>1</sup> See possessive adjectives, Section X.

## EXERCISE 8.

— Avez-vous envie de voir le couteau? J'ai envie de le voir.  
 — Avez-vous le temps de chercher les bas? Non, Monsieur, je n'ai pas le temps de les chercher. — Avez-vous envie de donner le couteau du garçon à l'homme? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai envie de le lui donner. — Voulez-vous me donner les gants du maître? Oui, Monsieur, je veux vous les donner. — Voulez-vous voir le médecin? Oui, Monsieur, je veux le voir. — Avez-vous trouvé l'argent du tailleur? Non, Monsieur, je ne l'ai pas trouvé; je n'ai pas eu le temps de le chercher. — Le tailleur a-t-il apporté les habits du garçon? Il n'a pas eu le temps de les apporter. — Avez-vous envie de les apporter? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai envie de les apporter, mais je n'ai pas le temps. — Le médecin a-t-il vu les apothicaires? Oui, Monsieur, il les a vus et il leur a donné vos billets. — Le garçon a-t-il apporté les pantoufles? Il n'a pas eu le temps de les apporter, mais la fille les a apportées et elle les a données au garçon. — Voulez-vous avoir la bonté de chercher mon habit? Je veux le chercher.

la bague.  
 le peigne.  
 la brosse.  
 la brosse à dents.  
 le cure-dent.  
 le tabac.  
 le cigare.  
 le tabac à priser.  
 la tabatière.  
 le dé.

les lunettes, f  
 le canif.  
 le rasoir.  
 les ciseaux, m.  
 une aiguille.  
 une aiguille à tricoter.  
 une épingle.  
 une aiguille à passer.  
 une épée.  
 la pipe.

dere il coltello. — Ha Ella voglia di vedere il coltello? Ho desiderio di vederlo.<sup>1</sup> — Ha Ella tempo di cercare le calze? No, Signore, non ho tempo di cercarle. — Ha Ella desiderio di dare il coltello del ragazzo all' uomo? Sì, Signore, ho voglia di darglielo.<sup>1</sup> — Vuol Ella darmi i guanti del padrone? Sì, Signore, ho desiderio di darglieli.<sup>1</sup> — Vuol Ella vedere il medico? Sì, Signore, ho desiderio di vederlo.<sup>1</sup> — Ha Ella trovato il danaro del sartore? No, Signore, non l'ho trovato; non ho avuto tempo di cercarlo. — Ha portato il sartore i vestiti del ragazzo? Non ha avuto tempo di portarli. — Ha Ella desiderio di portarli? Sì, Signore, ho desiderio, ma non ho tempo di portarli. — Ha veduto gli speciali il medico? Sì, Signore, li ha veduti, e ha dato loro i di Lei biglietti. — Ha portato le pannelle il ragazzo? Non ha avuto tempo di portarle, ma la ragazza le ha portate, ed ella le ha date al cameriere. — Vuol Ella aver la bontà di cercare il mio vestito? Voglio cercarlo.<sup>1</sup>

un anello.  
 il pettine.  
 la setola, spazzola.  
 la setolina da denti.  
 lo stuzzicadenti.  
 il tabacco.  
 il sigarro.  
 il tabacco da naso.  
 la tabacchiera.  
 il ditale.

gli occhiali.  
 il temperino.  
 il rasoio.  
 le forbici.  
 un ago.  
 il ferro da calze.  
 la spilla.  
 il passastringhe.  
 la spada.  
 la pignone.

<sup>1</sup> See Note 4, page 48.

## SECTION IX.—PERSONAL PRONOUNS, IN THE

*Ablative or Ind. Obj.* From { Me, thee, him, her,  
us, you, them.

|                 |              |                    |                  |
|-----------------|--------------|--------------------|------------------|
| Inf.            | Past part.   | Inf.               | Past part.       |
| <b>To send,</b> | <b>sent.</b> | <b>To receive,</b> | <b>received.</b> |

|                 |              |                         |                 |
|-----------------|--------------|-------------------------|-----------------|
| <b>To come,</b> | <b>come.</b> | <b>To carry (take),</b> | <b>carried.</b> |
|-----------------|--------------|-------------------------|-----------------|

|                  |   |                          |
|------------------|---|--------------------------|
| To go<br>To send | { | home.                    |
|                  |   | to my house.             |
|                  |   | to your house.           |
|                  |   | to his house.            |
|                  |   | to her house.            |
|                  |   | to our house.            |
|                  |   | to their house.          |
|                  |   | to the tailor's (house). |
|                  |   | to the hotel.            |

Inf.  
**To go,**

Past part.  
**gone (been).**

*Abl. Von* { Mir, dir, ihm, ihr.  
Uns (Ihnen, or euch), ihnen.

|                    |                   |                    |                   |
|--------------------|-------------------|--------------------|-------------------|
| Inf.               | Past part.        | Inf.               | Past part.        |
| { <b>Senden,</b>   | <b>gesandt.</b>   | { <b>Erhalten,</b> | <b>erhalten.</b>  |
| { <b>Schicken,</b> | <b>geschickt,</b> | { <b>Bekommen,</b> | <b>bekommen.</b>  |
| <b>Kommen,</b>     | <b>gekommen.</b>  | <b>Empfangen,</b>  | <b>empfangen.</b> |
|                    |                   | <b>Tragen,</b>     | <b>getragen.</b>  |

<sup>2</sup> nach Hause

<sup>1</sup> zu mir

zu Ihnen

zu ihm

zu ihr

zu uns

zu ihnen

<sup>1</sup> zu dem Schneider

<sup>2</sup> nach dem Gasthofe

gehen,  
senden, or  
schicken.

Inf.  
**Gehen,**

{ Past part.  
**gegangen**  
**(gewesen).**

## EXERCISE 9.

Have you a mind to buy a ring? Yes, Sir, I have a mind to buy one.—Have you sent the combs to my house? Yes, Sir, I have sent them to your house.—Have you received a letter from the doctor? Yes, Sir, I have received one, and I have sent it to the tailor's house.—Has the tobacconist time to send the tobacco to my house? He has no time to send it to your

Haben Sie Lust einen Ring zu kaufen? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe Lust einen zu kaufen.—Haben Sie die Käämme zu mir gesandt? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe sie zu Ihnen gesandt.—Haben Sie einen Brief von dem Arzte erhalten? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe einen erhalten, und ich habe ihn zu dem Schneider gesandt.—Hat der Tabakshändler Zeit den Tabak zu mir zu schicken? Er hat nicht Zeit ihn zu Ihnen zu schicken.—Hat der Doctor

<sup>1</sup> When the name of the person or a personal pronoun is used, *to*, implying motion, is expressed by *zu*. <sup>2</sup> When the place or residence is referred to, *nach* is used instead of *zu*; as, *nach meinem Hause*. &c. *Nach* always implies motion from one place to another.

<sup>3</sup> In Italian, the pronoun *ne* which accompanies the numeral is joined to the infinitive, having previously cut off the final *e*, and *re* if the verb ends in *vere*; as, *mangiarnene*, to eat some; *condurrene*, to conduct, *condurmi*, to conduct me. See Note 4, page 45.

*Abl. De* { <sup>m.</sup> Moi, toi, lui, d'elle,  
<sup>f.</sup> Nous, vous, d'eux, d'elles.

|                 |                |                  |               |
|-----------------|----------------|------------------|---------------|
| Inf.            | Past part.     | Inf.             | Past part.    |
| <b>Envoyer,</b> | <b>envoyé.</b> | <b>Recevoir,</b> | <b>reçu.</b>  |
| <b>Venir,</b>   | <b>venu.</b>   | <b>Porter,</b>   | <b>porté.</b> |

*Aller*  
*Envoyer* { à la maison.  
chez moi.<sup>4</sup>  
chez vous.  
chez lui.  
chez elle.  
chez nous.  
chez eux, elles.  
chez le tailleur.<sup>4</sup>  
à l'hôtel.

|               |                    |
|---------------|--------------------|
| Inf.          | Past part.         |
| <b>Aller,</b> | <b>allé (été).</b> |

*Abl. Da* { <sup>m.</sup> Me, te, lui *or* esso, lei *or* essa,  
<sup>f.</sup> Noi (Lei *or* voi), loro *or* essi, loro *or* esse.

|                 |                 |                  |                  |
|-----------------|-----------------|------------------|------------------|
| Inf.            | Past part.      | Inf.             | Past part.       |
| <b>Mandare,</b> | <b>mandato.</b> | <b>Ricevere,</b> | <b>ricevuto.</b> |
| <b>Inviare,</b> | <b>inviato.</b> | <b>Portare,</b>  | <b>portato.</b>  |
| <b>Venire,</b>  | <b>venuto.</b>  |                  |                  |

*Andare,*  
*Mandare, or*  
*Inviare* { a casa.  
a casa mia, da me.<sup>5</sup> [voi.<sup>5</sup>  
a casa vostra, sua, di Lei; *or* da Lei,  
a casa sua, da lui.<sup>5</sup>  
a casa sua, da lei.<sup>5</sup>  
a casa nostra, da noi.<sup>5</sup>  
a casa loro, da loro.<sup>5</sup>  
a casa del sartore, dal<sup>5</sup> sartore.  
all' albergo.

|                |                        |
|----------------|------------------------|
| Inf.           | Past part.             |
| <b>Andare,</b> | <b>andato (stato).</b> |

EXERCISE 9.

Avez-vous envie d'acheter une bague? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai envie d'en acheter une. — Avez-vous envoyé les peignes chez moi? Oui, Monsieur, je les ai envoyés chez vous.<sup>4</sup> — Avez-vous reçu une lettre du médecin? Oui, Monsieur, j'en ai reçu une et je l'ai envoyée chez le tailleur.<sup>4</sup> — Le marchand de tabac a-t-il le temps d'envoyer le tabac chez moi? Il n'a pas le temps

Ha Ella desiderio di comprare un anello? Sì, Signore, no desiderio di comprarne<sup>5</sup> uno. — Ha Ella mandato i pettini a casa mia? Sì, Signore, li ho mandati a casa di Lei. — Ha Ella ricevuto una lettera dal medico? Sì, Signore, ne ho ricevuto una e l' ho mandata a casa del sartore. — Ha il mercante di tabacco tempo di mandare il tabacco a casa mia? Non ha

<sup>4</sup> *Chez* is never used with nouns indicating places; it is always combined with a pronoun or a noun representing a person; as, *Mon frère est chez Monsieur* 8—, or *chez le tailleur*. Never say *chez Paris*, *chez l'hôtel*, *chez la maison*.

<sup>5</sup> In Italian do not say *io da me*, *voi andate da voi*, *egli va da lui*, &c., but *io va a casa*, *Ella va a casa*, &c. *Dal*, like *chez*, is never used with the name of a place.



## EXERCISE 9.

house. — Has the doctor sent the letter to their house? No, Sir, he has not sent it to their house, but the boy has taken it to your house. — Has the boy time to go to my house? Yes, Ma'am, he has time to go to your house. — Has he time to take my coat to the tailor's? He has no time to take it to the tailor's. — Has the doctor a mind to go to their house? Yes, Sir, he has a mind, but he has no time to go to their house. — Have we received the newspaper? Yes, Sir, we have, received it, and<sup>1</sup> (we have) sent it to the post. — Have you sent the tobacco and the cigars to the hotel? No, Sir, we have not sent them to the hotel, but the waiter has taken them to your house. — Have you seen the doctor's passport? Yes, Sir, I have seen it, and I have taken it to the surgeon's. — Has the servant found the pins? She has looked for them, but she has not found them. — Have they looked for the umbrellas? Yes, Sir, they have looked for them, and<sup>1</sup> (they have) sent them to their house. — Will you send the banker's umbrella to my house? Yes, Sir, I will send it to your house. — Will you go home? I will not go home, I have a mind to go to their house. — Will they send home the doctor's swords and penknives? No, Sir,

*they will not send them home.*

ihnen den Brief gesandt? Nein, mein Herr, er hat ihn ihnen nicht gesandt, aber der Knabe hat ihn zu Ihnen getragen. — Hat der Knabe Zeit nach meinem Hause zu gehen? Ja, Madame, er hat Zeit nach Ihrem Hause zu gehen. — Hat er Zeit meinen Rock zu dem Schneider zu tragen? Er hat nicht Zeit ihn zu dem Schneider zu tragen. — Hat der Doctor Lust zu ihnen zu gehen? Ja, mein Herr, er hat Lust zu ihnen zu gehen, aber nicht Zeit. — Haben wir die Zeitung erhalten? Ja, mein Herr, wir<sup>1</sup> haben sie erhalten, und<sup>1</sup> haben sie auf die Post geschickt. — Haben Sie den Tabak und die Cigarren nach dem Gasthofe gesandt? Nein, mein Herr, wir haben sie nicht nach dem Gasthofe gesandt, aber der Kellner hat sie nach Ihrem Hause getragen. — Haben Sie den Pasß des Doctors gesehen? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe ihn gesehen, und habe ihn zu dem Wundarzt getragen. — Hat die Magd die Stecknadeln gefunden? Sie hat sie gesucht, aber sie hat sie nicht gefunden. — Haben sie die Regenschirme gesucht? Ja, mein Herr, sie<sup>1</sup> haben sie gesucht, und<sup>1</sup> haben sie zu ihnen geschickt. — Wollen Sie den Regenschirm des Geldwechslers zu mir schicken? Ja, mein Herr, ich will ihn zu Ihnen schicken. — Wollen Sie nach Hause gehen? Ich will nicht nach Hause gehen; ich habe Lust zu ihnen zu gehen. — Wollen sie die Degen und die Federmesser des Doctors zu ihm schicken? Nein, mein Herr, sie wollen sie nicht nach (seinem) Hause schicken.

<sup>1</sup> In English an ellipsis of the pronoun and auxiliary verb is often made. In German a noun or pronoun may be the nominative case to several verbs. See *and*, page 102.

EXERCISE 9.

de l'envoyer chez vous. — Le médecin a-t-il envoyé la lettre  
chez eux? Non, Monsieur, il ne l'a pas envoyée chez eux, mais  
le garçon l'a portée chez vous. — Le garçon a-t-il le temps  
d'aller chez moi? Oui, Madame, il a le temps d'aller chez vous.  
— A-t-il le temps de porter mon habit chez le tailleur? Il  
n'a pas le temps de le porter chez le tailleur. — Le médecin  
a-t-il envie d'aller chez eux? Oui, Monsieur, il a envie, mais il  
n'a pas le temps d'aller chez eux. — Avons-nous reçu la ga-  
zette? Oui, Monsieur, nous l'avons reçue et nous l'avons en-  
voyée à la poste. — Avez-vous envoyé le tabac et les cigares à  
l'hôtel? Non, Monsieur, nous ne les avons pas envoyés à l'hô-  
tel, mais le garçon les a portés chez vous. — Avez-vous vu le  
passe-port du médecin? Oui, Monsieur, je l'ai vu et je l'ai  
porté chez le chirurgien. — La domestique a-t-elle trouvé les  
épingles? Elle les a cherchées, mais elle ne les a pas trouvées.  
— Ont-ils cherché les parapluies? Oui, Monsieur, ils les ont  
cherchés et ils les ont envoyés chez eux. — Voulez-vous en-  
voyer le parapluie du banquier chez moi? Oui, Monsieur, je  
veux l'envoyer chez vous. — Voulez-vous aller chez vous?  
Je ne veux pas aller chez moi; j'ai envie d'aller chez eux. —  
Veulent-ils envoyer les épées et les canifs du médecin chez lui?  
Non, Monsieur, ils ne veulent pas les envoyer chez lui.

tempo di mandarlo a casa di Lei (*or da Lei*). — Ha mandato il  
medico la lettera a casa loro? No, Signore, egli non l'ha man-  
data a casa loro, ma il ragazzo l'ha portata a casa di Lei. —  
Ha il ragazzo tempo di andare a casa mia? Sì, Signora, egli  
ha tempo di andare a casa di Lei (*or da Lei*). — Ha egli tempo  
di portare il mio vestito a casa del sartore? Egli non ha tempo  
di portarlo a casa del sartore. — Ha il medico desiderio d'  
andare a casa loro (*or da loro*)? Sì, Signore, ha desiderio, ma  
non ha tempo di andare da loro. — Abbiamo (noi) ricevuta  
la gazzetta? Sì, Signore, (noi) l'abbiamo ricevuta e l'abbiamo  
mandata alla posta. — Ha Ella (*or avete*) inviato il tabacco ed  
i sigarri all' albergo? No, Signore, non li abbiamo mandati all'  
albergo, ma il cameriere li ha portati a casa di Lei. — Ha Ella  
veduto il passaporto del medico? Sì, Signore, l'ho veduto e  
l'ho portato a casa del chirurgo. — Ha trovato le spille la ca-  
meriera? Ella le ha cercate, ma non le ha trovate. — Hanno  
(eglino) cercato gli ombrelli? Sì, Signore, li hanno cercati e  
li hanno mandati a casa loro. — Vuol Ella mandare a casa  
mia l' ombrello del banchiere? Sì, Signore, voglio mandarlo  
da Lei. — Vuol Ella andare a casa? Non voglio andare a  
casa<sup>2</sup>, ho desiderio di andare a casa loro. — Vogliono (eglino)  
mandare a casa le spade ed i temperini del medico? No, Si-  
gnore, non hanno voglia di mandarli a casa sua (*or di lui*).

<sup>2</sup> See Note 5, page 49.

## SECTION X.—POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

|                          |                   |
|--------------------------|-------------------|
| <i>Nom.</i>              | <i>My.</i>        |
| <i>Gen. or Poss.</i>     | Of my, or my —'s. |
| <i>Dat. or Ind. Obj.</i> | To my, or my.     |
| <i>Acc. or Dir. Obj.</i> | My.               |
| <i>Abl. or Ind. Obj.</i> | From, by my.      |

In the same manner are varied and declined :—

|                  |                             |  |
|------------------|-----------------------------|--|
|                  | <i>Thy.</i>                 |  |
|                  | <i>His.</i>                 |  |
|                  | <i>Her.</i>                 |  |
|                  | <i>Its.</i>                 |  |
|                  | <i>Our.</i>                 |  |
|                  | <i>Your.</i>                |  |
|                  | <i>Your.</i>                |  |
|                  | <i>Their.</i>               |  |
| The grandfather. | the grandmother.            |  |
| The father.      | the mother.                 |  |
| The son.         | the daughter.               |  |
| The brother.     | the sister.                 |  |
| The uncle.       | the aunt.                   |  |
| The nephew.      | the niece.                  |  |
| The cousin.      | the cousin ( <i>fem.</i> ). |  |

|             | <i>m.</i>              | <i>f.</i> | <i>n.</i>              | <i>pl. m. f. n.</i> |
|-------------|------------------------|-----------|------------------------|---------------------|
| <i>Nom.</i> | Mein-er <sup>1</sup> , | meine,    | mein-es <sup>1</sup> , | meine.              |
| <i>Gen.</i> | Meines,                | meiner,   | meines,                | meiner.             |
| <i>Dat.</i> | Meinem,                | meiner,   | meinem,                | meinen.             |
| <i>Acc.</i> | Meinen,                | meine,    | mein-es <sup>1</sup> , | meine.              |
| <i>Abl.</i> | Von meinem,            | meiner,   | meinem,                | meinen.             |

In the same manner are varied and declined :—

|                             | <i>m.</i>            | <i>f.</i>  | <i>n.</i>         | <i>pl. m. f. n.</i>    |
|-----------------------------|----------------------|------------|-------------------|------------------------|
|                             | Dein <sup>1</sup> ,  | deine,     | dein,             | deine.                 |
|                             | Sein,                | seine,     | sein,             | seine.                 |
|                             | Ihr,                 | ihre,      | ihr,              | ihre.                  |
|                             | Sein,                | seine,     | sein,             | seine.                 |
|                             | Unser <sup>2</sup> , | unsere,    | unser,            | unsere.                |
|                             | Euer <sup>2</sup> ,  | euere,     | euer,             | euere.                 |
|                             | Ihr,                 | Ihre,      | Ihr,              | Ihre.                  |
|                             | Ihr,                 | ihre,      | ihr,              | ihre.                  |
|                             | <i>Gen.</i>          | <i>Pl.</i> |                   | <i>Gen.</i> <i>Pl.</i> |
| der Großvater,              | s,                   | —          | die Großmutter,   | —                      |
| der Vater,                  | s,                   | —          | die Mutter,       | —                      |
| der Sohn,                   | es, s,               | e.         | die Tochter,      | —                      |
| der Bruder,                 | s,                   | —          | die Schwester,    | n.                     |
| der Oheim, es, s, e; Onkel, | s,                   | —          | die Tante, Muhme, | n.                     |
| der Neffe,                  | n,                   | n.         | die Nichte,       | n.                     |
| der Vetter,                 | s,                   | n.         | { die Base,       | n.                     |
|                             |                      |            | { die Cousine,    | n.                     |

## EXERCISE 10.

Have you seen my father? I have not seen him, but I have looked for him. — Have you found him? I have not found him. — Have you seen my father's coat? I have not seen it.

Haben Sie meinen Vater gesehen? Ich habe ihn nicht gesehen, aber ich habe ihn gesucht. — Haben Sie ihn gefunden? Ich habe ihn nicht gefunden. — Haben Sie den Rock meines Vaters gesehen? Ich habe ihn nicht gesehen. — Haben Sie

<sup>1</sup> When these possessive adjectives are used as possessive pronouns, they take *er* in the nominative masculine, and *es* in the nominative and accusative neuter.  
<sup>2</sup> When *r* occurs between two *s*'s, one of them is often omitted for the sake of sound; as, *unsers*, *unseres*, *unsere*, *eures*, *euers*, *euere*, *unsern*, *euren*, for *unserses*, *eureses*, *unseren*, &c.

# SECTION X.—POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

53

|             | m.      | f.     | pl. m. f. |
|-------------|---------|--------|-----------|
| <i>Nom.</i> | Mon,    | ma,    | mes.      |
| <i>Gen.</i> | De mon, | de ma, | de mes.   |
| <i>Dat.</i> | À mon,  | à ma,  | à mes.    |
| <i>Acc.</i> | Mon,    | ma,    | mes.      |
| <i>Abl.</i> | De mon, | de ma, | de mes.   |

In the same manner are varied and declined :—

|                          | m.     | f.                        | pl. m. f.                                                                                                                    |
|--------------------------|--------|---------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Ton,                     | ta,    | tes.                      | <div> <div>Mon, ton, son, are used instead of ma, ta, sa, before fem. nouns beginning with a vowel or silent h.</div> </div> |
| Son,                     | sa,    | ses.                      |                                                                                                                              |
| Notre,                   | notre, | nos.                      |                                                                                                                              |
| Votre,                   | votre, | vos.                      |                                                                                                                              |
| Votre,                   | votre, | vos.                      |                                                                                                                              |
| Leur,                    | leur,  | leurs.                    |                                                                                                                              |
| le grand-père, or aïeul. |        | la grand'mère, or aïeule. |                                                                                                                              |
| le père.                 |        | la mère.                  |                                                                                                                              |
| le fils.                 |        | la fille.                 |                                                                                                                              |
| le frère.                |        | la sœur.                  |                                                                                                                              |
| l'oncle.                 |        | la tante.                 |                                                                                                                              |
| le neveu.                |        | la nièce.                 |                                                                                                                              |
| le cousin.               |        | la cousine.               |                                                                                                                              |

|             | m.       | f.         | pl. m.    | pl. f.     |
|-------------|----------|------------|-----------|------------|
| <i>Nom.</i> | Il mio,  | la mia,    | i miei,   | le mie.    |
| <i>Gen.</i> | Del mio, | della mia, | dei miei, | delle mie. |
| <i>Dat.</i> | Al mio,  | alla mia,  | ai miei,  | alle mie.  |
| <i>Acc.</i> | Il mio,  | la mia,    | i miei,   | le mie.    |
| <i>Abl.</i> | Dal mio, | dalla mia, | dai miei, | dalle mie. |

In the same manner are varied and declined :—

|                          | m.         | f.                       | pl. m.     | pl. f. |
|--------------------------|------------|--------------------------|------------|--------|
| Il tuo,                  | la tua,    | i tuoi,                  | le tue.    |        |
| Il suo,                  | la sua,    | i suoi,                  | le sue.    |        |
| Il nostro,               | la nostra, | i nostri,                | le nostre. |        |
| Il vostro,               | la vostra, | i vostri,                | le vostre. |        |
| Il di Lei,               | la di Lei, | i di Lei,                | le di Lei. |        |
| Il loro,                 | la loro,   | i loro,                  | le loro.   |        |
| il nonno, or avo.        |            | la nonna, or ava.        |            |        |
| il padre.                |            | la madre.                |            |        |
| il figlio, or figliuolo. |            | la figlia, or figliuola. |            |        |
| il fratello.             |            | la sorella.              |            |        |
| lo zio.                  |            | la zia.                  |            |        |
| il nipote.               |            | la nipote.               |            |        |
| il cugino.               |            | la cugina.               |            |        |

## EXERCISE 10.

Avez-vous vu mon père? Je ne l'ai pas vu, mais je l'ai  
cherché. — L'avez-vous trouvé? Je ne l'ai pas trouvé. —  
Avez-vous vu l'habit de mon père? Je ne l'ai pas vu. —

Ha Ella veduto<sup>3</sup> mio padre? Non, l' ho veduto, ma (io) l' ho  
cercato. — L' ha Ella trovato? Non l' ho trovato. — Ha  
Ella (or avete) veduto l' abito di mio padre? Non l' ho veduto.

<sup>3</sup> The definite article which accompanies the possessive adjective in Italian is omitted when it is joined to a noun denoting relationship or dignity. The prepositions *di, a, da*, are used instead of *del, al, dal*. &c. When any of these nouns are placed first, as *il fratello mio*, or in the plural, or accompanied by an adjective, as *il mio caro padre*, the article is used. The article is always expressed before diminutives, as *il fratellino*, and also before *loro*.

## SECTION X.—POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

## EXERCISE 10.

— Have you lent my table to the man? I have lent him your table and napkins. — Have you given our grandfather's shoes to the boy? I have given him our grandfather's shoes and my brother's stockings. — Have I seen your niece? No, Sir, you have not seen my niece, but you have seen my daughter. — Has my son lost the money? He has not lost the money, but he has lost my uncle's knife. — Has he found it? Yes, Sir, he has found it. — Has your nephew sold the cab? He has sold the cab and the stage-coach. — Has your mother given my sister the stockings? She has not given your sister the stockings. — Have you seen my aunt? I have not seen your aunt, but I have seen your cousin. — Has your niece found my gloves? She has found your gloves and cravat. — Has the waiter taken away my son's plate? He has not taken away your son's plate, but he has taken away my spoon. — Has your brother seen *his*<sup>1</sup> sister? No, Sir, my brother has not seen *his* sister. — Has your sister seen *her*<sup>1</sup> brother? Yes, Sir, my sister has seen *her* brother.

The husband.  
The father-in-law.  
The son-in-law.  
The brother-in-law.  
The friend.

the wife.  
the mother-in-law.  
the daughter-in-law.  
the sister-in-law.  
the stranger.

<sup>1</sup> the gender of the possessor.  
spoken of.

dem Manne meinen Tisch geliehen? Ich habe ihm Ihren Tisch und Ihre Servietten geliehen. — Haben Sie dem Knaben die Schuhe unseres Großvaters gegeben? Ich habe ihm die Schuhe unseres Großvaters und die Strümpfe meines Bruders gegeben. — Habe ich Ihre Nichte gesehen? Nein, mein Herr, Sie haben meine Nichte nicht gesehen, aber Sie haben meine Tochter gesehen. — Hat mein Sohn das Geld verloren? Er hat nicht das Geld, sondern das Messer meines Oheimes verloren. — Hat er es gefunden? Ja, mein Herr, er hat es gefunden. — Hat Ihr Neffe die Miethkutsche verkauft? Er hat die Miethkutsche und den Eilwagen verkauft. — Hat Ihre Mutter meiner Schwester die Strümpfe gegeben? Sie hat Ihrer Schwester die Strümpfe nicht gegeben. — Haben Sie meine Tante gesehen? Ich habe Ihre Tante nicht gesehen, aber ich habe Ihre Base gesehen. — Hat Ihre Nichte meine Handschuhe gefunden? Sie hat Ihre Handschuhe und Ihre Halsbinde gefunden. — Hat der Kellner den Teller meines Sohnes weggenommen? Er hat den Teller Ihres Sohnes nicht weggenommen, aber er hat meinen Löffel weggenommen. — Hat Ihr Bruder *seine*<sup>2</sup> Schwester gesehen? Nein, mein Herr, mein Bruder hat *seine* Schwester nicht gesehen. — Hat Ihre Schwester *ihren*<sup>2</sup> Bruder gesehen? Ja, mein Herr, meine Schwester hat *ihren* Bruder gesehen.

|                           | Gen.         | Pl.                     |      | Gen. | Pl. |
|---------------------------|--------------|-------------------------|------|------|-----|
| der Gemahl, s, e;         | Gatte, n, n. | die Ehefrau, Gattin, —  | nen. |      |     |
| der Schwiegervater, s,    | —            | die Schwiegermutter, —  | —    |      |     |
| der Schwiegersohn, es, s, | e.           | die Schwiegertochter, — | —    |      |     |
| der Schwager, s,          | —            | die Schwägerin, —       | nen. |      |     |
| der Freund, es, s,        | e.           | der Fremde, n,          | n.   |      |     |

<sup>2</sup> In German the possessive adjectives agree with the object possessed. *Ihr*

## SECTION X.—POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

55

## EXERCISE 10.

Avez-vous prêté ma table à l'homme? Je lui ai prêté votre table et vos serviettes. — Avez-vous donné les souliers de notre grand-père au garçon? Je lui ai donné les souliers de notre grand-père et les bas de mon frère. — Ai-je vu votre nièce? Non, Monsieur, vous n'avez pas vu ma nièce, mais vous avez vu ma fille. — Mon fils a-t-il perdu l'argent? Il n'a pas perdu l'argent, mais il a perdu le couteau de mon oncle. — L'a-t-il trouvé? Oui, Monsieur, il l'a trouvé. — Votre neveu a-t-il vendu le cabriolet? Il a vendu le cabriolet et la diligence. — Votre mère a-t-elle donné les bas à ma sœur? Elle n'a pas donné les bas à votre sœur. — Avez-vous vu ma tante? Je n'ai pas vu votre tante, mais j'ai vu votre cousine. — Votre nièce a-t-elle trouvé mes gants? Elle a trouvé vos gants et votre cravate. — Le garçon a-t-il emporté l'assiette de mon fils? Il n'a pas emporté l'assiette de votre fils, mais il a emporté ma cuillère. — Votre frère a-t-il vu sa sœur? Non, Monsieur, mon frère n'a pas vu sa sœur. — Votre sœur a-t-elle vu son frère? Oui, Monsieur, ma sœur a vu son frère.

l'époux, mari.  
le beau-père.  
le beau-fils.  
le beau-frère.  
l' (un) ami.

l'épouse, femme.  
la belle-mère.  
la belle-fille.  
la belle-sœur.  
l' (un) étranger.

— Ha Ella prestato la mia tavola all' uomo? (Io) gli ho prestato la di Lei tavola e le di Lei salviette. — Ha Ella dato le scarpe di nostro nonno al ragazzo? Gli ho dato le scarpe di nostro nonno e le calze di mio fratello. — Ho io veduto la di Lei nipote? No, Signore, Ella non ha veduto mia nipote, ma Ella ha veduto mia figliuola. — Ha mio figlio perduto il danaro? Non ha perduto il danaro, ma egli ha perduto il coltello di mio zio. — L' ha egli trovato? Sì, Signore, l' ha trovato. — Ha il di Lei nipote venduto il calessino? Egli ha venduto il calessino e la diligenza. — Ha la di Lei madre dato le calze a mia sorella? Ella non ha dato le calze alla di Lei sorella. — Ha Ella veduto mia zia? Non ho veduto la di Lei zia, ma ho veduto la di Lei cugina. — Ha trovato i miei guanti la di Lei nipote? Ha trovato i di Lei guanti e la di Lei cravatta. — Ha il cameriere portato via il tondo di mio figlio? Egli non ha portato via il tondo del di Lei figlio, ma ha portato via il mio cucchiaino. — Ha il di Lei fratello veduto sua sorella? No, Signore, mio fratello non ha veduto sua sorella. — Ha la di Lei sorella veduto suo fratello? Sì, Signore, mia sorella ha veduto suo fratello.

lo sposo, marito.  
il suocero.  
il genero.  
il cognato.  
l' (un) amico.

la sposa, moglie.  
la suocera.  
la nuora.  
la cognata.  
il forestiere.

<sup>3</sup> In French and Italian the possessive adjectives always agree with the object possessed or spoken of, and not with the possessor.

In English adjectives are invariable, and remain the same in all cases, numbers and genders, being declined with the prepositions *of*, *to*, *by*, *from*, with the definite or indefinite article.

| Latn.  |            |                                    | Latin.  |
|--------|------------|------------------------------------|---------|
| BONUS, | Nom.       | The good boy is beloved.           | PUEB.   |
| BONI,  | Gen.       | That is the conduct of a good boy. | PUEB.   |
| BONO,  | Dat. I. O. | That belongs to a good boy.        | PUEBO.  |
| BONUM, | Acc. D. O. | I will reward the good boy.        | PUEBUM. |
| BONO,  | Ab. I. O.  | That was done by a good boy.       | PUEBO.  |

In *English*, as in German, adjectives are placed before the nouns they qualify.

In *French* some adjectives are placed before and others after the noun they qualify.

Before the noun are placed adjectives of fewer syllables than the noun they qualify; as, *Une juste récompense*, a just reward.

Before the noun are placed pronominal, numerical, and the following adjectives: *Ancien*, *beau*, *bon*, *brave*, *cher*, *chétif*, *digne*, *grand*, *gros*, *jeune*, *joli*, *long*, *mauvais*, *méchant*, *meilleur*, *moindre*, *petit*, *saint*, *vieux*, *vilain*, *vrai*; but adjectives of number joined to proper names, pronouns and nouns, used as quotations, follow the noun; as, *Dix livres*, ten pounds; *Charles Dix*, Charles the Tenth.

After the noun are placed adjectives having more syllables than the noun they qualify; as, *Une loi sévère*, a severe law.

After the noun are placed adjectives derived from participles; as, *Un livre intéressant*, an interesting book; *un homme intéressé*, an interested man.

are generally placed adjectives denoting colour, arrangement, a species or nation,

In German adjectives have four different forms:—

1. The adjective is adverbial or undeclined when it stands as a predicate; as, *Der Hut ist gut*.

2. When standing before a noun without the article; as,

|                                                 |          | m.   | f.   | n.   | pl. m. f. n. |
|-------------------------------------------------|----------|------|------|------|--------------|
| guter Wein, it takes the adjoining inflections. | Nom.     | —er, | —e,  | —es, | —e.          |
|                                                 | Gen.     | —es, | —er, | —es, | —er.         |
|                                                 | Dat.     | —em, | —er, | —em, | —en.         |
|                                                 | Acc.     | —en, | —e,  | —es, | —e.          |
|                                                 | Abl. Von | —em, | —er, | —em, | —en.         |

3. It takes the adjoining terminations when preceded by

|                                                                                                                                                                           |          | m.   | f.   | n.   | pl. m. f. n. |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------|------|------|------|--------------|
| <i>der, dieser, derselbe, derjenige, jener, jedweder, jeglicher, mancher, solcher, welcher, aller, einiger, ellicher, vieler, anderer, mehrer, verschiedene, weniger.</i> | Nom.     | —e,  | —e,  | —e,  | —en.         |
|                                                                                                                                                                           | Gen.     | —en, | —en, | —en, | —en.         |
|                                                                                                                                                                           | Dat.     | —en, | —en, | —en, | —en.         |
|                                                                                                                                                                           | Acc.     | —en, | —e,  | —e,  | —en.         |
|                                                                                                                                                                           | Abl. Von | —en, | —en, | —en, | —en.         |

4. It takes the following terminations when preceded by

|                                                                               |          | m.   | f.   | n.   | pl. m. f. n. |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------|------|------|------|--------------|
| <i>ein, kein, mein, dein, sein, ihr (her), unser, Ihr, euer, ihr (their).</i> | Nom.     | —er, | —e,  | —es, | —en.         |
|                                                                               | Gen.     | —en, | —en, | —en, | —en.         |
|                                                                               | Dat.     | —en, | —en, | —en, | —en.         |
|                                                                               | Acc.     | —en, | —e,  | —es, | —en.         |
|                                                                               | Abl. Von | —en, | —en, | —e,  | —en.         |

In German adjectives are placed before the nouns they qualify.

In French adjectives are variable, and always agree in gender and number with the noun or pronoun they qualify; they are declined by means of the definite article or the prepositions *de*, *à*, with the indefinite article, but they are not inflected.

Add *e* mute to form the feminine; as, *Content*, *contente*; *sensé*, *sensée*; *vrai*,  *vraie*.

Those ending in *er* require the grave accent ('); as, *Altier*, *altière*.

Those ending in *a* require the diæresis (") over the *e* fem.; as, *Aigu*, *aiguë*.

Those ending in *e* mute are alike in both genders; as, *Aimable*, *aimable*.

Those in *f* change into *ve*; as, *Actif*, *active*; those in *x* change into *se*; as, *Heureux*, *heureuse*.

Those ending in *el*, *eil*, *il*, *ul*, *ien*, *éen*, *on*, *ot*, *et*, *s*, double the final consonant and take *e* mute; as, *Mortel*, *mortelle*; *bon*, *bonne*; *gros*, *grosse*; but *concret*, *complet*, *discret*, *inquiet*, *prêt*, *replet*, *secret*, *suret*, *dérot*, *idiot*, make *concrète*, *complète*, *discrète*, *inquiète*, *prête*, *replète*, *secrète*, *surète*, *dévôte*, *idiote*.

*Beau*, *nouveau*, *fou*, *mou*, *vieux* have a double masculine in *bel*, *nouvel*, *fol*, *mol*, *vieil*, before a vowel or silent *h*. Their feminine is *belle*, *nouvelle*, *folle*, *molle*, *vieille*.

Those in *eur*, derived from a participle, make *euse*; as, *Chanteur*, *chanteuse*; others, in *ier*, generally make *rice*. See *Gender of Nouns*, Sec. III.

*Antérieur*, *citéricur*, *extérieur*, *intérieur*, *inférieur*, *meilleur*, *mineur*, *ma-*

*jeur*, *postérieur*, *supérieur*, *ultérieur*, only take *e* mute; as, *Meilleur*, *meilleure*.

## IRREGULAR.

|                   |                 |                       |                    |
|-------------------|-----------------|-----------------------|--------------------|
| Blanc, blanche,   | caduc, caduque, | roux, rousse,         | Jumeau, jumelle,   |
| franc, franche,   | turc, turque,   | doux, douce,          | préfix, préfixe,   |
| frail, fraîche,   | long, longue,   | tiers, tierce,        | absous, absoute,   |
| sec, sèche,       | bénin, bénigne, | tors, torse or torte, | dissous, dissoute. |
| grec, grecque,    | malin, maligne, | col, colte,           |                    |
| public, publique, | faux, fausse,   | favori, favorite,     |                    |

The plural of adjectives is formed according to the rules given (Section V.) for the plural of nouns.

By adding *s* to the mas. and fem. sing., by leaving *s* and *x* unchanged, by changing *al* into *aux*, except: *Amical*, *austral*, *bortal*, *doctoral*, *ducal*, *fatal*, *glacial*, *initial*, *jovial*, *labial*, *nasal*, *natal*, *naval*, *matinal*, *pascal*, *théâ-*  
*tral*, which take *s*, but are seldom used in the mas. plur., although commonly used in the fem. plural.

In Italian adjectives are variable, and agree in gender and number with the noun or pronoun they qualify; they are not inflected, but declined with the definite article or the prepositions *di*, *a*, *da*, and the indefinite article.

The mas. termination, *o*, makes *a* in the fem.; as,

*Un ragazzo contento*; *una ragazza contenta*.

The termination *e* is common to both genders; as,

*Un uomo prudente*; *una donna prudente*.

The plural of adjectives is formed according to the rules given for the plural of nouns.

*o* is changed into *i*; as, *Contento*, *contenti*.

*a* " *e*; as, *Contenta*, *contente*.

*e* " *i*; as, *Prudente*, *prudenti*.

The adjectives *pari*, *impari*, *dispari*, the only ones in *i*, are of both genders and numbers; as, *pari età*, the same age; *pari studio*, equal study; *pari esempi*, the same examples.

*Uno*, *buono*, *bello*, *grande*, *santo*, *quello*, change into *un*, *buon*, *bel*, *gran*, *sant*, *quel*, before nouns mas. beginning with a consonant, but never before *s* followed by another consonant. *Bell*, *grand*, *sant*, *quell* are used before nouns beginning with a vowel.

In Italian adjectives may in general be placed before or after the nouns they qualify.

Before the noun are placed adjectives of one syllable.

After the noun are placed adjectives of three or more syllables.

After the noun are placed adjectives derived from participles, those denoting form, colour, taste, infirmity, adjectives expressive of a nation and physical qualities, and those particularising the feelings or the weather.



## SECTION XI.—DECLENSION AND GENDER OF ADJECTIVES.

*Acc. or Dir. Obj.* { The good boy, a good boy.  
The good woman, a good woman.  
The good knife, a good knife.

PLURAL.

*Acc. or Dir. Obj.* <sup>m.</sup> The good boys, <sup>f.</sup> women, <sup>n.</sup> knives.

|                        |              |                           |
|------------------------|--------------|---------------------------|
| <b>Good,</b>           | <b>Bad,</b>  | <b>Large, great, big.</b> |
| <b>Fine, handsome,</b> | <b>Ugly,</b> | <b>Small, little.</b>     |
| <b>Pretty,</b>         | <b>Old,</b>  | <b>Young.</b>             |

*Acc. The silk waistcoat, the silk stocking.*  
*Acc. The silk waistcoats, the silk stockings.*

|              |                    |
|--------------|--------------------|
| The cloth.   | the worsted, wool. |
| The linen.   | the silk.          |
| The cotton.  | the velvet.        |
| The thread.  | the satin.         |
| The muslin.  | the crape.         |
| The cambric. | the ribbon.        |
| The flannel. | the colour.        |

Infinitive.  
**To write,**  
**To read,**

Past part.  
**written.**  
**read.**

*Acc. D. O.* { Den guten Knaben, einen guten Knaben.  
Die gute Frau, eine gute Frau.  
Das gute<sup>1</sup> Messer, ein gutes<sup>1</sup> Messer.

PLURAL.

*Acc. or Dir. Obj.* <sup>m.</sup> Die guten Knaben, <sup>f.</sup> Frauen, <sup>n.</sup> Messer.

|                       |                  |               |
|-----------------------|------------------|---------------|
| <b>Gut,</b>           | <b>Schlecht,</b> | <b>Grosz.</b> |
| <b>Schön,</b>         | <b>Häßlich,</b>  | <b>Klein.</b> |
| <b>Nütsch, artig,</b> | <b>Alt,</b>      | <b>Jung.</b>  |

*Acc. die seidene Weste, den seidenen Strumpf.*  
*Acc. die seidenen Westen, die seidenen Strümpfe.*

|                |        |      |             |        |      |
|----------------|--------|------|-------------|--------|------|
|                | Gen.   | Pl.  |             | Gen.   | Pl.  |
| das Tuch,      | es, s, | "er. | die Wolle,  | —      | —    |
| die Leinwand,  | —      | —    | die Seide,  | —      | n.   |
| die Baumwolle, | —      | —    | der Sammet, | s.     | —    |
| der Zwirn,     | es, s, | e.   | der Atlas,  | esses, | e.   |
| der Musselin,  | s.     | —    | der Flor,   | es, s, | "e.  |
| der Batist,    | es,    | e.   | das Band,   | es, s, | "er. |
| der Flanel,    | s,     | —    | die Farbe,  | —      | n.   |

Infinitive.  
**Schreiben,**  
**Lesen,**

Past part.  
**geschrieben.**  
**gelesen.**

## EXERCISE 11.

Have you sent my father's coat to the tailor's? Yes, Sir, I have sent it to his house. — Has the tailor sent a good coat? Yes, Sir, he has sent a good one. — Have you seen my silk waistcoat? I have not seen it. — Have you seen my mother? — but I have not seen your mother. — the doctor's (house)? He

Haben Sie den Rock meines Vaters zu dem Schneider geschickt? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe ihn zu ihm geschickt. — Hat der Schneider einen guten Rock geschickt? Ja, mein Herr, er hat einen guten geschickt. — Haben Sie meine seidene Weste gesehen? Ich habe sie nicht gesehen. — Haben Sie meine Mutter gesehen? Ich habe ihre Schwester gesehen, aber nicht Ihre Mutter. — Hat der Knabe das Billet meiner Tochter

<sup>1</sup> of the German adjective when preceded by the definite or indefinite

## SECTION XI.—DECLENSION AND GENDER OF ADJECTIVES.

59

*Acc. or D. Obj.* { Le bon garçon, un bon garçon.  
La bonne femme, une bonne femme.  
Le bon couteau, un bon couteau.

## PLURAL.

*Acc. or Dir. Obj.* { *m.* Les bons garçons, couteaux.  
*f.* Les bonnes femmes.

|              |                 |                     |
|--------------|-----------------|---------------------|
| <b>Bon,</b>  | <b>Mauvais,</b> | <b>Grand, gros.</b> |
| <b>Beau,</b> | <b>Vilain,</b>  | <b>Petit.</b>       |
| <b>Joli,</b> | <b>Vieux,</b>   | <b>Jeune.</b>       |

*Acc. Le gilet de soie* <sup>3</sup>, *le bas de soie.*  
*Acc. Les gilets de soie,* *les bas de soie.*

|                |             |
|----------------|-------------|
| le drap.       | la laine.   |
| le linge.      | la soie.    |
| le coton.      | le velours. |
| le fil.        | le satin.   |
| la mousseline. | le crêpe.   |
| la batiste.    | le ruban.   |
| la flanelle.   | la couleur. |

*Infinitive.*  
**Écrire,**  
**Lire,**

*Past part.*  
**écrit.**  
**lu.**

*Acc. or D. O.* { Il buono, buon ragazzo, un buon ragazzo.  
La buona donna, una buona donna.  
Il buon coltello, un buon coltello.

## PLURAL.

*Acc. or Dir. Obj.* { *m.* I buoni ragazzi, coltelli.  
*f.* Le buone donne.

|                                      |                          |
|--------------------------------------|--------------------------|
| <b>Buono,</b>                        | <b>Cattivo, Grande.</b>  |
| <b>Bello,</b>                        | <b>Brutto, Piccolo.</b>  |
| <b>Leggiadro, vizioso, grazioso,</b> | <b>Vecchio, Giovane.</b> |

*Acc. Il giubbetto di seta* <sup>2</sup>, *la calza di seta.*  
*Acc. I giubbetti di seta,* *le calze di seta.*

|                |             |
|----------------|-------------|
| il panno.      | la lana.    |
| il lenzuolo.   | la seta.    |
| il cotone.     | il velluto. |
| il refe, filo. | il raso.    |
| la mussolina.  | la tocca.   |
| la batista.    | il nastro.  |
| la flanelle.   | il colore.  |

*Infinitive.*  
**Scrivere,**  
**Leggere,**

*Past part.*  
**scritto.**  
**letto.**

## EXERCISE 11.

Avez-vous envoyé l'habit de mon père chez le tailleur? Oui, Monsieur, je l'ai envoyé chez lui. — Le tailleur a-t-il envoyé un bon habit? Oui, Monsieur, il l'en a envoyé un bon. — Avez-vous vu mon gilet de soie? Je ne l'ai pas vu. — Avez-vous vu ma mère? J'ai vu votre sœur, mais je n'ai pas vu votre mère. — Le garçon a-t-il porté le billet de ma fille

Ha Ella (or avete) mandato il vestito di mio padre dal sartore? Sì, Signore, l'ho mandato a casa sua. — Ha mandato un buon vestito il sartore? Sì, Signore<sup>4</sup>, ne ha mandato un buono. — Ha Ella veduto il mio giubbetto di seta? Non l'ho veduto. — Ha Ella veduto mia madre? Ho veduto la di Lei sorella, ma non ho veduto la di Lei madre. — Ha il ragazzo portato il

<sup>3</sup> See Note 4, page 27.<sup>4</sup> See Note 5, page 27.

## EXERCISE 11.

has not taken it.—Have they seen the good boy and the good girl? They have seen them.—Have they (*fem.*) seen the good boys and the good girls? Yes, Madam, they (*fem.*) have seen them.—Has your father bought a fine table? He has bought a fine one.<sup>1</sup>—Has the waiter taken away my silk umbrella? Yes, Sir, he has taken it away and he has sent it to your aunt's (house).—Has she a mind to send it to my house? Yes, Sir, she will send it to your house.—Has the little boy (got) a small knife? Yes, Sir, he has one.—Have you lost your pretty snuff-box? I have not lost it, I have given it to my sister.—Will your brother lend my father his cloak? He will lend it to him, but has not time to send it to his house.—Has the boy seen his brothers? He has not seen them; he does not wish to see them.—Has the girl seen her sisters? Yes, Miss, she has seen them.—Has your father seen the doctor's fine slippers? My father has not seen them, but my nephew has seen them.

|            |             |
|------------|-------------|
| English,   | Spanish,    |
| Irish,     | Portuguese, |
| Scottish,  | Italian,    |
| French,    | Sardinian,  |
| Dutch,     | Austrian,   |
| Danish,    | Swedish,    |
| Norwegian, | German,     |
| Belgian,   | Swiss,      |
| Prussian,  | Greek,      |
| Russian,   | Turkish,    |
| Polish,    | American,   |

zu dem Doctor getragen? Er hat es zu ihm nicht getragen.—Haben sie den guten Knaben und das gute Mädchen gesehen? Sie haben sie gesehen.—Haben sie die guten Knaben und die guten Mädchen gesehen? Ja, Madame, sie haben sie gesehen.—Hat Ihr Vater einen schönen Tisch gekauft? Er hat einen schönen gekauft.—Hat der Kellner meinen seidenen Regenschirm weggenommen? Ja, mein Herr, er hat ihn weggenommen, und hat ihn zu Ihrer Tante geschickt.—Hat sie Lust ihn zu mir zu schicken? Ja, mein Herr, sie hat Lust ihn zu Ihnen zu schicken.—Hat das Knäbchen ein Messerchen? Ja, mein Herr, er hat eines.—Haben Sie Ihre schöne Schnupftabakdose verloren? Ich habe sie nicht verloren, ich habe sie meiner Schwester gegeben.—Will Ihr Bruder meinem Vater seinen Mantel leihen? Er will ihn ihm leihen, aber er hat nicht Zeit ihn zu ihm zu schicken.—Hat der Knabe seine Brüder gesehen? Er hat sie nicht gesehen, er will sie nicht sehen.—Hat das Mädchen ihre Schwestern gesehen? Ja, Fräulein, sie hat sie gesehen.—Hat Ihr Vater die schönen Pantoffeln des Doctors gesehen? Mein Vater hat sie nicht gesehen, sondern mein Neffe hat sie gesehen.

|                         |                 |
|-------------------------|-----------------|
| englisch <sup>2</sup> , | spanisch,       |
| irländisch,             | portugiesisch,  |
| schottisch,             | italienisch,    |
| französisch,            | sardinisch,     |
| holländisch,            | österreichisch, |
| dänisch,                | schwedisch,     |
| norwegisch,             | deutsch,        |
| belgisch,               | schweizerisch,  |
| preussisch,             | griechisch,     |
| russisch,               | türkisch,       |
| polnisch,               | amerikanisch,   |

<sup>1</sup> *plural, ones, are omitted in such phrases as these in French, German, and Italian.*    <sup>2</sup> Take care not to confound these adjectives with the

## SECTION XI.—DECLENSION AND GENDER OF ADJECTIVES.

61

## EXERCISE 11.

chez le médecin? Il ne l'a pas porté. — Ont-ils vu le bon garçon et la bonne fille? Ils les ont vus. — Ont-elles vu les bons garçons et les bonnes filles? Oui, Madame, elles les ont vus.<sup>a</sup> — Votre père a-t-il acheté une jolie table? Il en a acheté une jolie. — Le garçon a-t-il emporté mon parapluie de soie? Oui, Monsieur, il l'a emporté, et il l'a envoyé chez votre tante. — A-t-elle envie de l'envoyer chez moi? Oui, Monsieur, elle veut l'envoyer chez vous. — Le petit garçon a-t-il un petit couteau? Oui, Monsieur, il en a un. — Avez-vous perdu votre jolie tabatière? Je ne l'ai pas perdue, je l'ai donnée à ma sœur. — Votre frère veut-il prêter son manteau à mon père? Il veut le lui prêter, mais il n'a pas le temps de l'envoyer chez lui. — Le garçon a-t-il vu ses frères? Il ne les a pas vus, il ne veut pas les voir. — La fille a-t-elle vu ses sœurs? Oui, Mademoiselle, elle les a vues. — Votre père a-t-il vu les jolies pantoufles du médecin? Mon père ne les a pas vues, mais mon neveu les a vues.<sup>a</sup>

anglais,  
irlandais,  
écossais,  
français,  
hollandais,  
danois,  
norvégien,  
belge,  
prussien,  
russe,  
polonais,

espagnol,  
portugais,  
italien,  
sarde,  
autrichien,  
suédois,  
allemand,  
suisse,  
grec,  
turc,  
américain,

biglietto di mia figlia a casa del medico? Egli non l'ha portato. — Hanno (egolino) veduto il buon ragazzo e la buona ragazza? Li<sup>a</sup> hanno veduti.<sup>a</sup> — Hanno elleno veduto i buoni ragazzi e le buone ragazze? Sì, Signora, elleno li hanno veduti. — Ha comprato una bella tavola il di Lei padre? Egli ne ha comprato una bella. — Ha il cameriere portato via il mio ombrello di seta? Sì, Signore, egli l'ha portato via ed egli l'ha mandato a casa della di Lei zia. — Ha ella voglia di mandarlo a casa mia? Sì, Signore, ella vuol mandarlo a casa di Lei. — Ha un coltellino il ragazzino (*diminutives*)? Sì, Signore, ne ha uno. — Ha Ella perduto la di Lei vezzosa tabacchiera? Io non l'ho perduta, l'ho data a mia sorella. — Vuol il di Lei fratello prestare il suo mantello a mio padre? Egli ha voglia di prestarglielo, ma non ha tempo di mandarlo a casa sua. — Ha veduto i suoi fratelli il ragazzo? Egli non li ha veduti, non ha voglia di vederli. — Ha veduto le sue sorelle la ragazza? Sì, Signorina, le ha vedute. — Ha veduto le vezzose pannelle del medico il di Lei padre? Mio padre non le ha vedute, ma mio nipote le ha vedute.<sup>a</sup>

inglese,  
irlandese,  
scozzese,  
francese,  
olandese,  
danese,  
norvegio,  
belgico,  
prussiano,  
russo,  
polonese,

spagnuolo.  
portoghese.  
italiano.  
sardo.  
austriaco.  
svedese.  
tedesco.  
svizzero.  
greco.  
turco.  
americano.

<sup>a</sup> When nouns of different genders are combined, the concord takes place with the masculine plural in preference to the feminine.

<sup>a</sup> See Note 4, page 27.

<sup>a</sup> See Note 5, page 27.

<sup>a</sup> See Note 3, page 41.

<sup>a</sup> See Note 3, page 33.

## HOUSEHOLD ADJECTIVES.

Ambitious,  
 Reasonable,  
 Wise,  
 Rash,  
 Prudent,  
 Skilful,  
 Ignorant,  
 Stupid,  
 Foolish,  
 Bold,  
 Timid,  
 Noble,  
 Mean,  
 Amiable,  
 Agreeable,  
 Disagreeable,  
 Proud,  
 Humble,  
 Vain,  
 Modest,  
 Faithful,  
 Treacherous,  
 Just,  
 Unjust,  
 Guilty,  
 Innocent,  
 Honest,  
 Dishonest,  
*Greedy,*  
*Avaricious,*

Generous,  
 Industrious,  
 Active,  
 Diligent,  
 Idle,  
 Busy,  
 Careful,  
 Negligent,  
 Worthy,  
 Unworthy,  
 Frank,  
 Sly,  
 Kind,  
 Cruel,  
 Contented,  
 Discontented,  
 Rich,  
 Poor,  
 Sad,  
 Dull,  
 Merry,  
 Droll,  
 Grateful,  
 Ungrateful,  
 Happy,  
 Unhappy,  
 Jealous,  
 Envious,  
 Serious,  
 Ridiculous,

Ehrgeizig,  
 Vernünftig,  
 Weise,  
 Verwegen,  
 Klug,  
 Geschickt,  
 Unwissend,  
 Dumm,  
 Närrisch,  
 Kühn,  
 Schüchtern,  
 Edel,  
 Karg,  
 Liebenswürdig  
 Angenehm,  
 Unangenehm,  
 Stolz,  
 Demüthig,  
 Eitel,  
 Bescheiden,  
 Treu,  
 Treulos,  
 Gerecht,  
 Ungerecht,  
 Schuldig,  
 Unschuldig,  
 Ehrlich,  
 Unehrllich,  
 Gierig,  
 Geizig,

Freigebig,  
 Fleißig,  
 Thätig,  
 Emsig,  
 Faul, träge,  
 Geschäftig,  
 Sorgfältig,  
 Nachlässig,  
 Würdig,  
 Unwürdig,  
 Offenherzig,  
 Listig,  
 Gutmüthig,  
 Grausam,  
 Zufrieden,  
 Unzufrieden,  
 Reich,  
 Arm,  
 Traurig,  
 Betrübt,  
 Lustig,  
 Komisch,  
 Dankbar,  
 Undankbar,  
 Glücklich,  
 Unglücklich,  
 Eifersüchtig,  
 Neidisch,  
 Ernsthaft,  
 Lächerlich,

## HOUSEHOLD ADJECTIVES.

|              |                |                       |                |
|--------------|----------------|-----------------------|----------------|
| Ambitieux,   | Généreux,      | Ambizioso,            | Generoso.      |
| Raisonnable  | Industrieux,   | Ragionevole,          | Industrioso.   |
| Sage,        | Actif,         | Savio,                | Attivo.        |
| Imprudent,   | Diligent,      | Temerario,            | Diligente.     |
| Prudent,     | Paresseux,     | Prudente,             | Pigro.         |
| Habile,      | Occupé,        | Abile,                | Occupato.      |
| Ignorant,    | Soigneux,      | Ignorante,            | Attento.       |
| Stupide,     | Négligent,     | Stupido,              | Negligente.    |
| Fou,         | Digne,         | Pazzo,                | Degno.         |
| Hardi,       | Indigne,       | Coraggioso,           | Indegno.       |
| Timide,      | Franc,         | Timido,               | Libero.        |
| Noble,       | Malin,         | Nobile,               | Malizioso.     |
| Misérable,   | Bon,           | Meschino,             | Buono.         |
| Aimable,     | Cruel,         | Amabile,              | Crudele.       |
| Agréable,    | Content,       | Piacevole,            | Contento.      |
| Désagréable, | Mécontent,     | Spiacevole,           | Malcontento.   |
| Orgueilleux, | Riche,         | Orgoglioso,           | Ricco.         |
| Humble,      | Pauvre,        | Umile,                | Povero.        |
| Vain,        | Triste,        | Vano,                 | Tristo.        |
| Modeste,     | Sombre,        | Modesto,              | Oscuro.        |
| Fidèle,      | Gai,           | Fedele,               | Allegro.       |
| Perfide,     | Drôle,         | Perfido,              | Faceto, comico |
| Juste,       | Reconnaissant, | Giusto,               | Grato.         |
| Injuste.     | Ingrat,        | Ingiusto,             | Ingrato.       |
| Coupable,    | Heureux,       | Criminale, colpevole, | Felice.        |
| Innocent,    | Malheureux,    | Innocente,            | Infelice.      |
| Probe,       | Jaloux,        | Probo,                | Geloso.        |
| Coquin,      | Envieux,       | Furbo,                | Invidioso.     |
| Gourmand,    | Sérieux,       | Goloso,               | Serioso.       |
| Avare,       | Ridicule,      | Avaro,                | Ridicolo.      |

Inquisitive, curious,  
 Eloquent,  
 Extravagant,  
 Strange,  
 Strong,  
 Firm,  
 Weak,  
 Ill (*also adverb*),  
 Well (*also adverb*),  
 Good,  
 Bad,  
 Old, ancient,  
 New, modern,  
 Fine,  
 Pretty,  
 Ugly,  
 Common,  
 Scarce,  
 Heavy,  
 Light,  
 Dry,  
 Wet,  
 Wide,  
 Narrow,  
 Large,  
 Little,  
 Full,  
 Empty  
*High,*  
*Low,*

Long,  
 Deep,  
 Convenient,  
 Inconvenient,  
 Useful,  
 Useless,  
 Quiet,  
 Ready,  
 Shameful,  
 Sorry,  
 Glad,  
 Fast,  
 Slow,  
 Sour,  
 Sweet,  
 Bitter,  
 Dear,  
 True,  
 False,  
 Different,  
 Divine,  
 Pious,  
 Holy,  
 Blind,  
 Deaf,  
 Dumb,  
 Lame,  
 Humpbacked,  
 Crooked,  
 Straight,

Neugierig,  
 Beredsam,  
 Verschwenderisch,  
 Fremd,  
 Stark,  
 Fest,  
 Schwach,  
 Krank,  
 Gesund, wohl (*adverb*),  
 Gut,  
 Schlecht,  
 Alt,  
 Neu,  
 Schön,  
 Hübsch,  
 Hässlich,  
 Gemein,  
 Selten,  
 Schwer,  
 Leicht,  
 Trocken,  
 Feucht,  
 Weit,  
 Enge,  
 Groß,  
 Klein,  
 Voll,  
 Leer,  
 Hoch,  
 Nieder,

Lang,  
 Tief,  
 Schicklich,  
 Unschicklich,  
 Nützlich,  
 Unnütz,  
 Ruhig,  
 Bereit, fertig,  
 Schändlich,  
 Bekümmert,  
 Froh,  
 Schnell,  
 Langsam,  
 Sauer,  
 Süß,  
 Bitter,  
 Theuer,  
 Wahr,  
 Falsch,  
 Verschieden,  
 Göttlich,  
 Fromm,  
 Heilig,  
 Blind,  
 Taub,  
 Stumm,  
 Lahm,  
 Buckelig,  
 Krumm,  
 Gerade,

## HOUSEHOLD ADJECTIVES.

Curieux,  
Éloquent,  
Extravagant,  
Étrange,  
Fort,  
Ferme,  
Faible,  
Malade,  
Bien portant,  
Bon,  
Mauvais,  
Vieux, ancien, âgé,  
Nouveau, neuf, moderne,  
Beau,  
Joli,  
Vilain, laid,  
Commun,  
Rare,  
Lourd,  
Léger,  
Sec,  
Mouillé,  
Large,  
Étroit,  
Grand,  
Petit,  
Plein,  
Vide,  
Haut,  
Bas,

Long,  
Profond,  
Commode,  
Incommode,  
Utile,  
Inutile,  
Tranquille,  
Prêt,  
Honteux,  
Fâché,  
Joyeux, aise,  
Vite,  
Lent,  
Sur,  
Sucré, doux,  
Amer,  
Cher,  
Vrai,  
Faux,  
Différent,  
Divin,  
Pieux,  
Saint,  
Aveugle,  
Sourd,  
Muet,  
Boiteux,  
Bossu,  
Tortu,  
Droit,

Curioso,  
Eloquente,  
Stravagante,  
Strano,  
Forte,  
Fermo,  
Debole,  
Ammalato,  
Bene (*adverb*),  
Buono,  
Cattivo,  
Vecchio, attempato,  
Nuovo,  
Bello,  
Leggiadro,  
Brutto,  
Comune,  
Raro,  
Pesante,  
Leggiere,  
Secco, asciutto,  
Umido, bagnato,  
Largo,  
Stretto,  
Grande,  
Piccolo,  
Pieno,  
Vacuo,  
Alto,  
Basso,

Lungo.  
Profondo.  
Comodo.  
Incomodo.  
Utile.  
Inutile.  
Tranquillo.  
Pronto.  
Vergognoso.  
Incescioso.  
Allegro.  
Presto.  
Lento.  
Acido.  
Zuccheroso, dolce.  
Amaro.  
Caro.  
Vero.  
Falso.  
Differente.  
Divino.  
Divoto.  
Santo.  
Cieco.  
Sordo.  
Muto.  
Storpiato.  
Gobbo.  
Storto.  
Dritto, ritto.



## HOUSEHOLD ADJECTIVES.

|         |              |                     |              |
|---------|--------------|---------------------|--------------|
| Tall,   | Light,       | Groß, schlank,      | Hell, blond, |
| Short,  | Round,       | Klein,              | Rund,        |
| Stout,  | Flat,        | Dick,               | Eben,        |
| Fat,    | Pointed,     | Fett,               | Spitz,       |
| Lean,   | Warm,        | Mager,              | Warm,        |
| Thick,  | Lukewarm,    | Dicht,              | Lau,         |
| Thin,   | Cold,        | Dünn,               | Kalt,        |
| Black,  | Easy,        | Schwarz,            | Leicht,      |
| White,  | Difficult,   | Weiß,               | Schwer,      |
| Red,    | Clean,       | Roth,               | Rein,        |
| Yellow, | Dirty,       | Gelb,               | Schmutzig,   |
| Blue,   | Pure,        | Blau,               | Klar,        |
| Purple, | Hard,        | Purpurroth, violet, | Hart,        |
| Orange, | Soft,        | Orangegelb,         | Zart, sanft, |
| Green,  | Frightful,   | Grün,               | Schrecklich, |
| Brown,  | Illustrious, | Braun,              | Berühmt,     |
| Grey,   | Tired,       | Grau,               | Müde,        |
| Dark,   | (*)          | Dunkel,             | (*)          |

## NAMES OF NATIONS.

|                |               | Gen.               | Pl.   |                 | Gen.  | Pl. |
|----------------|---------------|--------------------|-------|-----------------|-------|-----|
| An American,   | A Norwegian,  | ein Amerikaner,    | s, —  | ein Norweger,   | s, —  |     |
| An Austrian,   | A Pole,       | ein Oesterreicher, | s, —  | ein Pole,       | n, n. |     |
| A Belgian,     | A Portuguese, | ein Belgier,       | s, —  | ein Portugiese, | n, n. |     |
| A Dane,        | A Prussian,   | ein Däne,          | n, n. | ein Preusse,    | n, n. |     |
| A Dutchman,    | A Russian,    | ein Holländer,     | s, —  | ein Russe,      | n, n. |     |
| An Englishman, | A Sardinian,  | ein Engländer,     | s, —  | ein Sardinier,  | s, —  |     |
| A Frenchman,   | A Scotchman,  | ein Franzose,      | n, n. | ein Schotte,    | n, n. |     |
| A German,      | A Spaniard,   | ein Deutscher,     | n, n. | ein Spanier,    | s, —  |     |
| A Greek,       | A Swede,      | ein Grieche,       | n, n. | ein Schwede,    | n, n. |     |
| An Irishman,   | A Swiss,      | ein Irländer,      | s, —  | ein Schweizer,  | s, n. |     |
| An Italian,    | A Turk,       | ein Italiener,     | s, —  | ein Türke,      | n, n. |     |

\* These words should be carefully committed to memory, and worked up into written and oral exercises until perfect fluency is attained.

## HOUSEHOLD ADJECTIVES.

Grand,  
Petit,  
Gros,  
Gras,  
Maigre,  
Épais,  
Fin,  
Noir,  
Blanc,  
Rouge,  
Jaune,  
Bleu,  
Violet,  
Orange,  
Vert,  
Brun,  
Gris,  
Foncé,

Clair, blond,  
Rond,  
Plat,  
Pointu,  
Chaud,  
Tiède,  
Froid,  
Facile,  
Difficile,  
Propre,  
Sale,  
Pure,  
Dur,  
Doux,  
Affreux,  
Célèbre,  
Fatigué, las,  
(\*)

Grande,  
Piccolo,  
Grosso,  
Grasso,  
Magro,  
Spesso, denso,  
Fino,  
Nero,  
Bianco,  
Rosso,  
Giallo,  
Azzurro, turchino,  
Pavonazzo,  
Giallo, arancio,  
Verde,  
Bruno,  
Bigio, grigio,  
Carico (colore),

Chiaro, biondo.  
Rotondo.  
Piano.  
Acuto.  
Caldo.  
Tepido.  
Freddo.  
Facile.  
Difficile.  
Pulito.  
Sporco.  
Puro.  
Duro.  
Dolce.  
Orribile.  
Celebre.  
Stanco.  
(\*)

## NAMES OF NATIONS.

un Américain,  
un Autrichien,  
un Belge,  
un Danois,  
un Hollandais,  
un Anglais,  
un Français,  
un Allemand,  
un Grec,  
un Irlandais,  
un Italien,

un Norvégien,  
un Polonais,  
un Portugais,  
un Prussien,  
un Russe,  
un Sardinien,  
un Écossais,  
un Espagnol,  
un Suédois,  
un Suisse,  
un Turc,

un Americano,  
un Austriaco,  
un Belgio,  
un Danese,  
un Olandese,  
un Inglese,  
un Francese,  
un Tedesco,  
un Greco,  
un Irlandese,  
un Italiano,

un Norvegiano.  
un Polacco.  
un Portoghese.  
un Prussiano.  
un Russo.  
un Sardo.  
uno Scozzese.  
uno Spagnuolo.  
uno Svedese.  
uno Svizzero.  
un Turco.

## SECTION XII.—POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

|                           |                   |
|---------------------------|-------------------|
| <i>Nom.</i>               | Mine or my own.   |
| <i>Gen. or Poss.</i>      | Of mine.          |
| <i>Dat. or Ind. Obj.</i>  | To mine, or mine. |
| <i>Acc. or Dir. Obj.</i>  | Mine.             |
| <i>Abbl. or Ind. Obj.</i> | From, by mine.    |

In the same manner are varied and declined:—

Thine.  
His.  
Hers.  
Its. (*Obsolete.*)  
Ours.  
Yours.  
Yours.  
Theirs.

All genders and numbers.  
*Nom. and Acc.* The good.

All genders and numbers.  
*Nom. and Acc.* My good.

|              |                   |                   |                   |        |            |
|--------------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------|--------|------------|
|              | m.                | f.                | n.                | pl. m. | f. n.      |
| <i>Nom.</i>  | Der meinig-e,     | die meinig-e,     | das meinig e,     | die    | meinig-en. |
| <i>Gen.</i>  | Des meinig-en,    | der meinig-en,    | des meinig-en,    | der    |            |
| <i>Dat.</i>  | Dem meinig-en,    | der meinig-en,    | dem meinig-en,    | den    |            |
| <i>Acc.</i>  | Den meinig-en,    | die meinig-e,     | das meinig-e,     | die    |            |
| <i>Abbl.</i> | V. dem meinig-en, | v. der meinig-en, | v. dem meinig-en, | v. den |            |

In the same manner are varied and declined:—

Der, die, das Deinige.  
" " " Seinige.  
" " " ihrige.  
" " " Seinige.  
" " " Unserige.  
" " " Eurige.  
" " " Ihrige.  
" " " ihrige.

All these possessive pronouns are declined like adjectives preceded by the definite article.

|             |               |             |                           |                |       |
|-------------|---------------|-------------|---------------------------|----------------|-------|
|             | m.            | f.          | n.                        | pl. m.         | f. n. |
| <i>Nom.</i> | Der gute,     | die gute,   | das gute <sup>1</sup> ,   | die } guten.   |       |
| <i>Acc.</i> | Den guten,    | die gute,   | das gute <sup>1</sup> ,   | die } guten.   |       |
| <i>Nom.</i> | Mein guter,   | meine gute, | mein gutes <sup>1</sup> , | meine } guten. |       |
| <i>Acc.</i> | Meinen guten, | meine gute, | mein gutes <sup>1</sup> , | meine } guten. |       |

## EXERCISE 12.

Have you the good cloth? Yes, Sir, I have it.—Have you my good cloth? I have not. — Have you seen the old cloth? I have seen it.—Have you sold your old cloth? Yes, Sir, I have sold it to the tailor.—Do you wish to buy a fine ribbon? Yes, Madam, I wish to buy a fine ribbon and a fine hat.—Do you wish to buy my fine ribbon? No, Madam, I do not wish to

Haben Sie das gute<sup>1</sup> Tuch? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe es.—Haben Sie mein gutes Tuch? Ich habe es nicht. — Haben Sie das alte<sup>1</sup> Tuch gesehen? Ich habe es gesehen.—Haben Sie Ihr altes<sup>1</sup> Tuch verkauft? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe es dem Schneider verkauft. — Haben Sie Lust ein schönes<sup>1</sup> Band zu kaufen? Ja, Madame, ich habe Lust ein schönes Band und einen schönen Hut zu kaufen.—Haben Sie Lust mein schönes Band zu kaufen? Nein, Madame, ich will das Ihrige nicht kaufen.

<sup>1</sup> Be very particular in noticing the difference between the neuter terminations of the adjective when preceded by the definite article or a possessive adjective. See also Note 1, Page 86.

# SECTION XII.—POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

69

|                      |         |                 |           |                   |                            |
|----------------------|---------|-----------------|-----------|-------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>Nom.</i> m.<br>Le | } mien. | <i>f.</i><br>la | } mienne. | <i>pl.</i><br>les | } miens, w.<br>miennes, f. |
| <i>Gen.</i> Du       |         | de la           |           | des               |                            |
| <i>Dat.</i> Au       |         | à la            |           | aux               |                            |
| <i>Acc.</i> La       |         | la              |           | des               |                            |
| <i>Abbl.</i> Du      |         | de la           |           |                   |                            |

In the same manner are varied and declined :—

m. f. pl. m. pl. f.  
Le tien, la tienne, les tiens, les tiennes.

Le sien, la sienne, les siens, les siennes.

Le, nôtre, la nôtre, les nôtres.  
Le vôtre, la vôtre, les vôtres.  
Le vôtre, la vôtre, les vôtres.  
Le leur, la leur, les leurs.

m. f. pl. m. pl. f.  
N. & A. Le bon, la bonne, les bons, les bonnes.

N. & A. Mon bon, ma bonne, mes bons, mes bonnes.

|                      |        |                 |        |                    |         |                     |        |
|----------------------|--------|-----------------|--------|--------------------|---------|---------------------|--------|
| <i>Nom.</i> m.<br>Il | } mio. | <i>f.</i><br>La | } mia. | <i>pl. m.</i><br>i | } miei. | <i>pl. f.</i><br>le | } mie. |
| <i>Gen.</i> Del      |        | della           |        | dei                |         | delle               |        |
| <i>Dat.</i> Al       |        | alla            |        | ai                 |         | alle                |        |
| <i>Acc.</i> Il       |        | la              |        | i                  |         | le                  |        |
| <i>Abbl.</i> Dal     |        | dalla           |        | dai                |         | dalle               |        |

In the same manner are varied and declined :—

m. f.  
Il tuo, la tua, &c.

Il suo, la sua, &c.

Il nostro, la nostra, &c.  
Il vostro, la vostra, &c.  
Il di Lei, la di Lei, &c.  
Il loro, la loro, &c.

In Italian there is no difference between the possessive adjective and the possessive pronoun. See Section X., on Possessive Adjectives.

m. f. pl. m. pl. f.  
Il buono, la buona, i buoni, le buone.

Il mio buono, la mia buona, i miei buoni, le mie buone.

## EXERCISE 12.

Avez-vous le bon drap? Oui, Monsieur, je l'ai. — Avez-vous mon bon drap? Je ne l'ai pas. — Avez-vous vu le vieux drap? Je l'ai vu. — Avez-vous vendu votre vieux drap? Oui, Monsieur, je l'ai vendu au tailleur. — Voulez-vous acheter un beau ruban? Oui, Madame, j'ai envie d'acheter un beau ruban et un beau chapeau. — Voulez-vous acheter mon beau ruban? Non, Madame, je n'ai pas envie d'acheter le

Ha Ella il buon panno? Sì, Signore, l'ho. — Ha Ella (or avete) il mio buon panno? Non l'ho. — Ha Ella veduto il vecchio panno? L'ho veduto. — Ha Ella venduto il di Lei vecchio panno? Sì, Signore, l'ho venduto al sartore. — Ha Ella voglia di comprare un bel nastro? Sì, Signora, ho desiderio di comprare un bel nastro ed un bel cappello. — Vuol Ella comprare il mio bel nastro? No, Signora, non ho desiderio

## SECTION XII.—POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

## EXERCISE 12.

buy yours.—Have you seen my brother's fine rings? I have not seen his, but yours.—Will you buy mine? No, I will buy your sister's.—Have you seen my sister's gloves? Here they are.—Where is my hat? Here it is.—Where is your sister? Here she is.—Have you not seen her? No, Sir, I have not seen her, but your brother has seen her.—Have you given the washerwoman my stockings? Yes, Sir, I have given<sup>1</sup> her them.—Have you given her mine? No, Sir, I have not given her them.—Will you have the kindness to give her them? Yes, Sir, I will give her them.—Has your old brother seen his old cousin? He has not seen his old cousin, but he has seen his young cousin.—Have your brothers had their bill? No, Sir, they have not had it.—Will you have the kindness to send it to their house? Yes, Sir.—Where is your passport? Here is mine.—Where is yours? Here it is.—Have you read your brothers' letters? I have not read theirs, but your uncle's.—Who has taken mine away? Your brother has taken them away.—Where is he? Here he is.—Has the maid brought my handkerchiefs? No, Sir, she has not brought yours, but your brother's.—Have you seen them? Yes, I have seen them.—Where are they? Here they are.—Will you have the kindness (or be so kind as) to give them to my brother? Yes, Sir (I will).

—Haben Sie die schönen Ringe meines Bruders gesehen? Ich habe nicht die seinigen, sondern die Ihrigen gesehen.—Wollen Sie die meinigen kaufen? Nein, ich will die Ihrer Schwester kaufen.—Haben Sie die Handschuhe meiner Schwester gesehen? Hier sind sie.—Wo ist mein Hut? Hier ist er.—Wo ist Ihre Schwester? Hier ist sie.—Haben Sie sie nicht gesehen? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe sie nicht gesehen, aber Ihr Bruder hat sie gesehen.—Haben Sie der Wäscherin<sup>2</sup> meine Strümpfe gegeben? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe sie<sup>3</sup> ihr gegeben.—Haben Sie ihr die meinigen gegeben? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe sie ihr nicht gegeben.—Wollen Sie die Güte haben sie ihr zu geben? Ja, mein Herr, ich will sie<sup>3</sup> ihr geben.—Hat Ihr alter Bruder seinen alten Vetter gesehen? Er hat nicht seinen alten, sondern seinen jungen Vetter gesehen.—Haben Ihre Brüder ihre Rechnung gehabt? Nein, mein Herr, sie haben sie nicht gehabt.—Wollen Sie die Güte haben sie nach ihrem Hause zu senden? Ja, mein Herr.—Wo ist Ihr Pasz? Hier ist der meine (or meiner).—Wo ist der Ihrige (or Ihrer)? Hier ist er.—Haben Sie die Briefe Ihrer Brüder gelesen? Ich habe nicht die ihrigen, sondern die Ihres Onkels gelesen.—Wer hat die meinigen weggenommen? Ihr Bruder hat sie weggenommen.—Wo ist er? Hier ist er.—Hat die Magd meine Taschentücher gebracht? Nein, mein Herr, sie hat nicht die Ihrigen, sondern die Ihres Bruders gebracht.—Haben Sie sie gesehen? Ja, ich habe sie gesehen.—Wo sind sie? Hier sind sie.—Wollen Sie die Güte haben, sie<sup>4</sup> meinem Bruder zu geben? Ja, mein Herr.

<sup>1</sup> See Note 1, page 40.<sup>2</sup> See Note 2, page 36.<sup>3</sup> See Note 2, page 44.<sup>4</sup> Here the accusative precedes the dative, because it is a personal pronoun.

## SECTION XII.—POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

71

## EXERCISE 12.

vôtre. — Avez-vous vu les belles bagues de mon frère ? Je n'ai pas vu les siennes, mais les vôtres. — Voulez-vous acheter les miennes ? Non, j'ai envie d'acheter celles de votre sœur. — Avez-vous vu les gants de ma sœur ? Les voici. — Où est mon chapeau ? Le voici. — Où est votre sœur ? La voici. — Ne l'avez-vous pas vue ? Non, Monsieur, je ne l'ai pas vue, mais votre frère l'a vue. — Avez-vous donné mes bas à la blanchisseuse ? Oui, Monsieur, je les lui ai donnés. — Lui avez-vous donné les miens ? Non, Monsieur, je ne les lui ai pas donnés. — Voulez-vous avoir la bonté de les lui donner ? Oui, Monsieur, je veux les lui donner. — Votre vieux frère a-t-il vu son vieux cousin ? Il n'a pas vu son vieux cousin, mais il a vu son jeune cousin. — Vos frères ont-ils eu leur note ? Non, Monsieur, ils ne l'ont pas eue. — Voulez-vous avoir la bonté de l'envoyer chez eux ? Oui, Monsieur. — Où est votre passe-port ? Voici le mien. — Où est le vôtre ? Le voici. — Avez-vous lu les lettres de vos frères ? Je n'ai pas lu les leurs, mais celles de votre oncle. — Qui a emporté les miennes ? Votre frère les a emportées. — Où est-il ? Le voici. — La servante a-t-elle apporté mes mouchoirs ? Non, Monsieur, elle n'a pas apporté les vôtres, mais elle a apporté ceux de votre frère. — Les avez-vous vus ? Oui, je les ai vus. — Où sont-ils ? Les voici. — Voulez-vous avoir la bonté de les donner à mon frère ? Oui, Monsieur.

di comprare il di Lei. — Ha Ella veduto i begli<sup>6</sup> anelli di mio fratello ? Non ho veduto i suoi, ma i di Lei. — Ha Ella desiderio di comprare i miei ? No, Signore, ho voglia di comprare quelli della di Lei (or di vostra) sorella. — Ha Ella veduto i guanti di mia sorella ? Eccoli quà. — Dov' è il mio cappello ? Eccolo qui. — Dov' è la di Lei sorella ? Eccola qui. — Non l'ha Ella veduta ? No, Signore, non l'ho veduta, ma il di Lei fratello l'ha veduta. — Avete dato le mie calze alla lavandaia ? Sì, Signore, gliele ho date. — Le ha Ella dato le mie ? No, Signore, io non gliele<sup>7</sup> ho date. — Vuol Ella aver la bontà di dargliele ? Sì, Signore, ho desiderio di dargliele. — Ha il di Lei vecchio fratello veduto il<sup>8</sup> suo vecchio cugino ? Non ha veduto il suo vecchio cugino, ma egli ha veduto il suo giovane cugino. — Hanno i di Lei fratelli avuto il loro conto ? No, Signore, eglino non l'hanno avuto. — Vuol Ella aver la bontà di mandarlo a casa loro ? Sì, Signore. — Dov' è il di Lei passaporto ? Ecco il mio. — Dov' è il di Lei ? Eccolo quà. — Ha Ella letto le lettere dei di Lei fratelli ? Non ho letto le loro, ma ho letto quelle del di Lei (or di vostro) zio. — Chi ha portato via le mie ? Il di Lei fratello le ha portate via. — Dov' è egli ? Eccolo quà. — Ha portato i miei fazzoletti la cameriera ? No, Signore, ella non ha portato i di Lei, ma ha portato quelli del di Lei fratello. — Li ha Ella (or avete) veduti ? Sì, li ho veduti. — Dove sono ? Eccoli quà. — Vuol Ella aver la bontà di darli a mio fratello ? Sì, Signore.

<sup>5</sup> See Note 1, page 40.<sup>6</sup> *Bello* makes *begli* in the plural before a vowel.<sup>7</sup> See Note 1, page 40, and Note 4, page 45.<sup>8</sup> See Note 3, page 53.

| Infinitive. | Past part.         |
|-------------|--------------------|
| To be,      | been.              |
| Am I ?      | you are, thou art. |
| Art thou ?  | I am.              |
| Is he ?     | he is.             |
| Is she ?    | she is.            |
| Is it ?     | it is.             |
| Are we ?    | you are, we are.   |
| Are you ?   | I am, we are.      |
| Are they ?  | they are.          |

Here,

There.

|       |                            |
|-------|----------------------------|
| To be | { at home.                 |
|       | { at my house.             |
|       | { at your house.           |
|       | { at his house.            |
|       | { at her house.            |
|       | { at our house.            |
|       | { at their house.          |
|       | { at the tailor's (house). |
|       | { at the hotel.            |

Infinitive.

Past part.

To be right or wrong in (pt. pres.), been right, wrong.

|                                        |               |
|----------------------------------------|---------------|
| To be hungry,                          | been hungry.  |
| To be thirsty,                         | been thirsty. |
| Prudent, envious, jealous, avaricious. |               |

| Infinitive.           | Past part.                    |
|-----------------------|-------------------------------|
| Sein,                 | gewesen.                      |
| Bin ich ?             | Sie sind, ihr seid, du bist.  |
| Bist du ?             | ich bin.                      |
| Ist er ?              | er ist.                       |
| Ist sie ?             | sie ist.                      |
| Ist es ?              | es ist.                       |
| Sind wir ?            | Sie sind, ihr seid, wir sind. |
| Sind Sie ? seid ihr ? | ich bin, wir sind.            |
| Sind sie ?            | sie sind.                     |

Hier,

Da, dort (repose).

|                                |         |
|--------------------------------|---------|
| <sup>2</sup> Zu Hause          | } sein. |
| <sup>1</sup> Bei mir           |         |
| Bei Ihnen                      |         |
| Bei ihm                        |         |
| Bei ihr                        |         |
| Bei uns                        |         |
| Bei ihnen                      |         |
| <sup>1</sup> Bei dem Schneider |         |
| <sup>2</sup> In dem Gasthofs   |         |

Infinitive.

Past part.

Recht, Unrecht haben zu (infin.), Recht, Unrecht gehabt.

|                                        |            |        |           |
|----------------------------------------|------------|--------|-----------|
| Hungrig sein, or Hunger haben, hungrig | } gewesen. | Hunger | } gehabt. |
| Durstig sein, or Durst haben, durstig  |            | Durst  |           |
| Klug, neidisch, eifersüchtig, geizig.  |            |        |           |

<sup>1</sup> When *rest* or *repose* in or at a place is implied with the name of the person or a personal pronoun, *bei* is always used. <sup>2</sup> When the place or residence is named implying rest or repose, *zu* or *in* must be used; *zu*, *zu Hause*, *zu* or *in Kölsch*. *Bei* always implies repose; *nach* always implies motion towards a place.

Infinitive.  
**Être,**

Suis-je (est-ce que je suis)?  
Es-tu ?  
Est-il ?  
Est-elle ?  
Est-il, elle ?  
Sommes-nous ?  
Êtes-vous ?  
Sont-ils, elles ?

**Je,**

**Là,**

Être { à la maison.  
chez moi.<sup>4</sup>  
chez vous.  
chez lui.  
chez elle.  
chez nous.  
chez eux, elles.  
chez le tailleur.<sup>4</sup>  
à l'hôtel.

Infinitive.

Avoir raison, tort de (infin.), en raison, tort.  
voir faim,  
voir soif,  
ident, envieux, jaloux, avare.  
en faim.  
en soif.

The past participle of *essere* is subject to concord, although it is invariable in English.  
in casa, egli è in casa, voi siete (or *Ella è*) in casa; and not *io sono* da me

Past part.  
**été.**

vous êtes, tu es.  
je suis.  
il est.  
elle est.  
il, elle est.  
vous êtes, nous sommes.  
je suis, nous sommes.  
ils, elles sont.

† (precedes the verb. See also  
Note 2, p. 95.)

# THE VERB "TO BE" COMBINED WITH ADJECTIVES, &c.

Infinitive.  
**Essere,**

Son io ?  
Sei tu ?  
È egli ?  
È ella ?  
È egli, ella ?  
Siamo noi ?  
È Ella ? siete ? sono Elleno ?  
Sono eglino, elleno ?

**Qui, Quà, Là.**

**Ci, Ce, Vi, Ve** (precedes the verb, and are joined to the infinitive).

Past part.  
**stato, stata, stati**

Ella è, voi siete, t  
io sono.  
egli è.  
ella è.  
egli, ella è. [si  
Voi siete, Elleno  
io sono, noi siamo.  
eglino, elleno sono.

Essere { in casa.  
in casa mia, da me.<sup>5</sup>  
in casa vostra, sua, di Lei; da Lei, da voi.  
in casa sua, da lui.  
in casa sua, da lei.  
in casa nostra, da noi.  
in casa loro, da loro.  
in casa del sartore, dal<sup>s</sup> sartore.  
all' albergo.

Infinitive.

Aver ragione, torto di (infin.), avuto ragione, torto.  
Aver fame,  
Aver sete,  
Prudente, invidioso.  
avuto fame

Past part.



## EXERCISE 13.

Am I avaricious? You are avaricious.—Am I (*fem.*) avaricious? You (*fem.*) are avaricious.—Art thou jealous? I am jealous.—Art thou (*fem.*) jealous? I (*fem.*) am not jealous.—Is he prudent? He is not prudent.—Is she prudent? Yes, Madam, she is prudent.—Are you hungry? I am not hungry.—Is he hungry? He is not hungry.—Are they hungry? They are not hungry.—Are they prudent? They are prudent.—Are they (*fem.*) prudent? They (*fem.*) are prudent.—Is your father at home? He is not at home.—Is your mother at home? She is not at home.—Am I right in sending the note to your father's? You are right in sending it to my father's (house).—Am I wrong? Yes, Sir, you are wrong.—Am I wrong in going home? Yes, Sir, you are wrong in going home.—Are your brothers at home? They are not at home; they are at the tailor's.—Are we wrong in buying a coat? You are wrong in buying one.—Is the boy right in lending the money to the man? The boy is wrong in lending it to him.—Have you seen my uncle? I have not seen your uncle, but I have seen your aunt.—Is your brother here? Yes, Sir, he is here.—Are your brothers here? No, Sir, they are not here; they are at the doctor's.—Was I (*or* have I been) right? You were not (have not been) right.—Who was right? Your father was right. Your mother was wrong, but your brother and sister are right.—Was the tailor wrong in sending home your coat? No, he was right.

Bin ich geizig? Sie sind (*or* Ihr seid) geizig.—Bin ich geizig (*fem.*)? Sie sind geizig.—Bist du eifersüchtig? Ich bin eifersüchtig.—Bist du eifersüchtig? Ich bin nicht eifersüchtig.—Ist er klug? Er ist nicht klug.—Ist sie klug? Ja, Madame, sie ist klug.—Sind Sie hungrig? Ich bin nicht hungrig.—Ist er hungrig? Er ist nicht hungrig.—Sind sie hungrig? Sie sind nicht hungrig.—Sind sie klug? Sie sind klug.—Sind sie klug? Sie sind klug.—Ist Ihr Vater zu Hause? Er ist nicht zu Hause.—Ist Ihre Mutter zu Hause? Sie ist nicht zu Hause.—Habe ich Recht das Billet zu Ihrem Vater zu senden? Sie haben Recht es zu ihm zu senden.—Habe ich Unrecht? Ja, mein Herr, Sie haben Unrecht.—Habe ich Unrecht nach Hause zu gehen? Ja, mein Herr, Sie haben Unrecht nach Hause zu gehen.—Sind Ihre Brüder zu Hause? Sie sind nicht zu Hause, sie sind bei dem Schneider.—Haben wir Unrecht einen Rock zu kaufen? Sie haben Unrecht einen zu kaufen.—Hat der Knabe Recht, dem Manne das Geld zu leihen? Der Knabe hat Unrecht es ihm zu leihen.—Haben Sie meinen Onkel gesehen? Ich habe nicht Ihren Onkel, sondern Ihre Tante gesehen.—Ist Ihr Bruder hier? Ja, mein Herr, er ist hier.—Sind Ihre Brüder hier? Nein, mein Herr, sie sind nicht hier, sie sind bei dem Doctor.—Habe ich Recht gehabt? Sie haben nicht Recht gehabt.—Wer hat Recht gehabt? Ihr Vater hat Recht gehabt. Ihre Frau's Mutter hat Unrecht gehabt, aber Ihr Herr's Bruder und Ihre (Fräulein's) Schwester haben Recht.—Hat der Schneider Unrecht gehabt, Ihren Rock nach Hause zu schicken? Nein, er hat Recht gehabt.

<sup>1</sup> An ellipsis of the possessive adjective is made here in English; but it is repeated before each noun in French, German and Italian, on account of the difference of gender. This ellipsis often occurs in English in using the articles, but they must be repeated before each noun in French and Italian. In German the ellipsis may be made as in English when the nouns are of the same gender or number and do not require a different article.

## EXERCISE 13.

Suis-je avare ? Vous êtes avare. — Suis-je avare (*fem.*) ? Vous êtes avare. — Es-tu jaloux ? Je suis jaloux. — Es-tu jalouse ? Je ne suis pas jalouse. — Est-il prudent ? Il n'est pas prudent. — Est-elle prudente ? Oui, Madame, elle est prudente. — Avez-vous faim ? Je n'ai pas faim. — A-t-il faim ? Il n'a pas faim. — Ont-ils faim ? Ils n'ont pas faim. — Sont-ils prudents ? Ils sont prudents. — Sont-elles prudentes ? Elles sont prudentes. — Votre père est-il à la maison ? Il n'est pas à la maison. — Votre mère est-elle à la maison ? Elle n'est pas à la maison. — Ai-je raison d'envoyer la lettre à votre père ? Vous avez raison de l'envoyer chez mon père. — Ai-je tort ? Oui, Monsieur, vous avez tort. — Ai-je tort d'aller à la maison ? Oui, Monsieur, vous avez tort d'aller à la maison. — Vos frères sont-ils à la maison ? Ils ne sont pas à la maison, ils sont chez le tailleur. — Avons-nous tort d'acheter un habit ? Vous avez tort d'en acheter un. — Le garçon a-t-il raison de prêter l'argent à l'homme ? Le garçon a tort de le lui prêter. — Avez-vous vu mon oncle ? Je n'ai pas vu votre oncle, mais j'ai vu votre tante. — Votre frère est-il ici ? Oui, Monsieur, il y est. — Vos frères sont-ils ici ? Non, Monsieur, ils ne sont pas ici, ils sont chez le médecin. — Ai-je eu raison ? Vous n'avez pas eu raison. — Qui a eu raison ? Monsieur<sup>1</sup> votre père a eu raison. Madame<sup>2</sup> votre mère a eu tort, mais Monsieur<sup>2</sup> votre frère et Mademoiselle<sup>2</sup> votre<sup>1</sup> sœur ont raison. — Le tailleur a-t-il eu tort d'envoyer votre habit à la maison ? Non, il a eu raison.

Son io avaro ? Siete avaro (Ella è avaro). — Son io avara ? Siete avara (Ella è avara). — Sei tu geloso ? Io sono geloso. — Sei tu gelosa ? Non, sono gelosa. — È egli prudente ? Egli non è prudente. — È ella prudente ? Sì, Signora, ella è prudente. — Ha Ella fame ? Non ho fame. — Ha egli fame ? Egli non ha fame. — Hanno eglino fame ? Eglino non hanno fame. — Sono eglino prudenti ? Eglino sono prudenti. — Sono elleno prudenti ? Elleno sono prudenti. — È in casa il di Lei padre ? Egli non è in casa. — È in casa la di Lei madre ? Ella non è in casa. — Ho io ragione di mandare il biglietto a casa del di Lei padre ? Ella ha (*or avete*) ragione di mandarlo da mio padre. — Ho io torto ? Sì, Signore, Ella ha torto. — Ho io torto d'andare a casa mia ? Sì, Signore, Ella ha torto d'andare a casa. — Sono i di Lei fratelli in casa ? Non sono in casa, eglino sono in casa del sartore. — Abbiamo (*noi*) torto di comprare un vestito ? Elleno hanno (*or avete*) torto di comprarne uno. — Ha ragione il ragazzo di prestare il danaro all' uomo ? Il ragazzo ha torto di prestarglielo. — Ha Ella veduto mio zio ? Non ho veduto il di Lei zio, ma ho veduto la di Lei zia. — È quà il di Lei fratello ? Sì, Signore, ci è. — Sono quì i di Lei fratelli ? No, Signore, non sono quà, sono in casa del medico. — Ho io avuto ragione ? Ella non ha avuto ragione. — Chi ha avuto ragione ? Il di Lei<sup>2</sup> Signor padre ha avuto ragione. La di Lei Signora<sup>2</sup> madre ha avuto torto, ma il di Lei<sup>1</sup> Signor<sup>2</sup> fratello e la di Lei<sup>1</sup> Signorina<sup>2</sup> sorella hanno ragione. — Ha il sartore avuto torto di mandare a casa il di Lei vestito ? No, egli ha avuto ragione.

<sup>2</sup> In French, German, and Italian these words are introduced out of politeness, in speaking to persons of their relatives, but they must not be used in speaking of our own; we must not say, *Monsieur mon père*, &c., but simply, *mon père*, &c.

## HOUSEHOLD VERBS.

|                        |                     |                           |                       |
|------------------------|---------------------|---------------------------|-----------------------|
| To want <sup>1</sup> , | To undo,            | Brauchen,                 | Aufmachen,            |
| To have <sup>2</sup> , | To go to bed,       | Haben,                    | Zu Bette gehen,       |
| To be,                 | To lie down,        | Sein,                     | sich Niederlegen,     |
| To become,             | To sleep,           | Werden,                   | Schlafen,             |
| To be sleepy,          | To dream,           | Schläfrig sein,           | Träumen,              |
| To undress,            | To snore,           | sich Auskleiden,          | Schnarchen,           |
| To take off,           | To watch, sit up,   | Ausziehen,                | Wachen,               |
| To take away,          | To awake,           | Wegnehmen,                | Wecken, aufwachen,    |
| To bring,              | To get up,          | Bringen,                  | Aufstehen,            |
| To untie,              | To sit down,        | Aufbinden,                | sich Setzen,          |
| To dress,              | To put on,          | sich Ankleiden,           | Anziehen, aufsetzen,  |
| To wash,               | To button,          | Waschen,                  | Zuknöpfen,            |
| To shave,              | To lace,            | sich Rasiren,             | Schnüren,             |
| To dress the hair,     | To tie,             | Das Haar machen,          | Binden,               |
| To comb,               | To untie,           | Kämmen,                   | Aufbinden, losmachen, |
| To be hungry,          | To eat,             | Hungrig sein,             | Essen,                |
| To be thirsty,         | To drink,           | Durstig sein,             | Trinken,              |
| To breakfast,          | To bite, masticate, | Frühstücken,              | Beiszen, kauen,       |
| To lunch,              | To swallow,         | Vespere,                  | Schlucken,            |
| To dine,               | To fast,            | Speisen, zu Mittag essen, | Fasten,               |
| To sup,                | To digest,          | Zu Nacht essen,           | Verdauen,             |
| To taste,              |                     | Kosten,                   |                       |
| To travel,             | To approach,        | Reisen,                   | Nähern,               |
| To arrive,             | To depart,          | Ankommen,                 | Abreisen,             |

*For definition and conjugation of verbs, see Grammatical Definitions, pages 4, 5, 6, 7, and the Appendix of Regular and Irregular Verbs at the end of work.*

## HOUSEHOLD VERBS.

Avoir besoin de,  
Avoir,  
Être,  
Devenir,  
Avoir sommeil,

se Déshabiller,  
Ôter,  
Emporter,  
Apporter,  
Dénouer,

s'Habiller,  
Laver,  
se Raser,  
Coiffer,  
Peigner, démêler,

Avoir faim,  
Avoir soif,  
Déjeuner,  
Goûter,  
Dîner,  
Souper,  
Goûter,

Voyager,  
Arriver,

Défaire,  
Aller se coucher,  
se Coucher,  
Dormir,  
Rêver,

Ronfler,  
Veiller,  
Eveiller, s'éveiller,  
se Lever,  
s'Asseoir,

Mettre,  
Boutonner,  
Lacer,  
Nouer,  
Délir, dénouer,

Manger,  
Boire,  
Mordre, mâcher,  
Avaler,  
Jeûner,  
Digérer,

Approcher,  
Partir,

Aver bisogno di,  
Avere,  
Essere,  
Divenire,  
Aver sonno, voglia di dormire,  
Svestirsi, spogliarsi,  
Levare, levarsi,  
Portar via,  
Portare,  
Sciogliere,

Vestirsi,  
Lavare,  
Farsi la barba, sbarbarsi,  
Acconciare la testa,  
Pettinare, sviluppare,

Aver fame,  
Aver sete,  
Far colazione,  
Merendare,  
Pranzare,  
Cenare,  
Gustare,

Viaggiare,  
Arrivare, giungere,

Disfare.  
Andare a corica  
Coricarsi.  
Dormire.  
Sognare.  
Russare.  
Vegliare.  
Svegliare, svegliar  
Alzarsi.  
Sedersi.

Mettere.  
Abbottonare.  
Allacciare.  
Legare.  
Sciogliere, disnodare

Mangiare.  
Bevere, bere.  
Mordere, masticare.  
Ingoiare.  
Digiunare.  
Digerire.

Avvicinare.  
Partire.

## HOUSEHOLD VERBS.

|                       |                       |                                  |                                |
|-----------------------|-----------------------|----------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| To run,               | To come up,           | Laufen,                          | Heraufkommen,                  |
| To jump,              | To come down,         | Springen,                        | Herabkommen,                   |
| To dance,             | To wait, expect,      | Tanzen,                          | Warten, erwarten,              |
| To slip,              | To stay,              | Gleiten,                         | Bleiben,                       |
| To fall,              | To rest,              | Fallen,                          | Ruhen, sich ausruhen,          |
| To swim,              | To make haste,        | Schwimmen,                       | sich Beeilen,                  |
| To walk,              | To be in a hurry,     | Spazieren,                       | Eilig sein,                    |
| To take a walk,       | To stop,              | Spazieren gehen,                 | sich Aufhalten,                |
| To ride,              | To return, turn back, | Reiten,                          | Zurückkehren,                  |
| <br>                  |                       |                                  |                                |
| To drive,             | To return to,         | Fahren,                          | Zurückgehen, zurück<br>kommen, |
| To take a drive,      | To return from,       | Spazieren fahren,                | Zurückkommen,                  |
| <br>                  |                       |                                  |                                |
| To go,                | To make a call,       | Gehen,                           | Besuchen,                      |
| To go away,           | To go before,         | Weggehen,                        | Vorgehen,                      |
| To go in,             | To meet,              | Eintreten,                       | Begegnen,                      |
| To go out,            | To follow,            | Ausgehen,                        | Folgen,                        |
| To go up,             | To go to the right,   | Hinauf-, heraufsteigen,          | Rechts gehen,                  |
| To go down,           | To go to the left,    | Hinunter-, herunter-<br>steigen, | Links gehen,                   |
| <br>                  |                       |                                  |                                |
| To come,              | To advance,           | Kommen,                          | Vorschreiten,                  |
| To come away,         | To retreat,           | Wegkommen,                       | Zurückschreiten,               |
| To come in,           | To escape,            | Hereinkommen,                    | Entwischen,                    |
| To come out,          |                       | Herauskommen,                    |                                |
| <br>                  |                       |                                  |                                |
| To bargain,           | To take off,          | Handeln um,                      | Nachlassen,                    |
| <i>To buy,</i>        | To pay,               | Kaufen,                          | Bezahlen,                      |
| <i>To sell,</i>       | To borrow,            | Verkaufen,                       | Borgen, entleihen,             |
| <i>To overcharge,</i> | <i>To owe,</i>        | Ueberfordern,                    | Schuldig sein,                 |

# HOUSEHOLD VERBS.

|                                                                                                                                   |                                                                                                                                 |                                                                                                                                                         |                                                                                                                                                      |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Courir,<br>Sauter,<br>Danser,<br>Glisser,<br>Tomber.<br>Nager,<br>se Promener,<br>Faire une promenade,<br>Aller, monter a cheval, | Monter,<br>Descendre,<br>Attendre,<br>Rester,<br>se Reposer,<br>se Dépêcher,<br>Être pressé,<br>s'Arrêter,<br>Retourner,        | Correre,<br>Saltare,<br>Ballare,<br>Scorrere,<br>Cadere,<br>Nuotare,<br>Passeggiare,<br>Fare una passeggiata,<br>Andare, montar a cavallo,<br>Condurre, | Salire.<br>Scendere.<br>Aspettare.<br>Rimanere.<br>Riposarsi.<br>Affrettarsi.<br>Stare <i>or</i> essere in fre<br>Fermarsi.<br>Tornare.              |
| Conduire,                                                                                                                         | Retourner à.                                                                                                                    |                                                                                                                                                         | Ritornare a.                                                                                                                                         |
| Faire une promenade en voiture,<br>Aller,<br>s'en Aller,<br>Entrer,<br>Sortir,<br>Monter,<br>Descendre,                           | Revenir de,<br><br>Faire une visite,<br>Aller devant, en avant,<br>Rencontrer,<br>Suivre,<br>Aller à droite,<br>Aller à gauche, | Andare in carrozza,<br><br>Andare,<br>Andarsene,<br>Entrare,<br>Uscire,<br>Salire,<br>Scendere,                                                         | Rivenire di, <i>or</i> da.<br><br>Fare una visita.<br>Andare innanzi.<br>Incontrare, rincontr<br>Seguire.<br>Andare a man destr<br>Andare a man manc |
| Venir,<br>s'en Aller,<br>Entrer,<br>Sortir,                                                                                       | Avancer,<br>Reculer,<br>Échapper,                                                                                               | Venire,<br>Andarsene,<br>Entrare,<br>Uscire,                                                                                                            | Avanzare.<br>Trarre addietro.<br>Scappare.                                                                                                           |
| Marchander,<br>Acheter,<br>Vendre,                                                                                                | Rabattre,<br>Payer,<br>Emprunter,                                                                                               | Stiracchiare, prezzolare,<br>Comprare,<br>Vendere,                                                                                                      | Ridurre il prezzo.<br>Pagare.<br>Chiedere, ricevere<br>prestito.                                                                                     |
| Surfaire,                                                                                                                         | Devoir,                                                                                                                         | Domandar troppo,                                                                                                                                        | Dovere.                                                                                                                                              |

## HOUSEHOLD VERBS.

To cost,  
To spend,  
To lend,  
To send,  
To send home,  
To send for,

To go for,  
To let,  
To hire,  
To change,  
To count, reckon,  
To get rid of,

Kosten,  
Ausgeben,  
Leihen,  
Senden, schicken,  
Nach Hause schicken,  
Holen lassen,

Holen,  
Vermiethen,  
Miethen,  
Aendern,  
Zählen, rechnen,  
sich Losmachen,

To see,  
To see again,  
To show,  
To look at,  
To look for,  
To ask for,  
To listen,  
To hear,  
To smell,  
To sneeze,  
To taste,  
To cough,  
To laugh,

To smile,  
To cry,  
To sob,  
To sigh,  
To breathe,  
To blow,  
To talk, speak,  
To sing,  
To whisper,  
To whistle,  
To call,  
To yawn,  
To choke,

Sehen,  
Wiederssehen,  
Zeigen,  
Betrachten,  
Suchen,  
Verlangen, fragen nach,  
Zuhören,  
Hören,  
Riechen,  
Niesen,  
Kosten,  
Husten,  
Lachen,

Lächeln,  
Weinen,  
Stöhnen,  
Seufzen,  
Athmen,  
Blasen,  
Sprechen, reden  
Singen,  
Flüstern,  
Pfeifen,  
Rufen,  
Gähnen,  
Würgen,

To do, make,  
To get done,  
To carry, take, bring,  
To work,  
*To clean,*  
*To dirty,*  
*To sweep,*

To rub,  
To brush,  
To polish,  
To spoil,  
To break,  
To tear,  
*To cut,*

Machen, thun,  
Machen lassen,  
Tragen, bringen,  
Arbeiten,  
Reinigen,  
Schmutzen,  
Auskehren,

Reiben,  
Bürsten,  
Poliren,  
Verderben,  
Zerbrechen,  
Zerreißen,  
Schneiden,

## HOUSEHOLD VERBS.

Coûter,  
Dépenser,  
Prêter,  
Envoyer,  
Envoyer à la maison,  
Envoyer chercher,

Aller chercher,  
Louer,  
Louer,  
Changer,  
Compter,  
se Défaire, Débarrasser,

Costare,  
Spendere,  
Prestare,  
Mandare,  
Mandare a casa,  
Mandare a cercare,

Andare a cercare.  
Affittare.  
Appigionare.  
Cangiare.  
Contare.  
Disfarsi.

Voir,  
Revoir,  
Montrer,  
Regarder,  
Chercher,  
Demander,  
Écouter,  
Entendre,  
Sentir,  
Éternuer,  
Goûter,  
Tousser,  
Rire,

Sourire,  
Pleurer,  
Sangloter,  
Soupirer,  
Respirer,  
Souffler,  
Parler,  
Chanter,  
Chuchoter, parler bas,  
Siffler,  
Appeler,  
Baïller,  
Étrangler,

Vedere,  
Rivedere,  
Mostrare,  
Riguardare, guardare,  
Cercare,  
Domandare.  
Ascoltare,  
Intendere, sentire,  
Sentire,  
Starnutare,  
Gustare,  
Tossare,  
Ridere,

Sorridere.  
Piangere.  
Singhiozzare.  
Sospirare.  
Respirare.  
Soffiare.  
Parlare.  
Cantare.  
Bisbigliare.  
Fischiare.  
Chiamare.  
Sbadigliare.  
Strangolare.

Faire,  
Faire faire,  
Porter,  
Travailler,  
Nettoyer,  
Salir,  
Balayer,

Frotter,  
Brosser,  
Polir,  
Gâter,  
Casser,  
Déchirer  
Couper,

Fare,  
Far fare,  
Portare,  
Lavorare,  
Pulire,  
Sporcare,  
Scopare,

Fregare.  
Spazzolare.  
Lisciare.  
Guastare, rovinare  
Romper.  
Stracciare.  
Tagliare.



## HOUSEHOLD VERBS.

To mend,  
To sew,  
To knit,  
To spin,  
To embroider,  
To wet,  
To dry,  
To starch,  
To iron,  
To light,  
To burn,  
To extinguish,

To brew,  
To cook, bake,  
To boil,  
To roast, toast, broil,  
To fry,  
To stew,  
To salt,  
To grind,  
To dress, prepare,  
To fill,  
To empty,

Ausbessern,  
Nähen,  
Stricken,  
Spinnen,  
Sticken,  
Nas<sub>z</sub> machen,  
Trocknen,  
Stärken,  
Bügeln,  
Anzünden,  
Brennen, verbrennen,  
Auslöschen,

Brauen,  
Backen,  
Sieden,  
Braten,  
In der Pfanne backen,  
Schmoren,  
Salzen,  
Mahlen,  
Zubereiten,  
Füllen, voll machen,  
Leeren, ausleeren,

To build,  
To demolish,  
To dig,  
To rake,  
To hoe,  
To water,

To plough,  
To plant,  
To sow,  
To reap,  
To mow,  
To load,

Bauen,  
Niederreiszen,  
Graben,  
Rechen,  
Hacken,  
Begieszen,

Pflügen,  
Pflanzen,  
Säen,  
Schneiden,  
Mähen,  
Aufladen,

To think,  
To believe,  
To understand,  
To intend,  
To hope,  
To fear,  
To remember,  
To forget,  
To observe, notice,

To offer,  
To refuse,  
To thank,  
To excuse, pardon,  
To help,  
To abandon,  
To try,  
To arrange,  
To take care of,

Denken,  
Glauben,  
Verstehen,  
Gedenken,  
Hoffen,  
Fürchten,  
(sich) Erinnern,  
Vergessen,  
Bemerken,

Anbieten,  
Verweigern,  
Danken,  
Verzeihen,  
Helfen,  
Verlassen,  
Versuchen,  
Ordnen,  
Besorgen,

## HOUSEHOLD VERBS.

Raccommoder,  
Coudre,  
Tricoter,  
Filer,  
Broder,  
Mouiller,  
Sécher,  
Amidonner,  
Repasser,  
Allumer,  
Brûler,  
Éteindre,

Brasser,  
Cuire,  
Bouillir,  
Rôtir, griller,  
Frire,  
Cuire à l'étuvée,  
Saler,  
Moudre,  
Préparer,  
Emplir, remplir,  
Vider,

Raccommodare,  
Cucire,  
Lavorar a maglie,  
Filare,  
Ricamare,  
Bagnare,  
Seccare,  
Inamidare,  
Stirare,  
Accendere,  
Ardere, abbruciare,  
Estinguere,

Far la birra.  
Cuocere.  
Bollire.  
Arrostire.  
Friggere.  
Stufare.  
Salare.  
Macinare.  
Apparecchiare.  
Empire.  
Votare.

Bâtir,  
Démolir,  
Bécher,  
Râtelier,  
Houer,  
Arroser,

Labourer,  
Planter,  
Semer,  
Couper,  
Faucher,  
Charger,

Edificare,  
Demolire,  
Vangare,  
Rastrellare,  
Zappare,  
Innaffiare, inacquare,

Arare.  
Piantare.  
Seminare.  
Segare.  
Falciaie.  
Caricare.

Penser,  
Croire,  
Comprendre,  
Compter,  
Espérer.  
Craindre,  
se Souvenir de,  
Oublier,  
Observer, remarquer,

Offrir,  
Refuser,  
Remercier,  
Excuser, pardonner,  
Aider,  
Abandonner,  
Essayer,  
Arranger, ranger,  
Prendre ~~ou~~ avoir soin de,

Pensare,  
Credere,  
Capire,  
Intendere, pensare,  
Sperare,  
Temere,  
Ricordarsi,  
Dimenticare,  
Osservare,

Offrire.  
Ricusare.  
Ringraziare.  
Perdonare, scusar  
Aiutare.  
Abandonnare.  
Provare.  
Mettere in ordine.  
Aver cura di.

## HOUSEHOLD VERBS.

To tell,  
 To inform,  
 To relate,  
 To consent,  
 To yield,  
 To oppose,  
 To produce,  
 To furnish,  
 To provide,  
 To teach,  
 To learn,  
 To study,  
 To play,  
 To draw,  
 To paint,  
 To encourage,  
 To discourage,  
 To protect,  
 To serve,  
 To console,  
 To answer,  
 To beg, request,  
 To pray,  
 To promise,  
 To grant,  
 To be able,  
 To be willing,  
 To be angry,  
*To be sorry,*  
*To be silent,*

To permit,  
 To forbid,  
 To like,  
 To love,  
 To hate,  
 To dispute,  
 To fight,  
 To beat,  
 To punish,  
 To kill,  
 To die,  
 To behave,  
 To merit,  
 To praise,  
 To despise,  
 To blame,  
 To approve,  
 To reward,  
 To know,  
 To reflect,  
 To imagine,  
 To suppose,  
 To propose,  
 To consider,  
 To judge,  
 To consult,  
 To justify,  
 To conclude,  
 To resolve,  
 To doubt,

Sagen,  
 Benachrichtigen,  
 Erzählen,  
 Einwilligen,  
 Nachgeben,  
 sich Widersetzen,  
 Hervorbringen,  
 Ausmöbliren,  
 Anschaffen,  
 Lehren,  
 Lernen,  
 Studiren,  
 Spielen,  
 Zeichnen,  
 Malen,  
 Ermuthigen,  
 Entmuthigen,  
 Schützen,  
 Dienen,  
 Trösten,  
 Antworten,  
 Bitten,  
 Beten,  
 Versprechen,  
 Bewilligen,  
 Können,  
 Wollen,  
 Böse sein,  
 Traurig sein,  
 Schweigen,

Erlauben,  
 Verbieten,  
 Gern haben,  
 Lieben,  
 Hassen,  
 Streiten,  
 Fechten,  
 Schlagen,  
 Strafen,  
 Töden,  
 Sterben,  
 sich Verhalten,  
 Verdienen,  
 Loben,  
 Verachten,  
 Tadeln,  
 Genehmigen,  
 Belohnen,  
 Kennen, wissen,  
 Ueberlegen,  
 sich Einbilden,  
 Voraussetzen,  
 Vorschlagen,  
 Betrachten,  
 Richten,  
 Um Rath fragen,  
 Rechtfertigen,  
 Einschlieszen,  
 Beschlieszen,  
 Zweifeln,

## HOUSEHOLD VERBS.

Dire,  
 Informer,  
 Raconter,  
 Consentir,  
 Céder,  
 Opposer,  
 Produire,  
 Garnir,  
 Fournir,  
 Enseigner,  
 Apprendre,  
 Etudier,  
 Jouer,  
 Dessiner,  
 Peindre,  
 Encourager,  
 Décourager,  
 Protéger,  
 Servir,  
 Consoler,  
 Répondre,  
 Prier,  
 Prier,  
 Promettre,  
 Accorder,  
 Pouvoir,  
 Vouloir,  
 Être en colère, fâché,  
 Être fâché,  
 se Taire,

Permettre,  
 Défendre,  
 Aimer,  
 Aimer,  
 Hair,  
 Disputer,  
 se Battre,  
 Battre,  
 Punir,  
 Tuer,  
 Mourir,  
 se Comporter,  
 Mériter,  
 Louer,  
 Mépriser,  
 Blâmer,  
 Approuver,  
 Récompenser,  
 Connaître, savoir,  
 Réfléchir,  
 s'Imaginer,  
 Supposer,  
 Proposer,  
 Considérer,  
 Juger,  
 Consulter,  
 Justifier,  
 Conclure,  
 Resoudre,  
 Doûter,

Dire,  
 Avvisare,  
 Raccontare,  
 Acconsentire,  
 Cedere,  
 Opporre,  
 Produrre,  
 Ammobigliare,  
 Provvedere,  
 Insegnare,  
 Imparare,  
 Studiare,  
 Giuocare,  
 Disegnare,  
 Pingere,  
 Rincorare,  
 Scoraggiare,  
 Proteggere,  
 Servire,  
 Consolare,  
 Rispondere,  
 Pregare,  
 Orare,  
 Promettere,  
 Concedere,  
 Potere,  
 Volere,  
 Essere in collera,  
 Affligersi,  
 Tacere,

Permettere.  
 Proibire.  
 Amare.  
 Amare.  
 Odiare.  
 Disputare.  
 Pugnare.  
 Battere.  
 Punire.  
 Uccidere.  
 Morire.  
 Comportarsi.  
 Meritare.  
 Lodare.  
 Disprezzare.  
 Biasimare.  
 Approvare.  
 Ricompensare.  
 Conoscere, sap  
 Riflettere.  
 Fingersi.  
 Supporre.  
 Proporre.  
 Considerare.  
 Giudicare.  
 Consultare.  
 Giustificare.  
 Conchiudere.  
 Risolvere.  
 Dubitare.

## HOUSEHOLD VERBS.

|              |                 |                |                    |
|--------------|-----------------|----------------|--------------------|
| To suspect,  | To open,        | Misstrauen,    | Oeffnen,           |
| To trust,    | To upset,       | Vertrauen,     | Umwerfen,          |
| To despair,  | To put, place,  | Verzweifeln,   | Legen, stecken,    |
| To repent,   | To throw away,  | Bereuen,       | Wegwerfen,         |
| To regret,   | To humble,      | Bedauern,      | Demüthigen,        |
| To suffer,   | To equal,       | Leiden,        | Gleich machen,     |
| To pity,     | To surpass,     | Bedauern,      | Uebertreffen,      |
| To complain, | To excel,       | sich Beklagen, | Auszeichnen,       |
| To bless,    | To begin,       | Segnen,        | Anfangen,          |
| To assure,   | To finish, end, | Versichern,    | Endigen,           |
| To affirm,   | To cease,       | Bestätigen,    | Aufhören,          |
| To dare,     | To destroy,     | Dürfen,        | Zerstören,         |
| To risk,     | To ruin,        | Wagen,         | Verwüsten,         |
| To gain,     | To rot,         | Gewinnen,      | Faulen,            |
| To lose,     | To reside,      | Verlieren,     | Wohnen,            |
| To bet,      | To live, dwell, | Wetten,        | Leben, wohnen,     |
| To accept,   | To bury,        | Annehmen,      | Begraben,          |
| To take,     | To cure,        | Nehmen,        | Curiren,           |
| To steal,    | To be ashamed,  | Stehlen,       | Beschämen,         |
| To restore,  | To astonish,    | Wiedergeben,   | Erstaunen,         |
| To hold,     | To recognise,   | Halten,        | Erkennen,          |
| To loosen,   | To guess,       | Losmachen,     | Vermuthen,         |
| To tighten,  | To be mistaken, | Erschrecken,   | sich Irren,        |
| To bind,     | To deceive,     | Binden,        | Betrügen,          |
| To cover,    | To swear,       | Bedecken,      | Schwören,          |
| To uncover,  | To marry,       | Aufdecken,     | Heirathen, trauen, |
| To hide,     | To unite, join, | Verstecken,    | Vereinen,          |
| To shut,     | To separate,    | Zumachen,      | Scheiden,          |

\* \* \* This list of verbs should be carefully studied in conjunction with the Appendix of

## HOUSEHOLD VERBS.

|              |                  |                    |                   |
|--------------|------------------|--------------------|-------------------|
| Soupçonner,  | Ouvrir,          | Sospettare,        | Aprire.           |
| Confier,     | Renverser,       | Confidare,         | Rovesciare.       |
| Désespérer,  | Mettre,          | Disperare,         | Mettere.          |
| Repentir,    | Jeter,           | Pentirsi,          | Gettar via.       |
| Regretter,   | Humilier,        | Rincrescersi,      | Umiliare.         |
| Souffrir,    | Égaler,          | Soffrire,          | Uguagliare.       |
| Plaindre,    | Surpasser,       | Compatire,         | Sorpassare.       |
| se Plaindre, | Exceller,        | Lamentarsi,        | Eccellere.        |
| Bénir,       | Commencer,       | Benedire,          | Cominciare.       |
| Assurer,     | Finir,           | Assicurare,        | Finire.           |
| Affirmer,    | Cesser,          | Affirmare,         | Cessare.          |
| Oser,        | Détruire,        | Osare,             | Distruggere.      |
| Risquer,     | Ruiner,          | Arrischiare,       | Rovinare.         |
| Gagner,      | Pourrir,         | Guadagnare,        | Marcire.          |
| Perdre,      | Demeurer,        | Perdere,           | Dimorare.         |
| Gager,       | Vivre, demeurer, | Scommettere,       | Vivere, stare.    |
| Accepter,    | Enterrer,        | Accettare,         | Seppellire.       |
| Prendre,     | Guérir,          | Prendere,          | Curare.           |
| Voler,       | Avoir honte,     | Rubare,            | Aver vergogna.    |
| Rendre,      | Étonner,         | Rendere,           | Stupire.          |
| Tenir,       | Reconnaître,     | Tenere,            | Riconoscere.      |
| Lâcher,      | Deviner,         | Sciogliere,        | Conghietturare.   |
| Serrer,      | se Tromper,      | Strignere,         | Ingannarsi.       |
| Relier,      | Tromper,         | Legare,            | Ingannare.        |
| Couvrir,     | Jurer,           | Coprire,           | Giurare.          |
| Découvrir,   | Épouser, marier, | Scoprire, svelare, | Sposare, maritare |
| Cacher,      | Unir,            | Nascondere,        | Unire.            |
| Fermer,      | Séparer,         | Chiudere,          | Separare.         |

Regular and Irregular Verbs, in order to use them fluently in the following and similar exercises.

## SECTION XIV.—PARTITIVES COMBINED WITH NOUNS.

**Any, some<sup>1</sup>,** sing. and plur., masc., fem., and neuter.

**No, not any,** sing. and plur., masc., fem., and neuter.

|              |                |
|--------------|----------------|
| The bread.   | the water.     |
| The meat.    | the milk.      |
| The butter   | the cream.     |
| The beef.    | the tea.       |
| The mutton.  | the coffee.    |
| The ham.     | the chocolate. |
| The veal.    | the wine.      |
| The chicken. | the beer.      |
| The salt.    | the vinegar.   |
| The pepper.  | the oil.       |
| The mustard. | the sugar.     |

| Inf.             | Past part.     | Inf.             | Past part.    |
|------------------|----------------|------------------|---------------|
| <b>To eat,</b>   | <b>eaten.</b>  | <b>To drink,</b> | <b>drunk.</b> |
| <b>To taste,</b> | <b>tasted.</b> | <b>To take,</b>  | <b>taken.</b> |

Plural Partitives { *A few.*  
                          *Several.*

Generally omitted in German before nouns, but sometimes expressed by *etwas* to designate a small quantity.

{ *Acc. Keinen, m., keine, f., kein, n.* Declined like *ein*.  
  *Acc. Keine, pl. m. f. n.* Declined like definite article.

|                    | Gen.   | Pl. |                 | Gen.   | Pl. |
|--------------------|--------|-----|-----------------|--------|-----|
| das Brod,          | es,    | e.  | das Wasser,     | s,     | —   |
| das Fleisch,       | es.    |     | die Milch,      | —      |     |
| die Butter,        | —      |     | die Sahne,      | —      |     |
| das Rindfleisch,   | es.    |     | der Thee,       | s.     |     |
| das Hammelfleisch, | es.    |     | der Kaffee,     | s.     |     |
| der Schinken,      | s,     | —   | die Schokolade, | —      |     |
| das Kalbfleisch,   | es.    |     | der Wein,       | es, s, | e.  |
| das Hühnchen,      | s,     | —   | das Bier,       | es, s, | e.  |
| das Salz,          | es,    | e.  | der Essig,      | s,     | e.  |
| der Pfeffer,       | s.     |     | das Oel,        | es, s, | e.  |
| der Senf,          | es, s. |     | der Zucker,     | s.     |     |

| Inf.           | Past part.       | Inf.            | Past part.        |
|----------------|------------------|-----------------|-------------------|
| <b>Essen,</b>  | <b>gegessen.</b> | <b>Trinken,</b> | <b>getrunken.</b> |
| <b>Kosten,</b> | <b>gekostet.</b> | <b>Nehehen,</b> | <b>genommen.</b>  |

*Einige, etliche.*  
*Verschiedene, mehrere.*

## EXERCISE 14.

Have you eaten any bread? I have not eaten any bread, but have eaten some meat. — Has the waiter brought any bread? es, Sir, he has brought some bread and butter. — Have we any beef? We have no beef, but we have some mutton. —

Haben Sie Brod gegessen? Ich habe kein Brod, sondern Fleisch gegessen. — Hat der Kellner Brod gebracht? Ja, mein Herr, er hat Brod und Butter gebracht. — Haben wir Rindfleisch? Wir haben kein Rind-, sondern Hammelfleisch.

<sup>1</sup> Take particular care to notice, that in English the same partitives, *some, any*, may be used in combination with nouns or verbs. This is not the case in French or Italian; when *some* or *any* are combined with verbs, they are expressed in French by *en*, and in Italian by *ne*; they are placed after the imperative affirmative;

## SECTION XIV.—PARTITIVES COMBINED WITH NOUNS.

| m.                                                     | f.            | vowel.        | pl. m. f.   |
|--------------------------------------------------------|---------------|---------------|-------------|
| <b>Du,</b>                                             | <b>de la,</b> | <b>de l',</b> | <b>des.</b> |
| { <b>De,</b> m., f, sing. and plur. before adjectives. |               |               |             |

Sing. and plur. m. and f. { *Ne—pas un, une, ne—pas des,* may  
*Ne — pas de, d'.* be used in a negative interrogation.  
 See also Notes 3 and 4, page 27.

|              |               |
|--------------|---------------|
| le pain.     | l'eau (f.).   |
| la viande.   | le lait.      |
| le beurre.   | la crème.     |
| le bœuf.     | le thé.       |
| le mouton.   | le café.      |
| le jambon.   | le chocolat.  |
| le veau.     | le vin.       |
| le poulet.   | la bière.     |
| le sel.      | le vinaigre.  |
| le poivre.   | l'huile (f.). |
| la moutarde. | le sucre.     |

| Inf.           | Past part.    | Inf.            | Past part.   |
|----------------|---------------|-----------------|--------------|
| <b>Manger,</b> | <b>mangé.</b> | <b>Boire,</b>   | <b>bu.</b>   |
| <b>Goûter,</b> | <b>goûté.</b> | <b>Prendre,</b> | <b>pris.</b> |

*Quelques* (always combined with a noun).

*Plusieurs* (may be used with or without a noun).

| m.                                                                | f.            | m. f.         | pl. m.        | pl. f.      |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------|---------------|---------------|-------------|
| <b>Del,</b>                                                       | <b>dello;</b> | <b>della;</b> | <b>dell',</b> | <b>del,</b> |
| <b>de,</b>                                                        | <b>degl',</b> | <b>degli,</b> | <b>delle,</b> |             |
| { <b>Di,</b> often omitted, but used to express a small quantity. |               |               |               |             |

**Non.**

|                |                |
|----------------|----------------|
| il pane.       | l' acqua (f.). |
| la carne.      | il latte.      |
| il burro.      | la crema.      |
| il manzo.      | il tè.         |
| il castrato.   | il caffè.      |
| il prosciutto. | la cioccolata. |
| il vitello.    | il vino.       |
| il pollastro.  | la birra.      |
| il sale.       | l' aceto (m.). |
| il pepe.       | l' olio (m.).  |
| la mostarda.   | lo zucchero.   |

| Inf.             | Past part.       | Inf.                 | Past        |
|------------------|------------------|----------------------|-------------|
| <b>Mangiare,</b> | <b>mangiato.</b> | <b>Bevere, bere,</b> | <b>bev</b>  |
| <b>Gustare,</b>  | <b>gustato.</b>  | <b>Prendere,</b>     | <b>pres</b> |

| m.               | f.                | m.                                    | f.            | m.              | f.              |
|------------------|-------------------|---------------------------------------|---------------|-----------------|-----------------|
| <b>Alcuni,</b>   | <b>alcune.</b>    | <i>Qualche</i> (with the noun sing.). |               |                 |                 |
| <b>Parecchi,</b> | <b>parecchie.</b> | <b>Varii,</b>                         | <b>varie.</b> | <b>Diversi,</b> | <b>diverse.</b> |

### EXERCISE 14.

Avez-vous mangé du pain? Je n'ai pas mangé de pain, mais j'ai mangé de la viande. — Le garçon a-t-il apporté du pain? Oui, Monsieur, il a apporté du pain et du beurre. — Avons-nous du bœuf? Nous n'avons pas de bœuf, mais nous avons du

Ha Ella mangiato (del) pane? Non ho mangiato pan ho mangiato della carne. — Ha portato pane il cameriere Signore, ha portato pane e burro. — Abbiamo (noi) del zo? Non abbiamo manzo, ma abbiamo del castrato. —

as. *donnez-en, donnez-leur,* give some (see Note 1, page 44). When combined with other pronouns, *en* and *ne* are placed last, with the exception of *loro* in Italy *dalcune loro, donnez-leur-en,* give them some.



## SECTION XIV.—PARTITIVES COMBINED WITH NOUNS.

## EXERCISE 14.

Have you bought any ham? I have not bought any ham. — Who has bought some ham? We have bought some ham. — Has the banker brought any money? Yes, Sir, he has brought some money and a letter of credit. — Have you bought any chickens? No, Sir, I have not bought any chickens. — Have you tasted the wine? Yes, Sir, I have tasted the wine and the coffee. — Is the wine good? Yes, Sir, the wine is good, but the coffee is bad. — Will you have the kindness to send me the bread, meat, and butter? Yes, Sir, I will send them to your house. — Who has taken away the milk and the cream? The waiter has taken them away, but has brought some wine and some beer. — Who has drunk the wine? The boy has drunk some beer, but he has not taken any wine. — Have the waiters brought any salt and pepper? They have not brought any salt, but they have brought some pepper, oil, and vinegar. — Has the baker (got) any good bread? No, Sir, he has no good bread. — Have you any mutton? No, Sir, I have no mutton. — Has the butcher sent me<sup>1</sup> any mutton? Yes, Sir, he has sent you<sup>1</sup> some good mutton and some good veal. — Has your brother received any letters? Yes, Sir, he has received several letters. — Has he read them? No, Sir, he has not had time to read them. Have you written any notes to your friends? Yes, Sir, I have written several notes, but I have not had time to send them to them. — Will you give me some cream? No, Madam, I will not give you any cream, but I have a mind to sell you some good milk. — Has the grocer sent me any tea and coffee? Yes, Madam, he has sent you<sup>1</sup> some tea, coffee, and sugar.

**Almost, nearly<sup>1</sup>,  
Not quite,**

**about.  
scarcely.**

— Haben Sie Schinken gekauft? Ich habe keinen Schinken gekauft. — Wer hat Schinken gekauft? Wir haben Schinken gekauft. — Hat der Geldwechsler Geld gebracht? Ja, mein Herr, er hat Geld, und einen Creditbrief gebracht. — Haben Sie Hühner gekauft? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe keine gekauft. — Haben Sie den Wein gekostet? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe den Wein, und den Kaffee gekostet. — Ist der Wein gut? Ja, mein Herr, der Wein ist gut, aber der Kaffee ist schlecht. — Wollen Sie die Güte haben, mir das Brod, das Fleisch, und die Butter zu schicken? Ja, mein Herr, ich will sie Ihnen schicken. — Wer hat die Milch und den Rahm weggenommen? Der Kellner hat sie weggenommen, aber er hat Wein und Bier gebracht. — Wer hat den Wein getrunken? Der Knabe hat Bier getrunken, aber er hat ~~keinen~~ Wein genommen. — Haben die Kellner Salz und Pfeffer gebracht? Sie haben kein Salz gebracht, sondern Pfeffer, Oel, und Essig. — Hat der Bäcker gutes Brod? Nein, mein Herr, er hat kein gutes Brod. — Haben Sie Hammelfleisch? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe kein Hammelfleisch. — Hat der Fleischer mir<sup>1</sup> Hammelfleisch geschickt? Ja, mein Herr, er hat Ihnen<sup>1</sup> gutes Hammel- und Kalbfleisch geschickt. — Hat Ihr Bruder Briefe erhalten? Ja, mein Herr, er hat verschiedene erhalten. — Hat er sie gelesen? Nein, mein Herr, er hat nicht Zeit gehabt, sie zu lesen. — Haben Sie Ihren Freunden Billette geschrieben? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe verschiedene geschrieben, aber ich habe nicht Zeit gehabt, sie zu ihnen zu senden. — Wollen Sie mir Rahm geben? Nein, Madame, ich will Ihnen keinen Rahm geben, aber ich habe Lust Ihnen gute Milch zu verkaufen. — Hat der Spezereihändler mir Thee und Kaffee gesandt? Ja, Madame, er hat Ihnen<sup>1</sup> Thee, Kaffee und Zucker gesandt.

**Beinahe,  
Nicht ganz,**

**ungefähr.  
kaum.**

<sup>1</sup> See Section VI., Notes 1, 2, 3, 4, pages 36, 37; Section VII., Note 1, page 40; Section VIII., Notes 1, 2, 3, 4, pages 44, 45.

## SECTION XIV.—PARTITIVES COMBINED WITH NOUNS.

91

## EXERCISE 14.

mouton. — Avez-vous acheté du jambon ? Je n'ai pas acheté de jambon. — Qui a acheté du jambon ? Nous avons acheté du jambon. — Le banquier a-t-il apporté de l'argent ? Oui, Monsieur, il a apporté de l'argent et une lettre de crédit. — Avez-vous acheté des poulets ? Non, Monsieur, je n'ai pas acheté de poulets. — Avez-vous goûté le vin ? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai goûté le vin et le café. — Le vin est-il bon ? Oui, Monsieur, le vin est bon, mais le café est mauvais. — Voulez-vous avoir la bonté de m'envoyer le pain, la viande et le beurre ? Oui, Monsieur, je veux vous les envoyer. — Qui a emporté le lait et la crème ? Le garçon les a emportés, mais il a apporté du vin et de la bière. — Qui a bu le vin ? Le garçon a bu de la bière, mais il n'a pas pris de vin. — Les garçons ont-ils apporté du sel et du poivre ? Ils n'ont pas apporté de sel, mais ils ont apporté du poivre, de l'huile, et du vinaigre. — Le boulanger a-t-il de bon pain ? Non, Monsieur, il n'a pas de bon pain. — Avez-vous du mouton ? Non, Monsieur, je n'ai pas de mouton. — Le boucher m'a-t-il envoyé du mouton ? Oui, Monsieur, il vous l'a envoyé de bon mouton et de bon veau. — Votre frère a-t-il reçu des lettres ? Oui, Monsieur, il a reçu plusieurs lettres. — Les a-t-il lues ? Non, Monsieur, il n'a pas eu le temps de les lire. — Avez-vous écrit des billets à vos amis ? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai écrit plusieurs billets, mais je n'ai pas eu le temps de les envoyer chez eux. — Voulez-vous me donner de la crème ? Non, Madame, je ne veux pas vous donner de crème, mais j'ai envie de vous vendre du bon lait. — L'épicier m'a-t-il envoyé du thé et du café ? Oui, Madame, il vous a envoyé du thé, du café, et du sucre.

comprato del prosciutto ? Non ho comprato prosciutto. — Chi ha comprato del prosciutto ? Abbiamo comprato del prosciutto. — Ha il banchiere portato del danaro ? Sì, Signore, ha portato del danaro ed una lettera credenziale. — Ha Ella comprato dei pollastri ? No, Signore, non ho comprato pollastri. — Ha Ella gustato il vino ? Sì, Signore, ho gustato il vino ed il caffè. — È buono il vino ? Sì, Signore, è buono il vino, ma il caffè è cattivo. — Vuol Ella aver la bontà di mandarmi il pane, la carne ed il burro ? Sì, Signore, voglio mandarglieli. — Chi ha portato via il latte e la crema ? Il cameriere li ha portati via, ma egli ha portato del vino e della birra. — Chi ha bevuto il vino ? Il ragazzo ha bevuto della birra, ma egli non ha preso vino. — Hanno i camerieri portato sale e pepe ? Non hanno portato sale, ma hanno portato pepe, olio ed aceto. — Ha il fornai buon pane ? No, Signore, egli non ha buon pane. — Ha Ella del castrato ? No, Signore, non ho castrato. — Mi ha mandato del castrato il macellaio ? Sì, Signore, egli Le ha mandato del buon castrato e del buon vitello. — Ha ricevuto alcune lettere il di Lei fratello ? Sì, Signore, egli ha ricevuto parecchie lettere. — Le ha egli lette ? No, Signore, egli non ha avuto tempo di leggerle. — Ha Ella scritto dei biglietti ai di Lei amici ? Sì, Signore, ho scritto parecchi biglietti, ma non ho avuto tempo di mandarli a casa loro. — Vuol Ella darmi della crema ? No, Signora, non voglio darle crema, ma ho desiderio di venderle buon latte. — Mi ha mandato il droghiere del tè e del caffè ? Sì, Signora, egli Le ha mandato tè, caffè e dello zucchero.

**Presque<sup>1</sup>,  
Pas tout-à-fait,**

**environ.  
à peine.**

**Quasi,  
Non affatto,**

**incirca.  
appena.**

<sup>1</sup> Take care not to confound the use of *de* with *du*, *de la*, *de l'*, *des*. See preceding page.  
partitive must be repeated before each noun.

<sup>2</sup> See Adverbs, Section XXX.

<sup>3</sup> See Note 3, page 25, and Note 4, page 27.

<sup>4</sup> See 2<sup>nd</sup> lesson, etc.

# SECTION XIV.—PARTITIVES COMBINED WITH NOUNS.

|            |                          | Gen.                     | Pl.    |       | Gen.                   | Pl.           |
|------------|--------------------------|--------------------------|--------|-------|------------------------|---------------|
| t.         | the fillet of veal.      | das Frühstück,           | es, s. | e.    | die Kalbsscheibe,      | — n.          |
|            | the sweet-bread, kidney. | das Mittagessen, das     | —      | e.    | das Kalbsbröschchen,   | s, —          |
|            |                          | Essen,                   | s.     |       |                        |               |
|            |                          | der Nachtisch,           | es,    | e.    |                        |               |
| f beef.    | the leg of lamb.         | das Abendessen,          | s.     | e.    | die Lammskeule,        | — n.          |
| ' beef.    | the quarter of lamb.     | das Rückenstück,         | es, s, | e.    | das Lammsviertel,      | s, —          |
| eef.       | the soup, broth.         | die Rindalende,          | —      | n.    | die Suppe,             | — n.          |
| beef.      | the boiled meat.         | die Rindsruppe,          | —      | n.    | das gekochte Fleisch,  | es.           |
|            | the roast meat.          | der (or das) Hintertheil |        |       | das gebratene Fleisch, | es.           |
|            |                          | von einem Ochsen.        |        |       |                        |               |
| utton.     | the fried meat.          | die Hammelskeule,        | —      | n.    | das gebratene Fleisch, | es.           |
| mutton.    | the stewed meat.         | das Nackenstück,         | es, s, | e.    | das gedämpfte Fleisch, | es.           |
| of mutton. | the minced meat.         | der Hammelsbug,          | es, s, | '' e. | das gehackte Fleisch,  | es.           |
| lets.      | the roast beef.          | die Kalbscotelette,      | —      | n.    | der Ochsenbraten,      | s.            |
| ad.        | the beef-steak.          | der Kalbskopf,           | es, s, | '' e. | das Beefsteak,         | s, s.         |
| ' veal.    | the ragout.              | die Kalbsbrust,          | —      | '' e. | das Ragout,            | s, s.         |
| veal.      | the sausage.             | der Lendenbraten von     |        |       | die Wurst,             | — '' e.       |
|            |                          | einem Kalbe.             |        |       |                        |               |
| ison.      | the pork.                | der Rehziemer,           | s,     | —     | das Schweinefleisch,   | es.           |
|            | the rice.                | die Zunge,               | —      | n.    | der Reis,              | es.           |
|            | the turkey.              | eine Schnitte,           | —      | n.    | der Truthahn,          | es, s, '' e.  |
|            | the pheasant.            | der Schenkel,            | s,     | n.    | der Fasan,             | en, en.       |
|            | the partridge.           | der Flügel,              | s,     | —     | das Rebhuhn,           | es, s, '' er. |
|            | the quail.               | das Fett,                | es, s, | e.    | die Wachtel,           | — n.          |
|            | an ortolan.              | das Magere,              | n.     |       | der Ortolan,           | es, s, e.     |
|            | the pudding.             | die Ente,                | —      | n.    | der Pudding,           | s, s.         |
|            | the tart.                | die Taube,               | —      | n.    | die Torte,             | — n.          |
|            | an omelet.               | die Lerche,              | —      | n.    | eine Omelette,         | — n.          |
| k.         | the cheese.              | die Waldschnepfe,        | —      | n.    | der Käse,              | s, —          |
|            | a pie.                   | die Wasserschnepfe,      | —      | n.    | eine Pastete,          | — n.          |
|            | an egg.                  | der Zwieback,            | s,     | e.    | das Ei,                | es, s, er.    |

## SECTION XIV.—PARTITIVES COMBINED WITH NOUNS.

le déjeuner.  
le dîner.

le dessert.  
le souper.  
un aloyau de bœuf.  
une rouelle de bœuf.  
les côtes de bœuf.  
une culotte de bœuf.

le gigot de mouton.  
un collet de mouton.  
une épaule de mouton.  
les côtelettes (*f.*) de veau.  
la tête de veau.  
la poitrine de veau.  
la longe de veau.

un cimier de chevreuil.  
une langue.  
une tranche.  
la cuisse.  
l' (une) aile.  
le gras.  
le maigre.  
le canard.  
le pigeon.  
une alouette.  
la bécasse.  
la bécassine.  
le biscuit.

une rouelle de veau.  
un ris de veau ; rognon.

un gigot d'agneau.  
un quartier d'agneau.  
la soupe ; le bouillon.  
le bouilli.  
le rôti.

le frit.  
l' (une) étuvée (*f.*).  
le hachis.  
le bœuf rôti.  
le beef-steak (*pron. bifteck*).  
le ragoût.  
la saucisse.

le porc.  
le riz.  
le dindon.  
le faisan.  
la perdrix.  
la caille.  
un ortolan.  
le pouding.  
la tarte, tourte.  
une omelette.  
le fromage.  
un pâté.  
l' (un) œuf.

la colazione.  
il pranzo.

le frutta (*f. pl.*).  
la cena.  
un porco di manzo.  
una fetta di coscia di manzo.  
le costole di manzo.  
una groppa di manzo.

la coscia di castrato.  
un collo di castrato.  
una spalla di castrato.  
le braciuciole di vitello.  
la testa di vitello.  
il petto di vitello.  
la lombata di vitello.

un lombo di capriuolo.  
una lingua.  
una fetta.  
la coscia.  
l' ala (*f.*)  
il grasso.  
il magro.  
l' anitra (*f.*).  
il piccione.  
la lodola.  
la beccaccia.  
la beccaccina.  
il biscotto.

una fetta di coscia di vi  
un' animella di vitello.

una coscia d' agnello.  
un quarto d' agnello.  
la zuppa ; minestra.  
il lessò.  
l' arrosto.

il fritto.  
lo stufato.  
l' ammorsellato.  
l' arrosto di bue.  
il beef-steak.  
l' intingolo, il ragù.  
la salsiccia.

il maiale.  
il riso.  
il gallinaccio.  
il fagiano.  
la pernice.  
la quaglia.  
un ortolano.  
il pudding.  
la torta.  
una frittata.  
il cacio, formaggio.  
un pasticcio.  
l' uovo (*pl. f. a*).

## SECTION XV.—PARTITIVES COMBINED WITH VERBS.

**Any, some** (of it, of them).**None, not any** (of it, of them).**A few, several** (of them).

|               |                    |
|---------------|--------------------|
| The herring.  | the shell-fish.    |
| The whiting.  | the shrimp, prawn. |
| The skate.    | the crab.          |
| The salmon.   | the lobster.       |
| The cod.      | the oyster.        |
| The sole.     | the trout.         |
| The turbot.   | the pike.          |
| The mackerel. | the eel.           |

| Inf.               | Past part.       | Inf.                  | Past part.          |
|--------------------|------------------|-----------------------|---------------------|
| <b>To pay for,</b> | <b>paid for.</b> | <b>To overcharge,</b> | <b>overcharged.</b> |

|                      | Acc.                                          | Gen.                                  | Gen.                         |              |
|----------------------|-----------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|------------------------------|--------------|
| <i>Mas.</i>          | <b>Welchen,</b>                               | <b>dessen,</b>                        | <b>desselben,</b>            | } davon.     |
| <i>Fem.</i>          | <b>Welche,</b>                                | <b>derer,</b>                         | <b>derselben,</b>            |              |
| <i>Neut.</i>         | <b>Welches,</b>                               | <b>desses,</b>                        | <b>desselben,</b>            |              |
| <i>Pl. all Gend.</i> | <b>Welche,</b>                                | <b>deren,</b>                         | <b>derselben,</b>            |              |
|                      | m.                                            | f.                                    | n.                           | pl. m. f. n. |
| <i>Acc.</i>          | <b>Keinen, keine, kein,</b>                   | <b>-s', -es; keine</b>                | (declined like <i>ein</i> ). |              |
| <i>"</i>             | <b>Einige, etliche, verschiedene, mehrere</b> | (declined like the definite article). |                              |              |

|                  | Gen.   | Pl. | Gen.         | Pl.       |
|------------------|--------|-----|--------------|-----------|
| der Hring,      | es, s, | e.  | die Muschel, | — n.      |
| der Schellfisch, | es,    | e.  | die Garnele, | — n.      |
| der Roche,       | n,     | n.  | der Krebs,   | es, e.    |
| der Salm,        | es, s, | e.  | der Hummer,  | s, n.     |
| der Stockfisch,  | es,    | e.  | die Auster,  | — n.      |
| die Sohle,       | —      | n.  | die Forelle, | — n.      |
| die Steinbutte,  | —      | n.  | der Hecht,   | es, s, e. |
| die Makrele,     | —      | n.  | der Aal,     | es, s, e. |

| Inf.             | Past part.      | Inf.                 | Past part.          |
|------------------|-----------------|----------------------|---------------------|
| <b>Bezahlen,</b> | <b>bezahlt.</b> | <b>Ueberfordern,</b> | <b>uberfordert.</b> |

## EXERCISE 15.

Have you eaten any meat? Yes, Sir, I have eaten some.—  
 Have they eaten any bread? They have not eaten any.—  
 Will your brother eat any ham? He will not eat any.—Will  
 he take some wine? He will take some.—Will your sisters  
 take some salmon? They do not wish to take any; they are  
 not hungry.—Who is hungry? The boys and girls are  
 hungry, and they wish to eat and drink.—Will you take  
 some boiled meat? I will not take any; I have a mind to  
 taste the roast meat.—Have you given any money to the  
 waiter? I have not given him any, but my brother has given  
 him some.—Will you eat some oysters? Yes, Sir, I will eat a  
 few.—Who will buy some? Your aunt will buy some; but she

Haben Sie Fleisch gegessen? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe welches  
 gegessen.—Haben sie Brod gegessen? Sie haben keines  
 gegessen.—Will Ihr Bruder Schinken essen? Er will keinen  
 essen.—Will er Wein trinken? Er will welchen trinken.  
 —Wollen Ihre Schwestern Salm nehmen? Sie wollen keinen  
 nehmen; sie sind nicht hungrig.—Wer ist hungrig? Die Kna-  
 ben und Mdchen sind hungrig; sie wollen essen und trinken.  
 —Wollen Sie gekochtes Fleisch nehmen? Ich will keines<sup>1</sup>  
 nehmen; ich habe Lust, das gebratene Fleisch zu kosten.—  
 Haben Sie dem Kellner Geld gegeben? Ich habe ihm keines,  
 aber mein Bruder hat ihm welches gegeben. Wollen Sie Austern  
 essen? Ja, mein Herr, ich will einige essen.—Wer will welche

<sup>1</sup> See Note 1, page 26.



## SECTION XV.—PARTITIVES COMBINED WITH VERBS.

## EXERCISE 15.

has not any money.—Have your sisters got any? They have got some, but they have not a mind to buy any oysters; they wish to buy a lobster, a turbot, and some salmon.—Will you pay for<sup>1</sup> the lobster? Yes, I will pay for<sup>1</sup> it.—Will you pay the man<sup>1</sup> for the lobster? I will not pay the<sup>1</sup> man for the lobster, but your father will pay him<sup>1</sup> for it.—Who has paid the man for the chickens? Your nephew has paid him for them.—Has your father drunk his wine? Yes, Sir, he has drunk it, and found it good.—Have you bought any herrings? Yes, Madam, I have bought several, and I have paid for them.—Have you not overcharged? I have not overcharged.

|                   |                  |
|-------------------|------------------|
| The potato.       | the onion.       |
| The asparagus.    | the salad.       |
| The cauliflower.  | the radish.      |
| The cabbage.      | the horseradish. |
| The spinach.      | the mushroom.    |
| The carrot.       | the truffe.      |
| The parsnip.      | the lettuce.     |
| The turnip.       | the celery.      |
| The green peas.   | the sorrel.      |
| The bean.         | the garlic.      |
| The lentil.       | the parsley.     |
| The artichoke.    | the sage.        |
| The beet-root.    | the mint.        |
| The cucumber.     | the endive.      |
| The crust.        | the crumb.       |
| A roll.           | the new bread.   |
| The toast.        | the stale bread. |
| A piece of toast. | a loaf.          |
| The white bread.  | the gravy.       |
| The brown bread.  | the sauce.       |

kaufen? Ihre Tante will welche kaufen, aber sie hat kein Geld.—Haben Ihre Schwestern welches? Sie haben welches, aber sie haben keine Lust, Austern zu kaufen; sie wollen einen Hummer, eine Steinbutte und Salm kaufen.—Wollen Sie den<sup>2</sup> Hummer bezahlen? Ja, ich will ihn<sup>2</sup> bezahlen.—Wollen Sie dem Manne<sup>1</sup> den Hummer bezahlen? Ich will ihn<sup>1</sup> ihm nicht, sondern ihr Vater will ihn ihm bezahlen.—Wer hat dem Manne die Hühner bezahlt? Ihr Neffe hat sie<sup>1</sup> ihm bezahlt.—Hat Ihr Vater seinen Wein getrunken? Ja, mein Herr, er hat ihn getrunken und hat ihn gut gefunden.—Haben Sie Häringe gekauft? Ja, Madame, ich habe einige gekauft und habe sie bezahlt.—Haben Sie nicht überfordert? Ich habe nicht überfordert.

|                     | Gen.   | Pl. |                    | Gen.   | Pl. |
|---------------------|--------|-----|--------------------|--------|-----|
| die Kartoffel,      | —      | n.  | die Zwiebel,       | —      | n.  |
| die Spargel,        | —      | n.  | der Salat,         | es, s. | e.  |
| der Blumenkohl,     | es, s. |     | der Rettig,        | es, s. | e.  |
| der Kohl,           | es, s. |     | der Meerrettig,    | es, s. | e.  |
| der Spinat,         | es, s. |     | der Schwamm,       | es, s. | e.  |
| die gelbe Rübe,     | —      | n.  | die Trüffel,       | —      | n.  |
| die Pastinake,      | —      | n.  | der Lattich,       | s.     |     |
| die weiße Rübe,     | —      | n.  | der Selleri,       | s.     |     |
| die grüne Erbse,    | —      | n.  | der Sauerampfer,   | s.     |     |
| die Bohne,          | —      | n.  | der Knoblauch,     | es, s. |     |
| die Linse,          | —      | n.  | die Petersilie,    | —      |     |
| die Artischocke,    | —      | n.  | die Salbei,        | —      |     |
| die rothe Rübe,     | —      | n.  | die Münze,         | —      | n.  |
| die Gurke,          | —      | n.  | die Endivie,       | —      | n.  |
| die Kruste,         | —      | n.  | die Krume,         | —      | n.  |
| ein Bröckchen,      | s.     | —   | das frische Brod,  | es, s. | e.  |
| das geröstete Brod, | es, s. | e.  | das trockene Brod, | es, s. | e.  |
| ein Geröstetes.     | —      |     | ein Laib,          | es, s. | e.  |
| das Weißbrod,       | es, s. | e.  | die Brühe,         | —      | n.  |
| das Schwarzbrod,    | es, s. | e.  | die Sauce,         | —      | n.  |

<sup>1</sup> In German, French, and Italian this verb governs the person in the dative or indirect objective case and the thing in the accusative or direct objective case, which is the reverse of the English. In German the accusative may be used with the preposition *für*.

## SECTION XV.—PARTITIVES COMBINED WITH VERBS.

### EXERCISE 15.

mais elle n'a pas d'argent. Vos sœurs en ont-elles? Elles en ont, mais elles n'ont pas envie d'acheter des huîtres, elles veulent acheter un homard, un turbot, et du saumon.—Voulez-vous payer<sup>a</sup> le homard? Oui, je veux le<sup>a</sup> payer.—Voulez-vous payer le homard à l'homme?<sup>1</sup> Je ne veux pas payer le homard à l'homme<sup>1</sup>, mais votre père a envie de le lui<sup>1</sup> payer.—Qui a payé les poulets<sup>1</sup> à l'homme? Votre neveu les lui<sup>1</sup> a payés.—Votre père a-t-il bu son vin? Oui, Monsieur, il l'a bu et il l'a trouvé bon.—Avez-vous acheté des harengs? Oui, Madame, j'en ai acheté plusieurs, et je les ai payés.—N'avez-vous pas demandé trop? Je n'ai pas demandé trop.

la pomme de terre.  
les asperges (*f.*).  
le chou-fleur.  
le chou.  
les épinards.  
la carotte.  
le panais.  
le navet.  
les petits pois (*m.*).  
la fève.  
la lentille.  
un artichaut.  
la betterave.  
le concombre.  
la croûte.  
un petit pain au lait.  
les rôties.  
une rôtie.  
le pain blanc.  
le pain bis.

un oignon.  
la salade.  
le radis.  
le raifort.  
le champignon.  
la truffe.  
la laitue.  
le céleri.  
l'oseille (*f.*).  
l'ail, *pl. aux* (*m.*).  
le persil.  
la sauge.  
la menthe.  
la chicorée.  
la mie.  
le pain tendre.  
le pain rassis.  
un pain.  
le jus.  
la sauce.

desiderio di comprarne, ma ella non ha danaro.—Ne han-  
di Lei sorelle? Elleno ne hanno, ma non vogliono com-  
ostriche, hanno desiderio di comprare un astaco, un rombo  
sermone.—Vuol Ella pagare<sup>a</sup> l'astaco? Sì, voglio pag-  
Vuol Ella pagare l'astaco all' uomo?<sup>1</sup> Non voglio pagare  
taco all' uomo, ma il di Lei padre vuol pagarglielo.<sup>1</sup> —  
ha pagato i pollastri all' uomo? Il di Lei nipote glieli ha pa-  
—Ha bevuto il suo vino il di Lei padre? Sì, Signore, egli  
bevuto, e l' ha trovato buono.—Ha Ella comprato aringhe?  
Sì, Signora, ne ho comprato parecchie, e le ho pagate. —  
ha Ella domandato troppo? Io non ho domandato troppo.

la patata; il pomo di terra.  
gli sparagi.  
il cavolfiore.  
il cavolo.  
gli spinaci.  
la carotta.  
la pastinaca.  
il navone.  
i piselli.  
la fave.  
la lente.  
il carciofo.  
la barbabietola.  
il citriuolo, cocomero.  
la crosta.  
un panetto fatto col latte.  
i crostini.  
il pane abbrustolato.  
il pan bianco.  
il pan bigio.

una cipolla.  
l' insalata (*f.*).  
la radice, il ravanello.  
il ravano.  
il fungo, *pl. funghi*.  
il tartufo.  
la lattuga.  
il sedano.  
l' acetosa.  
l' aglio.  
il prezzemolo.  
la salvia.  
la menta.  
l' indivia (*f.*).  
la mollica.  
il pan fresco.  
il pan rifatto.  
un pane.  
il sugo.  
la salsa.

<sup>a</sup> In French and Italian this verb governs the person and thing in the accusative or direct objective case, when the person *only* or the thing *only* is mentioned. German, when the thing *only* is mentioned, *besahlen* governs the accusative case.



## SECTION XVI.—SOMETHING, SOMEBODY, ANYTHING, ANYBODY, &amp;c.

**Something, anything. What?** (See declension, pages 124 and 125.)  
**Nothing, not anything.**

**To want (acc.). To be in want of (genitive case).**

**Anything or something good. Nothing good.**

|               |                 |
|---------------|-----------------|
| The water.    | the champagne.  |
| The beer.     | the hock.       |
| The cider.    | the brandy.     |
| The wine.     | the rum.        |
| The port.     | the Moselle.    |
| The sherry.   | the lemonade.   |
| The claret.   | the punch.      |
| The burgundy. | an ice (cream). |

*Instead of* (followed by the participle pres. ing). *Already.*

*Anybody, somebody.*

*Nobody, no one.*

Do you want (*or* are you in want of) anything? I do not want anything. — Do you want a passport? Yes, Sir, I want a passport. — Does your father want any money? Yes, Sir, he wants some. — Will you drink some beer? I do not wish to drink any. — What do you wish to drink? I will drink some port wine and some sherry. — Do you wish to go home? I do not wish to go home; I wish to go to your brother's, instead of going home. — Whom have you seen? I have seen your uncle and <sup>1</sup> aunt. — Have you seen anybody? I have not seen anybody. — Is anybody come? Nobody is come. — Your uncle wants some claret, will the waiter bring him some?

**Etwas, irgend etwas. Was?**

**Nichts.**

**Nöthig haben** (governs the acc. or direct objective case, and the separable particle *nöthig* is placed at the end of the sentence, but in a compound tense it is placed before the past participle).

**Etwas Gutes. Nichts Gutes.**

|                 | Gen.   | Pl. |                 | Gen.   | Pl. |
|-----------------|--------|-----|-----------------|--------|-----|
| das Wasser,     | s,     | —   | der Champagner, | s,     |     |
| das Bier,       | es, s, | e.  | der Rheinwein,  | es, s, | e.  |
| der Aepfelwein, | es, s, | e.  | der Brantwein,  | es, s, | e.  |
| der Wein,       | es, s, | e.  | der Rum,        | s,     |     |
| der Portwein,   | es, s, | e.  | der Moselwein,  | es, s, | e.  |
| der Xereswein,  | es, s, | e.  | die Limonade,   | —      | n.  |
| der Bordeaux,   | s,     |     | der Punsch,     | es,    |     |
| der Burgunder,  | s,     |     | das Gefrorne,   | n,     | n.  |

*Anstatt* — *zu* (followed by the pres. of the infinitive). *Schon.*

Nom. *Jemand.* Gen. — *es.* } The other cases may remain the  
 Nom. *Niemand.* Gen. — *es.* } same as the nom., or take *en.*

## EXERCISE 16.

Haben Sie Etwas nöthig? Ich habe Nichts nöthig. — Haben Sie einen Pasß nöthig? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe einen Pasß nöthig. — Hat Ihr Vater Geld nöthig? Ja, mein Herr, er hat welches nöthig. — Wollen Sie Bier trinken? Ich will keines trinken. — Was haben Sie Lust zu trinken? Ich will Port- und Xereswein trinken. — Wollen Sie nach <sup>2</sup> Hause gehen? Ich will nicht nach <sup>3</sup> Hause gehen; ich habe Lust zu <sup>2</sup> Ihrem Bruder zu gehen, anstatt nach <sup>3</sup> Hause zu gehen. — Wen haben Sie gesehen? Ich habe Ihren Onkel und Ihre Tante gesehen. — Haben Sie Jemand gesehen? Ich habe Niemanden gesehen. — Ist Jemand gekommen? Niemand ist gekommen. — Ihr Onkel hat

<sup>1</sup> See Note 1, on Ellipsis, page 74.

<sup>2</sup> See Note 1, page 48.

## SECTION XVI.—SOMETHING, SOMEBODY, ANYTHING, ANYBODY, &c.

**Quelque chose. Quoi? Que?**  
**Ne — rien.<sup>1</sup>**

**Avoir besoin de** (governs the genitive case).

**Quelque chose de bon. Ne — rien de bon.**

|                      |                       |
|----------------------|-----------------------|
| l'eau (f).           | le vin de Champagne.  |
| la bière.            | le vin du Rhin.       |
| le cidre.            | l'eau-de-vie.         |
| le vin.              | le rum.               |
| le vin d'Oporto.     | le vin de Moselle.    |
| le vin de Xérès.     | la limonade.          |
| le vin de Bordeaux.  | le ponche.            |
| le vin de Bourgogne. | un sorbet, une glace. |

**Au lieu de** (followed by the pres. of the infinitive). *Déjà.*

**Quelqu'un.**

**Personne ne.<sup>2</sup> Ne — personne.**

**Qualche cosa. Alcune cosa. Che?**  
**Non — niente. Non — nulla.**

**Aver bisogno di** (governs the genitive case).

**Qualche cosa di buono. Non — niente di**

|                      |                    |
|----------------------|--------------------|
| l'acqua.             | il vino di Sciamp  |
| la birra.            | il vino di Reno.   |
| il sidro.            | l'acquavite.       |
| il vino.             | il rum.            |
| il vino d'Oporto.    | il vino di Mosella |
| il vino di Xeres.    | la limonata.       |
| il vino di Bordeaux. | il punch.          |
| il vino di Borgogna. | un sorbetto.       |

**In vece di, in luogo di** (followed by the infinitive). (

*Alcuno, qualcuno, qualcheduno.*

**Nessuno, niuno.<sup>4</sup> Non — nessuno, niuno.**

### EXERCISE 16.

Avez-vous besoin de quelque chose? Je n'ai besoin de rien.  
 — Avez-vous besoin d'un passe-port? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai  
 besoin d'un passe-port. — Votre père a-t-il besoin d'argent?  
 Oui, Monsieur, il en a besoin. — Voulez-vous boire de la  
 bière? Je ne veux pas en boire. — Que voulez-vous boire?  
 J'ai envie de boire du vin d'Oporto et de Xérès. — Voulez-  
 vous aller chez vous? Je ne veux pas aller chez moi, j'ai  
 envie d'aller chez votre frère, au lieu d'aller à la maison. —  
 Qui avez-vous vu? J'ai vu votre oncle et votre tante. —  
 Avez-vous vu quelqu'un? Je n'ai vu<sup>3</sup> personne. — Quelqu'un  
 est-il venu? Personne<sup>2</sup> n'est venu. — Votre oncle a besoin

Ha Ella bisogno di qualche cosa? Non ho bisogno  
 — Ha Ella bisogno d'un passaporto? Sì, Signo  
 sogno d' un passaporto. — Ha il di Lei padre bi  
 danaro? Sì, Signore, ne ha bisogno. — Vuol  
 della birra? Non ho desiderio di beverne. — Che  
 bere? Ho voglia di bere del vino d' Oporto e di X  
 Ha Ella desiderio di andare a casa? Non voglio  
 casa, ho desiderio di andare a casa del di Lei fi  
 vece di andare a casa. — Chi ha Ella veduto? Ho  
 di Lei zio e la di Lei zia. — Ha Ella veduto qualcuno

<sup>1</sup> When *personne* is in the nominative case it is followed by *ne*, otherwise *ne* precedes *personne*; the same occurs with *rien*. Notice that in French generally two words to express a negation. See Note 4, page 15. <sup>2</sup> When *niuno* or *nessuno* precede the verb, *non* is omitted. <sup>3</sup> When *alcun* a negative sentence it must be accompanied by *non*.

## EXERCISE 16.

The waiter has already taken him some. — Have you given anything good to the boy? I have given him nothing. — Does he want anything? Yes, he wants some money. — Do you want anything? Yes, I want something. — What do you want? I want a glass, a knife, a fork, and a spoon. — Has the master bought some good meat? Yes, Sir, he has bought some. — Has he bought any good lobsters? Yes, Sir, he has bought several good ones, and your brother has bought a few soles. — Do you wish to buy some good wine? Yes, I wish to buy some good, but I do not wish to buy any bad. — Have you lost anything? Yes, I have lost something; I have lost my passport, have you found it? I did not find it, but the postilion has found it. — Where is it? Here it is, Sir. — Where are my silk stockings? Here they are, Madam. — Have you seen my gloves? Here they are, Miss. — Will you have the kindness to send them home? Yes, Miss. — Has your sister written a letter? Yes, she has written one, and she has sent it to the post. — Has she received a letter? Yes, Sir, she has received one, and she has read it to her mother.

Bordeaux nöthig, will der Kellner ihm welchen bringen? Der Kellner hat ihm schon welchen gebracht. — Haben Sie dem Knaben etwas Gutes gegeben? Ich habe ihm Nichts gegeben. — Hat er Etwas nöthig? Ja, er hat Geld nöthig. — Haben Sie Etwas nöthig? Ja, ich habe Etwas nöthig. — Was haben Sie nöthig? Ich habe ein Glas, ein Messer, eine Gabel, und einen Löffel nöthig. — Hat der Hausherr gutes Fleisch gekauft? Ja, mein Herr, er hat welches gekauft. — Hat er gute Hummern gekauft? Ja, mein Herr, er hat einige guten gekauft, und Ihr Bruder hat einige Sohlen gekauft. — Wollen Sie guten Wein kaufen? Ja, ich will guten, aber keinen schlechten kaufen. — Haben Sie Etwas verloren? Ja, ich habe Etwas verloren; ich habe meinen Pass verloren, haben Sie ihn gefunden? Ich habe ihn nicht, sondern der Postillion hat ihn gefunden. — Wo ist er? Hier ist er, mein Herr. — Wo sind meine seidenen Strümpfe? Hier sind sie, Madame. — Haben Sie meine Handschuhe gesehen? Hier sind sie, mein Fräulein. — Wollen Sie die Güte haben, sie nach Hause zu schicken? Ja, mein Fräulein. — Hat Ihre Schwester einen Brief geschrieben? Ja, sie hat einen geschrieben, und hat ihn auf die Post geschickt. — Hat sie einen Brief erhalten? Ja, mein Herr, sie hat einen erhalten, und hat ihn ihrer Mutter gelesen.

The apple.  
The pear.  
The peach.  
The nectarine.  
The apricot.  
The melon.  
The pine-apple.  
The grape.  
The currant.  
The gooseberry.  
The mulberry.  
The raspberry.  
The strawberry.

the plum.  
the cherry.  
the medlar.  
the orange.  
the lemon.  
the raisin.  
the fig.  
the date.  
the olive.  
the almond.  
the chestnut.  
the walnut.  
the filbert.

|                    | Gen. | Pl. |
|--------------------|------|-----|
| der Apfel,         | n.   | —   |
| die Birne,         | n.   | —   |
| die Pfirsiche,     | n.   | —   |
| die Blutpfirsiche, | n.   | —   |
| die Aprikose,      | n.   | —   |
| die Melone,        | n.   | —   |
| die Ananas,        | n.   | —   |
| die Weintraube,    | n.   | —   |
| die Johannisbeere, | n.   | —   |
| die Stachelbeere,  | n.   | —   |
| die Maulbeere,     | n.   | —   |
| die Himbeere,      | n.   | —   |
| die Erdbeere,      | n.   | —   |

|                  | Gen. | Pl. |
|------------------|------|-----|
| die Pflaume,     | n.   | —   |
| die Kirsche,     | n.   | —   |
| die Mispel,      | n.   | —   |
| die Pomeranze,   | n.   | —   |
| die Citrone,     | n.   | —   |
| die Traube,      | n.   | —   |
| die Feige,       | n.   | —   |
| die Dattel,      | n.   | —   |
| die Olive,       | n.   | —   |
| die Mandel,      | n.   | —   |
| die Kastanie,    | n.   | —   |
| die Wallnus,     | see. | —   |
| die Lambertsnuß, | see. | —   |

\* Some writers use the termination *e* instead of *en* after *einige, etliche, mehrere, manche, viele, alle*; but, according to *Ac.*, the termination *e* is always used. <sup>3</sup> See Note 1, page 48.

## SECTION XVI.—SOMETHING, SOMEBODY, ANYTHING, ANYBODY,

### EXERCISE 16.

de Bordeaux, le garçon veut-il lui en apporter ? Le garçon lui en a déjà apporté. — Avez-vous donné quelque chose<sup>4</sup> de bon au garçon ? Je ne lui ai rien donné. — A-t-il besoin de quelque chose ? Oui, il a besoin d'argent. — Avez-vous besoin de quelque chose ? Oui, j'ai besoin de quelque chose. — De quoi avez-vous besoin ? J'ai besoin d'un verre, d'un couteau, d'une fourchette, et d'une cuillère. — Le maître a-t-il acheté de bonne viande ? Oui, Monsieur, il en a acheté. — A-t-il acheté de bons homards ? Oui, Monsieur, il en a acheté plusieurs, et votre frère a acheté quelques soles. — Voulez-vous acheter de bon vin ? Oui, je veux en acheter de bon, mais je ne veux pas en acheter de mauvais. — Avez-vous perdu quelque chose ? Oui, j'ai perdu quelque chose, j'ai perdu mon passe-port, l'avez-vous trouvé ? Je ne l'ai pas trouvé, mais le postillon l'a trouvé. — Où est-il ? Le voici, Monsieur. — Où sont mes bas<sup>5</sup> de soie ? Les voici, Madame. — Avez-vous vu mes gants ? Les voici, Mademoiselle. — Voulez-vous avoir la bonté de les envoyer à la maison ? Oui, Mademoiselle. — Votre sœur a-t-elle écrit une lettre ? Oui, elle en a écrit une, et elle l'a envoyée à la poste. — A-t-elle reçu une lettre ? Oui, Monsieur, elle en a reçu une, et elle l'a lue à sa mère.

la pomme.  
la poire.  
la pêche.  
le brugnon.  
un abricot.  
le melon.  
un ananas.  
le raisin.  
la groseille.  
la groseille verte.  
la mûre.  
la framboise.  
la fraise.

la prune.  
la cerise.  
la nèfle.  
une orange.  
le citron.  
le raisin.  
la figue.  
la datte.  
une olive.  
une amande.  
le marron.  
la noix.  
la noisette.

ho veduto alcuno. — È venuto alcuno ? Nes-  
— Il di Lei zio ha bisogno di vino di Bordeaux  
riere portargliene ? <sup>6</sup> Il cameriere gliene ha già po-  
Ella dato qualche cosa<sup>4</sup> di buono al ragazzo ? N-  
niente. — Ha egli bisogno di qualche cosa ?  
bisogno di danaro. — Ha Ella bisogno di qualc-  
ho bisogno di qualche cosa. — Di che ha Ella b-  
bisogno d' un bicchiere, d' un coltello, d' una forc-  
cucchiaio. — Ha comprato buona carne il padro-  
gnore, egli ne ha comprato. — Ha egli comprato bu-  
Sì, Signore, egli ne ha comprato parecchi buoni, ed i-  
tello ha comprato alcune sogliole. — Vuol Ella con-  
vino ? Sì, ho desiderio di comprarne di buono, i-  
voglia di comprarne di cattivo. — Avete perdu-  
cosa ? Sì, ho perduto qualche cosa, ho perduto il mio  
l' ha Ella trovato ? Io non l' ho trovato, ma l' ha  
postiglione. — Dove è ? Eccolo, Signore. — D-  
le mie calze<sup>7</sup> di seta ? Eccole, Signora. — Avete  
miei guanti ? Eccoli, Signorina. — Volete aver la  
mandarli a casa ? Sì, Signorina. — Ha scritto una  
di Lei sorella ? Sì, ella ne ha scritto una, e l' ha mai-  
posta. — Ha ella ricevuto una lettera ? Sì, Signor  
ha ricevuto una, e l' ha letta a sua madre.

la mela.  
la pera.  
la pesca.  
la pesca noca.  
l' albicocca (f.).  
il mellone, popone.  
l' ananasse (m.).  
l' uva (f.).  
il ribes.  
l' uva spina.  
la mora.  
il lampone.  
la fragola.

la susina.  
la ciriegia.  
la neppola.  
la melarancia.  
il limone.  
l' uva (f.).  
il fico.  
il dattero.  
l' uliva (f.).  
la mandorla.  
la castagna.  
la nocce.  
la nocciuola.

<sup>4</sup> *Quelque chose* and *rien* require *de* when followed by an adjective; *qualche cosa* and *niente* require *di* when followed by --

<sup>6</sup> See Note 4, page 45.      <sup>7</sup> See Note 2, page 58.

## SECTION XVII.—DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES.

|                            | All genders.             | Pl. all genders.       |
|----------------------------|--------------------------|------------------------|
| <i>Nom.</i>                | <i>This,</i>             | <i>these.</i>          |
| <i>Gen. or Poss.</i>       | <i>Of this,</i>          | <i>of these.</i>       |
| <i>Dat. or Ind. Obj.</i>   | <i>To this, or this,</i> | <i>to these.</i>       |
| <i>Acc. or Direct Obj.</i> | <i>This,</i>             | <i>these.</i>          |
| <i>Ab. or Ind. Obj.</i>    | <i>From, by this,</i>    | <i>from, by these.</i> |

In the same manner are varied and declined :—

| All genders.               | Pl. all genders. |
|----------------------------|------------------|
| <i>That</i> <sup>1</sup> , | <i>those.</i>    |

*The other,*                      *the others. Another.*

*The one and the other.*    *Both* (dual plural).

*Or. Neither — nor.*

*Where? Whither? There. Thither.*

**To carry it there.      To — into.**

|                     |               |
|---------------------|---------------|
| The blotting-paper. | the inkstand. |
| The paper.          | the note.     |
| The letter-paper.   | the address.  |
| The ink.            | the sheet.    |
| The pen.            | the quire.    |
| The pencil.         | the ream.     |
| The envelope.       | the book.     |
| The match.          | the volume.   |
| The taper.          | the page.     |
| The sealing-wax.    | the line.     |
| The wafer.          | the work.     |

|                        | m.                 | f.                 | n.                 | pl. m. f. n. |
|------------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------|
| <i>N. Dieser,</i>      | <i>diese,</i>      | <i>dieses,</i>     | <i>diese.</i>      |              |
| <i>G. Dieses,</i>      | <i>dieser,</i>     | <i>dieses,</i>     | <i>dieser.</i>     |              |
| <i>D. Diesem,</i>      | <i>dieser,</i>     | <i>diesem,</i>     | <i>diesen.</i>     |              |
| <i>Acc. Diesen,</i>    | <i>diese,</i>      | <i>dieses,</i>     | <i>diese.</i>      |              |
| <i>Ab. Von diesem,</i> | <i>von dieser,</i> | <i>von diesem,</i> | <i>von diesen.</i> |              |

In the same manner are varied and declined :—

| m.                          | f.           | n.            | pl. m. f. n. |
|-----------------------------|--------------|---------------|--------------|
| <i>Jener</i> <sup>1</sup> , | <i>jene,</i> | <i>jenes.</i> | <i>Jene.</i> |

*Der, die, das andere. Die andern. Ein anderer, &c.*

*Der, die, das eine* <sup>2</sup> *und der, die, das andere. Beide* <sup>2</sup>, *beides.*

All genders.  
Plur. *Die einen und die anderen.*

*Oder. Weder — noch.*

*Wo?* (repose) *Wohin?* (motion towards a place). *Da* (repose), *dahin* or *hin* (motion towards a place).

**Es dahin tragen. Auf** (acc. implying motion).

|                   | Gen.   | Pl. |                 | Gen.   | Pl. |
|-------------------|--------|-----|-----------------|--------|-----|
| das Löschpapier,  | es, s, | e.  | das Tintenglas, | es,    | er. |
| das Papier,       | es, s, | e.  | das Billet,     | es,    | e.  |
| das Briefpapier,  | es, s, | e.  | die Adresse,    | —      | n.  |
| die Dinte,        | —      | n.  | der Bogen,      | s,     | —   |
| die Feder,        | —      | n.  | das Buch,       | es, s, | er. |
| der Bleistift,    | es,    | e.  | das Ries,       | es,    | e.  |
| der Umschlag,     | es,    | e.  | das Buch,       | es,    | er. |
| das Zündhölzchen, | s,     | —   | der Band,       | es,    | e.  |
| die Wachskerze,   | —      | n.  | die Seite,      | —      | n.  |
| der Siegelack,    | es, s, | e.  | die Linie,      | —      | n.  |
| die Oblate,       | —      | n.  | das Werk,       | es, s, | e.  |

<sup>1</sup> *That* is also expressed by *dieser*, when two things of a different kind are spoken of. *Jener* is used to make a distinction between things of the same kind.

<sup>2</sup> Declined like an adjective preceded by the definite article. <sup>3</sup> When things of the same kind are spoken of, *both* is expressed by *beide* and by *beides*; when denoting things of a different kind, the cases are *beide*, -er, -en, -e; *beides*, -es, -em, -es.

## SECTION XVII.—DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES.

| masc. before a vowel<br>m. or silent h. f. |                                  | pl. m. f. |
|--------------------------------------------|----------------------------------|-----------|
| N.                                         | Ce, cet, cette, ces.             | ces.      |
| G.                                         | De ce, de cet, de cette, de ces. |           |
| D.                                         | À ce, à cet, à cette, à ces.     |           |
| Acc.                                       | Ce, cet, cette, ces.             |           |
| Ab.                                        | De ce, de cet, de cette, de ces. |           |

{

When two things of the same kind are spoken of, *ci* and *là* are always added after the nouns, to distinguish them; as, *cet homme-ci, cet homme-là*.

*Là* refers to the former or most remote, and *ci* to the latter or less distant object.

| m. & f.                                                                 | pl. m. & f.                    | m.                             |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>L'autre,</i>                                                         | <i>les autres.</i>             | <i>Un autre, &amp;c.</i>       |
| mas.                                                                    | fem.                           |                                |
| Sing. <i>L'un et l'autre.</i>                                           | <i>L'une et l'autre.</i>       | { Tous deux.<br>Tous les deux. |
| Pl. <i>Les uns et les autres.</i>                                       | <i>Les unes et les autres.</i> |                                |
| <i>Ou. Ne — ni — ni.</i>                                                |                                |                                |
| <i>Où? Y</i> (follows <i>l</i> , <i>les</i> , but precedes <i>en</i> ). |                                |                                |

### L'y porter.

### A.

|                                 |                                      |
|---------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| le papier brouillard.           | un encrier.                          |
| le papier.                      | le billet.                           |
| le papier à lettre.             | l' (une) adresse.                    |
| l'encre (f.).                   | la feuille.                          |
| la plume.                       | la main.                             |
| le crayon.                      | la rame.                             |
| une enveloppe.                  | le livre.                            |
| une allumette.                  | le volume.                           |
| la bougie.                      | la page.                             |
| la cire (d'Espagne) à cacheter. | la ligne.                            |
| le pain à cacheter.             | l' (un) ouvrage; œuvre. <sup>4</sup> |

| m.             | f.         | pl. m.     | pl. f.    |
|----------------|------------|------------|-----------|
| N. Questo,     | questa,    | questi,    | queste    |
| G. Di questo,  | di questa, | di questi, | di queste |
| D. A questo,   | a questa,  | a questi,  | a queste  |
| Acc. Questo,   | questa,    | questi,    | queste    |
| Ab. Da questo, | da questa, | da questi, | da queste |

In the same manner are varied and declined:—

| m.                                                   | f.                        | pl. m.            | pl. f.           |
|------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------|-------------------|------------------|
| <i>Quello<sup>4</sup>,</i>                           | <i>quella,</i>            | <i>quelli,</i>    | <i>quelle.</i>   |
| m.                                                   | f.                        | pl. m.            | pl. f.           |
| <i>L'altro,</i>                                      | <i>l'altra.</i>           | <i>Gli altri,</i> | <i>le altre.</i> |
| <i>Un altro,</i>                                     | <i>un'altra.</i>          | <i>Gli altri,</i> | <i>le altre.</i> |
| mas.                                                 | fem.                      |                   |                  |
| <i>L'uno e l'altro.</i>                              | <i>L'una e l'altra.</i>   | <i>Ambidue, e</i> |                  |
| <i>Gli uni e gli altri.</i>                          | <i>Le une e le altre.</i> |                   |                  |
| <i>O. Non — nè — nè.</i>                             |                           |                   |                  |
| <i>Dove? or ove? Vi or ve. Ci or ce.<sup>5</sup></i> |                           |                   |                  |

### Portaracelo.

### A.

|                             |                       |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------|
| la carta sugante.           | il calamaio.          |
| la carta.                   | il biglietto.         |
| la carta da lettera.        | l' indirizzo.         |
| l' inchiostro.              | la foglia, il foglio  |
| la penna.                   | il quaternio.         |
| il pennello, lapis.         | la risma.             |
| la sopraccoperta.           | il libro.             |
| lo zolfanello.              | il volume.            |
| la candela di cera.         | la pagina.            |
| la cera (di Spagna), lacca. | la linea, riga.       |
| l' ostia (f.).              | l' opera (f.), il lil |

<sup>4</sup> *Quello* changes into *quel* before nouns beginning with a consonant, but never before *s* followed by another consonant, and refers to an object distant person who speaks and from the person spoken to. *Questo* refers to an object near to the person who speaks. *Cotesto, cotesta*, refers to an object near person spoken to. <sup>5</sup> *Ce* and *ve* are joined to the infinitive, having previously cut off the final *e*. See Note 3, p. 48, and Note 4, p. 48. <sup>6</sup> See *Corso* 18

## EXERCISE 17.

Have you read this book? Yes, Sir, I have read it. — Do you wish to send this letter to the post? Yes, Madam, I wish to send it (there). — Have you tasted this bread? No, Sir, I have not tasted it. — Is it good? Yes, Sir, it is good. — Waiter, have you got any new bread? No, Sir, I have none. — Have you any stale bread? Yes, Sir, we have some. — Will you have the kindness to lend my brother your gloves and boots? Yes, Sir, I will lend them to him. — Have you seen these gloves? I have not seen them. — Have you seen those shoes? Yes, Sir, I have seen them. — Do you want these shoes and these handkerchiefs? I do not want these shoes, but I want these handkerchiefs. — Will you buy some paper and some pens? Yes, I wish to buy some. — Will you take this paper, these pens, and that ink, to the hotel? Yes, Sir, I will take them there. — Will your father lend me this book and that newspaper? Yes, Sir, he will lend them (to) you. — Have you read that book? No, Sir, I have not read that book, but I have read this note. — I have received this note from your father, will you have the kindness to take it to your brother? Yes, Sir. — Have you seen this beautiful book? I have not seen it. — Where did you buy it? I bought it at the bookseller's. — Where do you wish to send it? I will send it to your uncle. — Is he at home? Yes, Sir, he is at home. — Have you seen him? No, I have not seen him, but the banker has seen him. — Where did he see him? He saw him at your brother's house. — Will you have the kindness (or be so kind as) to send these newspapers and letters to the post? Yes, I will send them (there). —

Haben Sie dieses Buch gelesen? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe es gelesen. — Wollen Sie diesen Brief auf<sup>1</sup> die Post senden? Ja, Madame, ich will ihn dahin<sup>1</sup> senden. — Haben Sie dieses Brod gekostet? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe es nicht gekostet. — Ist es gut? Ja, mein Herr, es ist gut. — Kellner, haben Sie frisches Brod? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe keines.<sup>2</sup> — Haben Sie trocknes Brod? Ja, mein Herr, wir haben welches. — Wollen Sie die Güte haben, meinem Bruder Ihre Handschuhe und Stiefel zu leihen? Ja, mein Herr, ich will sie ihm leihen. — Haben Sie diese Handschuhe gesehen? Ich habe sie nicht gesehen. — Haben Sie diese<sup>3</sup> Schuhe gesehen? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe sie gesehen. — Haben Sie diese Schuhe und Schnupftücher nöthig? Ich habe nicht diese Schuhe, sondern diese Schnupftücher nöthig. — Wollen Sie Papier und Federn kaufen? Ja, ich will welche kaufen. — Wollen Sie dieses<sup>4</sup> Papier, diese<sup>5</sup> Federn, und diese<sup>6</sup> Dinte nach dem Gasthofe tragen? Ja, mein Herr, ich will sie dahin<sup>1</sup> tragen. — Will Ihr Vater mir dieses Buch und diese Zeitung leihen? Ja, mein Herr, er will sie Ihnen leihen. — Haben Sie dieses Buch gelesen? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe nicht dieses Buch, sondern dieses Billet gelesen. — Ich habe von Ihrem Vater dieses Billet erhalten, wollen Sie die Güte haben, es zu Ihrem Bruder zu tragen? Ja, mein Herr. — Haben Sie dieses<sup>7</sup> schöne Buch gesehen? Ich habe es nicht gesehen. — Wo<sup>1</sup> haben Sie es gekauft? Ich habe es bei<sup>8</sup> dem Buchhändler gekauft. — Wohin<sup>1</sup> haben Sie Lust es zu schicken? Ich will es zu<sup>9</sup> Ihrem Onkel schicken. — Ist er zu<sup>9</sup> Hause? Ja, mein Herr, er ist zu Hause. — Haben Sie ihn gesehen? Nein, ich habe ihn nicht gesehen, aber der Geldwechsler hat ihn gesehen. — Wo<sup>1</sup> hat er ihn gesehen? Er hat ihn bei Ihrem Bruder gesehen. — Wollen Sie die Güte haben, diese Zeitungen und diese Briefe auf die Post zu senden? Ja, ich will sie<sup>1</sup> dahin

<sup>1</sup> Auf, implying motion, governs the accusative case; dahin implies motion, and da repose, corresponding with wohin? and wo? <sup>2</sup> See Note 1, page 26.

## SECTION XVII.—DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES.

### EXERCISE 17.

Avez-vous lu ce livre ? Oui, Monsieur, je l'ai lu. — Voulez-vous envoyer cette lettre à la poste ? Oui, Madame, je veux l'y envoyer. — Avez-vous goûté ce pain ? Non, Monsieur, je ne l'ai pas goûté. — Est-il bon ? Oui, Monsieur, il est bon. — Garçon, avez-vous du pain tendre ? Non, Monsieur, je n'en ai pas. — Avez-vous du pain rassis ? Oui, Monsieur, nous en avons. — Voulez-vous avoir la bonté de prêter vos gants et vos bottes à mon frère ? Oui, Monsieur, je veux les lui prêter. — Avez-vous vu ces gants-ci ? Je ne les ai pas vus. — Avez-vous vu ces souliers-là ? Oui, Monsieur, je les ai vus. — Avez-vous besoin de ces souliers-ci, mais j'ai besoin de ces mouchoirs-là. — Voulez-vous acheter du papier et des plumes ? Oui, j'ai envie d'en acheter. — Voulez-vous porter ce papier, ces plumes et cette encre à l'hôtel ? Oui, Monsieur, je veux les y porter. — Votre père veut-il me prêter ce livre et ce journal ? Oui, Monsieur, il veut vous les prêter. — Avez-vous lu ce livre ? Non, Monsieur, je n'ai pas lu ce livre-là, mais j'ai lu ce billet. — J'ai reçu ce billet de Monsieur votre père, voulez-vous avoir la bonté de le porter chez votre frère ? Oui, Monsieur. — Avez-vous vu ce beau livre ? Je ne l'ai pas vu. — Où l'avez-vous acheté ? Je l'ai acheté chez le libraire. — Où voulez-vous l'envoyer ? Je veux l'envoyer chez votre oncle. — Est-il chez lui ? Oui, Monsieur, il est chez lui. — L'avez-vous vu ? Non, je ne l'ai pas vu, mais le banquier l'a vu. — Où l'a-t-il vu ? Il l'a vu chez votre frère. — Voulez-vous avoir la bonté d'envoyer ces journaux et ces lettres à la poste ? Oui, je veux les y envoyer. — Avez-vous vu ce nouvel ouvrage ?

Ha Ella letto questo libro ? Sì, Signore, l'ho letto. — V Ella mandare questa lettera alla posta ? Sì, Signora, voglia di mandarcela.\* — Ha Ella gustato questo pane ? Signore, non l'ho gustato. — È buono ? Sì, Signore, è buo — Cameriere, avete del pan fresco ? No, Signore, non ne — Avete del pan rifatto ? Sì, Signore, ne abbiamo. — Vuol Ella aver la bontà di prestare i di Lei guanti ed i di stivali a mio fratello ? Sì, Signore, ho voglia di prestargli — Ha Ella veduto questi guanti ? Non li ho veduti. — Ha Ella veduto coteste scarpe ? Sì, Signore, le ho vedute. — Ha Ella bisogno di queste scarpe o di questi fazzoletti ? No, ho bisogno di queste scarpe, ma ho bisogno di questi fazzoletti. — Vuol Ella comprare della carta e delle penne ? Sì, voglia di comprarne. — Vuol Ella portare all'albergo que carta, queste penne, e quell'inchiostro ? Sì, Signore, voglio p tarceli. — Vuol il di Lei padre prestarmi questo libro e cote gazzetta ? Sì, Signore, vuol prestarglieli. — Ha Ella le questo libro ? No, Signore, non ho letto cotesto libro, ma letto questo biglietto. — Ho ricevuto questo biglietto dal Lei padre, vuol Ella aver la bontà di portarlo dal di Lei fratello Sì, Signore. — Ha Ella veduto questo bel libro ? Non l' veduto. — Dove l'ha Ella comprato ? L'ho comprato al libbraio. — Ove vuol Ella mandarlo ? Ho voglia di mandar dal di Lei zio. — È egli in casa ? Sì, Signore, è in casa. — L'ha Ella veduto ? Non l'ho veduto, ma il banchiere l'ha veduto. — Dove l'ha egli veduto ? Egli l'ha veduto in casa del Lei fratello. — Vuol Ella aver la bontà di mandare queste gazzette e queste lettere alla posta ? Sì, voglio mandarcela.\*

\* See Note 1, page 88.

\* See Note 5, page 103.

\* *Quello* loses its last vowel at pleasure before any vowel but *o*, in which case it always takes an apostroph

and its plural is *quegli*. \* See Note 3, page 48.

\* See Note 4, page 45.

\* See Notes 1, 2, 4, 5, pages 48, 49, and Notes 1, 2, 5, pages 72, 73.



## EXERCISE 17.

Have you seen this<sup>1</sup> new work? I have not seen this (one)<sup>1</sup> but that (one).<sup>1</sup> — Has your brother read these new works? He has not read these, but those. — Did you read this book or that?<sup>1</sup> I have read the one<sup>2</sup> and the other. I have read them both. — Have you a mind to buy these books or those? I have a mind to buy these and those. I have a mind to buy the one<sup>2</sup> and the other. — Will you read this work? No, I have a mind to read the other. — Will your friend read these works or those? He will read neither these nor those. He will read neither the one<sup>2</sup> nor the other.

## FUTURE TENSE.

|                           |        |                               |        |
|---------------------------|--------|-------------------------------|--------|
| Shall I have <sup>4</sup> | } had? | you will have, thou wilt have | } had. |
| Wilt thou have            |        | I shall have                  |        |
| Will he have              |        | he will have                  |        |
| Will she have             |        | she will have                 |        |
| Shall we have             |        | you will have, we shall have  |        |
| Shall you have            |        | I shall have, we shall have   |        |
| Will they have            |        | they will have                |        |

The diamond.  
The emerald.  
The ruby.  
The topaz.

the pearl.  
the sapphire.  
the turquoise.  
the coral.

senden. — Haben Sie dieses<sup>1</sup> neue Werk gesehen? Ich habe nicht dieses<sup>1</sup>, sondern jenes<sup>1</sup> gesehen. — Hat Ihr Bruder diese neuen Werke gelesen? Er hat nicht diese, sondern jene gelesen. — Haben Sie dieses oder jenes<sup>1</sup> Buch gelesen? Ich habe dieses und jenes gelesen. Ich habe beide<sup>2</sup> gelesen. — Haben Sie Lust, diese oder jene Bücher zu kaufen? Ich habe Lust, diese und jene zu kaufen. Ich habe Lust, beide zu kaufen. — Wollen Sie dieses Werk lesen? Nein, ich habe Lust, das andere zu lesen. — Will Ihr Freund diese oder jene Werke lesen? Er will weder diese noch jene lesen. Er will weder die<sup>2</sup> einen noch die andern lesen.

## FUTURE TENSE.

|                        |                  |                                    |                  |
|------------------------|------------------|------------------------------------|------------------|
| Werde ich              | } *gehabt haben? | Sie werden, ihr werdet, du wirst   | } *gehabt haben. |
| Wirst du <sup>4</sup>  |                  | ich werde                          |                  |
| Wird er                |                  | er wird                            |                  |
| Wird sie               |                  | sie wird                           |                  |
| Werden wir             |                  | Sie werden, ihr werdet, wir werden |                  |
| Werden Sie, werdet Ihr |                  | ich werde, wir werden              |                  |
| Werden sie             |                  | sie werden                         |                  |

der Diamant,  
der Smaragd,  
der Rubin,  
der Topas,

Gen. Pl.  
en, en.  
es, e.  
es, s.  
es, e.

die Perle,  
der Sapphir,  
der Türkis,  
die Koralle,

Gen. Pl.  
— n.  
s, e.  
es, e.  
— n.

<sup>1</sup> Take care to notice the difference between demonstrative adjectives and demonstrative pronouns, particularly in French. See Section XVIII.  
<sup>2</sup> See Note 3, page 102.

<sup>3</sup> Notice that in English the one and the other is used for the singular and plural, but not so in German, French, and Italian. Both

# SECTION XVII.—DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES.—FUTURE TENSE.

## EXERCISE 17.

Je n'ai pas vu celui-ci<sup>1</sup> mais celui-là.<sup>1</sup> — Votre frère a-t-il lu ces<sup>1</sup> nouveaux ouvrages? Il n'a pas lu ceux-ci<sup>1</sup>, mais ceux-là.<sup>1</sup> — Avez-vous lu ce livre-ci ou celui-là? J'ai lu l'un et l'autre.<sup>2</sup> Je les ai lus tous les deux. — Avez-vous envie d'acheter ces livres-ci ou ceux-là? J'ai envie d'acheter ceux-ci et ceux-là. J'ai envie d'acheter les uns et<sup>3</sup> les autres. — Voulez-vous lire cet ouvrage-ci? Non, j'ai envie de lire l'autre. — Votre ami veut-il lire ces<sup>3</sup> œuvres-ci ou celles-là? Il ne veut lire ni celles-ci, ni celles-là. Il ne veut lire ni les unes ni les autres.<sup>4</sup>

### FUTURE TENSE.

|                      |        |                         |        |
|----------------------|--------|-------------------------|--------|
| Aurai-je             | } ou } | vous aurez, tu auras    | } ou } |
| Auras-tu             |        | j'aurai                 |        |
| Aura-t-il            |        | il aura                 |        |
| Aura-t-elle          |        | elle aura               |        |
| Aurons-nous          |        | vous aurez, nous aurons |        |
| Aurez-vous           | } ou } | j'aurai, nous aurons    | } ou } |
| Auront-ils, or elles |        | ils or elles auront     |        |

le diamant.  
l' (une) émeraude.  
le rubis.  
la topaze.

la perle.  
le saphir.  
la turquoise.  
le corail.

Ha Ella veduto questo<sup>1</sup> nuovo libro? Non ho veduto ma ho veduto<sup>1</sup> quello. — Ha il di Lei fratello letto nuove opere (or questi nuovi libri)? Egli non ha letto ma egli ha letto quelli.<sup>1</sup> — Ha Ella letto questo libro o Ho letto l' uno e l' altro.<sup>2</sup> Ho letto ambedue. — Ha El derio di comprare questi libri o quelli? Ho desiderio di comprare questi e quelli. Ho desiderio di comprare gli<sup>3</sup> un altri. — Vuol Ella leggere questo libro? No, ho desid leggere l' altro. — Ha il di Lei amico desiderio di leggere opere o quelle? Egli non vuol leggere nè queste nè Egli non vuol leggere nè le une nè le altre.<sup>4</sup>

### FUTURE TENSE.

|                                         |            |                                         |
|-----------------------------------------|------------|-----------------------------------------|
| Avrò (io)                               | } avuto? } | Ella avrà, (voi) avrete, (t avrai       |
| Avrai (tu)                              |            | (io) avrò                               |
| Avrà (egli)                             |            | (egli) avrà                             |
| Avrà (ella)                             |            | (ella) avrà                             |
| Avremo (noi)                            |            | Elleno avranno, (voi) avre (noi) avremo |
| Avrà Ella, avrete (voi), avranno elleno | } avuto? } | (io) avrò, (noi) avremo                 |
| Avranno (eglino or elleno)              |            | eglino (or elleno) avranno              |

il diamante.  
lo smeraldo.  
il rubino.  
il topazio.

la perla.  
lo zaffiro.  
la turchina.  
il corallo.

is a dual plural. <sup>4</sup> See the difference between *shall* and *will*, Grammatical Definitions, page 6. <sup>5</sup> See Section III., Gender of Nouns, page 23. <sup>6</sup> In the simple future is formed as in English, but in the compound tense the past participle *gêhât* is placed between the auxiliaries *werden* and *haben*.

## SECTION XVIII.—DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

| Singular.                 | Pl. all genders. | Sing. & Plur.      |
|---------------------------|------------------|--------------------|
| <b>This one, or this,</b> | <b>these,</b>    | <b>the latter.</b> |
| <b>That one, or that,</b> | <b>those,</b>    | <b>the former.</b> |

These demonstrative pronouns are declined like the demonstrative adjectives with the assistance of the prepositions *of*, *to*, *from*, *by*. See Section XVII.

**This, that** (used indefinitely), like *it*, or *'t*.

**When? To-day, to-morrow, yesterday.**

*Acc.* **The man's.**

**To** (meaning purpose), with the infinitive.

*Acc.* **Which? what?** (combined with a noun).

| m.             | f.            | n.             | pl. m. f. n.  |                                    |
|----------------|---------------|----------------|---------------|------------------------------------|
| <b>Dieser,</b> | <b>diese,</b> | <b>dieses,</b> | <b>diese.</b> | [ See Declension,<br>Section XVII. |
| <b>Jener,</b>  | <b>jene,</b>  | <b>jenes,</b>  | <b>jene.</b>  |                                    |

The definite article *der* may also be used for the above, but it is then declined as follows:—

| m.                     | f.          | n.           | pl. m. f. n. |
|------------------------|-------------|--------------|--------------|
| <i>N.</i> Der,         | die,        | das,         | die.         |
| <i>G.</i> Dessen, des, | deren, der, | dessen, des, | derer, der.  |
| <i>D.</i> Dem,         | der,        | dem,         | denen, den.  |
| <i>Acc.</i> Den,       | die,        | das,         | die.         |
| <i>Ab.</i> Von dem,    | von der,    | von dem,     | von denen.   |

The compound pronouns *derjenige*, *derselbe* are declined like adjectives preceded by the definite article; as, *N.* *derjenige*, *G.* *desjenigen*, *D.* *demjenigen*, &c. See Section XX.

**Dies, das** (used like *es*<sup>1</sup> in an indefinite sense, *m.* and *f.*, *sing.* and *plur.*).

**Wann? Heute, morgen, gestern.**

*Acc.* **Den, die, das, die, des Mannes.**

**Um — zu** (for the purpose *of*, in order *to*), with the infinitive.

*m.* *f.* *n.* *pl. m. f. n.*  
*Acc.* **Welchen? welche? welches? welche?**

## EXERCISE 18.

Is it (*or is that*) good? No, Sir, it is not (*or 'tis not, or that is not good*); but this is good.—Have you seen the boy's book? I have not seen it. I have seen the man's.—Have you seen the man or the boy? I have seen neither the man nor the boy.

Ist das gut?<sup>1</sup> Nein, mein Herr, das ist nicht gut, aber dies ist gut.—Haben Sie das Buch des Knaben gesehen? Ich habe es nicht gesehen. Ich habe das des Mannes gesehen.—Haben Sie den Mann oder den Knaben gesehen? Ich habe weder den

<sup>1</sup> The adjective is undeclined when it stands as a predicate.

<sup>2</sup> When governed by a preposition these words are changed into *da*, and combined with the preposition in the following manner: *damit, dafür*; when the preposition begins with a vowel, *r* is inserted, as, *daran, darüber*. *Dieser* and *Jener* are not in the dative case when unaccompanied by a noun, the preposition *von* with the dative is then used; as, *Dieses Tuch ist gut, aber die Farbe von jenem ist schlecht*. but I do not like the colour of that.

## SECTION XVIII.—DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

| m.        | f.        | pl. m.   | f.         |
|-----------|-----------|----------|------------|
| Celui-ci, | celle-ci, | ceux-ci, | celles-ci. |
| Celui-là, | celle-là, | ceux-là, | celles-là. |

[Never combined with a noun. See Note 1, p. 106.]

These demonstrative pronouns are declined with the prepositions *de* and *à*.

**Ceci, cela', ce, c'** (used indefinitely).

[*Ce* combined with the verb *être* requires the verb in the singular, unless the verb be followed by the third person plural; *ce* also supplies the place of *il* or *elle* when the verb *être* is followed by *un*, or a noun accompanied with the definite article; but when *être* is followed by an adjective, or a noun taken adjectively, *il* or *elle* must be used. See Section on Personal Pronouns, page 135.]

**Quand? Aujourd'hui, demain, hier.**

*Acc.* **Celui, celle, ceux, celles** de l'homme.

**Pour** (meaning purpose, in order to), with the infinitive.

| m.                                               | f. | pl. m. | f. |
|--------------------------------------------------|----|--------|----|
| <i>Acc.</i> <b>Quel? quelle? quels? quelles?</b> |    |        |    |

C'est-il bon? Non, Monsieur, cela (*or ce*) n'est pas bon, mais ceci est bon.—Avez-vous vu le livre du garçon? Je ne l'ai pas vu. J'ai vu celui de l'homme.—Avez-vous vu l'homme ou le garçon? Je n'ai vu ni l'homme ni le garçon.—Quel livre

| m.      | f.      | pl. m.    | f.      |
|---------|---------|-----------|---------|
| Questo, | questa, | questi,   | queste. |
| Quello, | quella, | { quelli, | quelle. |
|         |         | { quegli, |         |

[*Cotesto, a*, an adject pronoun, is used a thing person s]

These pronouns are declined like the demonstrative s with the prepositions *di*, *a*, *da*. See Section XVII.

The following apply to persons only:—

| m.      | f.                    | pl. m. f.                    |
|---------|-----------------------|------------------------------|
| Costui, | costei, <i>this</i> , | costoro, <i>these</i> .      |
| Colui,  | colei, <i>that</i> ,  | coloro, <i>those</i> .       |
| m.      | { <i>the one</i> ,    | pl. m.                       |
| Questi, | { <i>this (one)</i> , | quegli, { <i>the other</i> . |
|         |                       | { <i>that (one)</i> .        |

**Ciò, queste, quello** (used indefinitely).

**Quando? Oggi, domani, ieri.**

*Acc.* **Quello, quella, quelli, quelle** dell' u

**Per** (for the purpose of, in order to), with the infinitiv

| m. & f.                                                   | pl. m. & f. |
|-----------------------------------------------------------|-------------|
| <i>Acc.</i> <b>Quale? (qual?) or che? quali? '(qual?)</b> |             |

### EXERCISE 18.

C'est-il bon? Non, Monsieur, cela (*or ce*) n'est pas bon, mais ceci est bon.—Avez-vous vu le livre du garçon? Je ne l'ai pas vu. J'ai vu celui de l'homme.—Avez-vous vu l'homme ou le garçon? Je n'ai vu ni l'homme ni le garçon.—Quel livre

È buono quello (*or è ciò buono*)? No, Signore, quell non è buono, ma questo è buono.—Ha Ella veduto il ragazzo? Non l'ho veduto. Ho veduto quello dell' u Ha Ella (*or avete*) veduto l' uomo o il ragazzo? Non

<sup>3</sup> *Cà*, the contraction of *cela*, is only used in the familiar style.

<sup>4</sup> *Quale* drops the final *e* and takes an apostrophe before nouns beginning with the singular, but never in the plural; it also drops the final *e* without taking an apostrophe before nouns beginning with a consonant. *Quali* may also into *qual*.

## •EXERCISE 18.

—Which book will you buy? I will buy this one and that one, to send them home.—Have you (got) a rump of beef? No, Sir, I have not (got) one.—When shall you have one? I shall have one to-day.—Shall you have time to send it to my house? Yes, Sir.—When? To-morrow.—Have you a mind to buy this book or that one? I wish to buy this one and that one.—Do you want these gloves or those? I want neither these nor those.—Which gloves do you want? I want these and those.—Which gloves does your brother want? He wants mine and his.—When shall he have them? He shall have them to-morrow.—Will you take this letter and that note to the post-office? Yes, Madam, I will take them there.—When shall you have time to take them there? I shall have time to take them there to-day.—Will you lend me some money to buy some paper and some ink? Yes, Sir, I will lend you some to buy some.—When will you lend me some? I will lend you some to-day.—Do you wish to taste this white bread? No, I will taste the brown bread.—Where are my silk stockings? Here they are.—When shall you have time to send these and those to the tailor? I shall have time to send them to his house to-morrow.

|              |                  |
|--------------|------------------|
| The gold.    | the granite.     |
| The silver.  | the tin.         |
| The platina. | the zinc.        |
| The copper.  | the steel.       |
| The iron.    | the pewter.      |
| The lead.    | the brass.       |
| The bronze.  | the quicksilver. |
| The marble.  | the coal.        |

Mann noch den Knaben gesehen.—Welches Buch wollen Sie kaufen? Ich will dieses und jenes kaufen, um sie nach Hause zu senden.—Haben Sie einen Hintertheil von einem Ochsen? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe keinen.—Wann werden Sie einen haben? Ich werde heute einen haben.—Werden Sie Zeit haben, ihn zu mir zu senden? Ja, mein Herr.—Wann? Morgen.—Haben Sie Lust, dieses oder jenes<sup>1</sup> Buch zu kaufen? Ich habe Lust, dieses und jenes zu kaufen.—Haben Sie diese oder jene Handschuhe nöthig? Ich habe weder diese noch jene nöthig.—Welche Handschuhe haben Sie nöthig? Ich habe diese und jene nöthig.—Welche Handschuhe hat Ihr Bruder nöthig? Er hat die meinigen und dieseinigen nöthig.—Wann wird er sie haben? Er wird sie morgen haben.—Wollen Sie diesen Brief und jenes Billet auf die Post tragen? Ja, Madame, ich will sie dahin tragen.—Wann werden Sie Zeit haben, sie dahin zu tragen? Ich werde heute Zeit haben, sie dahin zu tragen.—Wollen Sie mir Geld leihen, um Papier und Dinte zu kaufen? Ja, ich will Ihnen welches leihen, um davon zu kaufen.—Wann wollen Sie mir welches leihen? Ich will Ihnen heute welches leihen.—Haben Sie Lust dieses Weiszbrod zu kosten? Nein, ich habe Lust das Schwarzbrod zu kosten.—Wo sind meine seidenen Strümpfe? Hier sind sie.—Wann<sup>2</sup> werden Sie Zeit haben, diese und jene zu dem Schneider zu schicken? Ich werde morgen<sup>2</sup> Zeit haben, sie zu ihm zu schicken.

|              | Gen.   | Pl. |                  | Gen.   | Pl. |
|--------------|--------|-----|------------------|--------|-----|
| das Gold,    | es, s. |     | der Granit,      | es, s. | e.  |
| das Blech,   | s.     |     | das Blech,       | es, s. | e.  |
| die Platina, | —      |     | der Zink,        | es, s. | —   |
| das Kupfer,  | s.     |     | der Stahl,       | es, s. | e.  |
| das Eisen,   | s.     |     | das Zinn,        | s.     |     |
| das Blei,    | es, s. |     | das Messing,     | es, s. |     |
| die Bronze,  | —      |     | das Quecksilber, | s.     |     |
| der Marmor,  | s.     |     | die Kohle,       | —      | n.  |

<sup>1</sup> See Note 1, page 102.<sup>2</sup> The prepositions must be repeated before each noun in French and Italian.

## SECTION XVIII.—DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

### EXERCISE 18.

voulez-vous acheter ? J'achèterai celui-ci et celui-là, pour les envoyer chez moi. — Avez-vous une culotte de bœuf ? Non, Monsieur, je n'en ai pas. — Quand en aurez-vous une ? J'en aurai une aujourd'hui. — Aurez-vous le temps de l'envoyer chez moi ? Oui, Monsieur. — Quand ? Demain. — Avez-vous envie d'acheter ce livre-ci ou celui-là ? J'ai envie d'acheter celui-ci et celui-là. — Avez-vous besoin de ces gants-ci ou de ceux-là ? Je n'ai besoin ni de ceux-ci ni de ceux-là. — De quels gants avez-vous besoin ? J'ai besoin de ceux-ci et de ceux-là. — De quels gants votre frère a-t-il besoin ? Il a besoin des miens et des siens. — Quand les aura-t-il ? Il les aura demain. — Voulez-vous porter ce billet et cette lettre à la poste ? Oui, Madame, je veux les y<sup>s</sup> porter. — Quand aurez-vous le temps de les y<sup>s</sup> porter ? J'aurai le temps de les y<sup>s</sup> porter aujourd'hui. — Voulez-vous me prêter de l'argent pour acheter du papier et de l'encre ? Oui, Monsieur, je veux vous en prêter pour en acheter. — Quand voulez-vous m'en prêter ? Je veux vous en prêter aujourd'hui. — Voulez-vous goûter ce pain blanc ? Non, je veux goûter le pain bis. — Où sont mes bas de soie ? Les voici. — Quand aurez-vous le temps d'envoyer ceux-ci et ceux-là chez le tailleur ? J'aurai le temps de les envoyer chez lui demain.

l'or (*m.*).  
l'argent (*m.*).  
le platina.  
le cuivre.  
le fer.  
le plomb.  
le bronze.  
le marbre.

le granit.  
le fer blanc.  
le zinc.  
l'acier (*m.*).  
l'étain (*m.*).  
le laiton.  
le vif argent.  
le charbon.

nè l' uomo nè il ragazzo. — Qual libro vuol Ella c  
Voglio comprare questo e quello, per mandarli a c  
Avete una groppa di manzo ? No, Signore, non ne  
Quando ne avrete una ? Ne avrò una oggi. — /  
tempo di mandarla a casa mia ? Sì, Signore. —  
Domani. — Ha Ella desiderio di comprare quest  
quello ? Ho desiderio di comprare questo e quello.  
Ella bisogno di <sup>2</sup> questi guanti o di <sup>2</sup> quelli ? Non ho b  
di <sup>2</sup> questi nè di <sup>2</sup> quelli. — Di quali guanti ha Ella  
Ho bisogno di questi e di quelli. — Di quali guanti h  
fratello bisogno ? Ha bisogno dei miei e dei suoi. —  
li avrà egli ? Egli li avrà domani. — Vuol Ella port  
lettera e cotesto biglietto alla posta ? Sì, Signora, vogl  
celi. — Quando avrà Ella tempo di portarceli ? <sup>4</sup> A  
di portarceli oggi. — Vuol Ella prestarmi <sup>4</sup> danaro per  
della carta e dell' inchiostro ? Sì, Signore, voglio pre  
per comprarne. — Quando vuol Ella prestarmene ?  
prestargliene oggi. — Vuol Ella gustare questo pa  
No, ho desiderio di gustare il pan bigio. — Dove so  
calze di seta ? Eccole quà. — Quando avrà Ella tem  
dare queste e quelle dal sartore ? Avrò tempo di manda  
sua domani.

l' oro.  
l' argento.  
la platina.  
il rame.  
il ferro.  
il piombo.  
il bronzo.  
il marmo.

il granito.  
la latta.  
lo zinco.  
l' acciaio.  
lo stagno.  
l' ottone (*m.*).  
l' argento vivo.  
il carbone.

<sup>2</sup> Y follows *r*, *lez*, but precedes *en*.

<sup>4</sup> See Note 4, page 45.

<sup>5</sup> See Notes 5 and 6, page 111.

## SECTION XIX.—RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

|                      | For persons.<br>m. & f., sing. & plur. | For things.      | For persons & things.       |
|----------------------|----------------------------------------|------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>Nom.</i>          | Who,                                   | which,           | that.                       |
| <i>Gen. or Poss.</i> | Of whom, whose,                        | of which, whose, | that of. <sup>1</sup>       |
| <i>D. or Ind. O.</i> | To whom,                               | to which,        | that to. <sup>1</sup>       |
| <i>Ac. or Di. O.</i> | Whom,                                  | which,           | that.                       |
| <i>Ab. or In. O.</i> | From, by whom,                         | from which,      | that from, by. <sup>1</sup> |

Infinitive.  
**To speak,**

Past part.  
**spoken.**

|                    |                |
|--------------------|----------------|
| The mountain.      | the valley.    |
| The country.       | the house.     |
| The field.         | the garden.    |
| The meadow, hedge. | the yard.      |
| The ditch.         | the villa.     |
| The bush.          | the castle.    |
| The tree.          | the ruin.      |
| The wood.          | the church.    |
| The road (high).   | the village.   |
| The rut.           | the town.      |
| The path.          | the town-hall. |
| The river.         | the street.    |
| The pond.          | the theatre.   |
| The brook.         | the square.    |
| The building.      | the market.    |
| The mill.          | the bridge.    |
| The farm.          | the palace.    |
| The cottage.       | the cathedral. |
| The hole.          | the lake.      |
| <i>The stone.</i>  | the rock.      |

|                       | m.            | f.   | n.   | pl. m. | m.       | f.     | n.      | pl. m. & f. |
|-----------------------|---------------|------|------|--------|----------|--------|---------|-------------|
| <i>N.</i>             | Welch-er,     | -e,  | -es, | -e.    | Der,     | die,   | das,    | die.        |
| <i>G.</i> (not used.) | (wovon.)      |      |      |        | Dessen,  | deren, | dessen, | deren.      |
| <i>D.</i>             | Welch-em,     | -er, | -em, | -en.   | Dem,     | der,   | dem,    | denen.      |
| <i>Ac.</i>            | Welch-en,     | -e,  | -es, | -e.    | Den,     | die,   | das,    | die.        |
| <i>Ab.</i>            | Von welch-em, | -er, | -em, | -en.   | Von dem, | der,   | dem,    | denen.      |

Infinitive.  
**Sprechen<sup>2</sup> (mit, zu, dative),**

Past part.  
**gesprochen.**

|                   | Gen.   | Pl. |                  | Gen.   | Pl. |
|-------------------|--------|-----|------------------|--------|-----|
| der Berg,         | es, s, | e.  | das Thal,        | es, s, | er. |
| das Land,         | es, s, | er. | das Haus,        | es,    | er. |
| das Feld,         | es, s, | er. | der Garten,      | s,     | n.  |
| die Wiese, Hecke, | —      | n.  | der Hof,         | es, s, | e.  |
| der Graben,       | es, s, | en. | das Landhaus,    | es,    | er. |
| der Busch,        | es,    | e.  | das Schloß,      | sses,  | er. |
| der Baum,         | es, s, | e.  | die Ruine,       | —      | n.  |
| der Wald,         | es, s, | er. | die Kirche,      | —      | n.  |
| die Landstrasse,  | —      | n.  | das Dorf,        | es, s, | er. |
| das Geleise,      | s,     | e.  | die Stadt,       | —      | e.  |
| der Feldweg,      | es, s, | e.  | das Rathhaus,    | es,    | er. |
| der Fluß,         | sses,  | e.  | die Strasse,     | —      | n.  |
| der Teich,        | es, s, | e.  | das Theater,     | s,     | —   |
| der Bach,         | es, s, | e.  | der große Platz, | es,    | e.  |
| das Gebäude,      | s,     | —   | der Markt,       | es, s, | e.  |
| die Mühle,        | —      | n.  | die Brücke,      | —      | n.  |
| der Meierhof,     | es, s, | e.  | der Palast,      | es,    | e.  |
| die Hütte,        | —      | n.  | der Dom,         | es, s, | e.  |
| das Loch,         | es, s, | er. | der See,         | s,     | n.  |
| der Stein,        | es, s, | e.  | der Fels,        | en,    | en. |

<sup>1</sup> When *that* is used as a relative pronoun in the genitive, dative, or ablative case, the prepositions *of, to, from, by, &c.*, follow instead of preceding it. See Note 1, page 118.

<sup>2</sup> *Sprechen* may also govern the accusative case.

# SECTION XIX.—RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

| m. & f. s. & pl.                      | m.        | f.           | pl. m.    | f.          |
|---------------------------------------|-----------|--------------|-----------|-------------|
| <i>N.</i> Qui,                        | lequel,   | laquelle,    | lesquels, | lesquelles. |
| <i>G.</i> De qui, <i>or</i><br>dont,  | duquel,   | de laquelle, | desquels, | desquelles. |
| <i>D.</i> A qui,                      | auquel,   | à laquelle,  | auxquels, | auxquelles. |
| <i>Ac.</i> Que,                       | lequel,   | laquelle,    | lesquels, | lesquelles. |
| <i>Ab.</i> De qui, <i>or</i><br>dont, | duquel,   | de laquelle, | desquels, | desquelles. |
|                                       | où, d'où, | où, d'où,    | où, d'où, | où, d'où.*  |

Infinitive.  
**Parler,**

Past part.  
**parlé.**

la montagne.  
la campagne.  
le champ.  
le pré, la haie.  
le fossé.  
le buisson.  
l' (un) arbre.  
le bois.  
le grand chemin.  
une ornière.  
le sentier.  
la rivière.  
un étang.  
le ruisseau.  
l' (un) édifice.  
le moulin.  
la ferme.  
la chaumière.  
le trou.  
la pierre.

la vallée.  
la maison.  
le jardin.  
la cour.  
la maison de campagne.  
le château.  
la ruine.  
l' (une) église.  
le village.  
la ville.  
l'hôtel de ville.  
la rue.  
le théâtre.  
la place.  
le marché.  
le pont.  
le palais.  
la cathédrale.  
le lac.  
le rocher.

| m. f. s. pl.         | m.     | f.                     | pl. m. | f.                     |
|----------------------|--------|------------------------|--------|------------------------|
| <i>N.</i> Che,       | il     | <i>or</i> la quale,    | i      | <i>or</i> le quali,    |
| <i>G.</i> Di cui,    | del    | <i>or</i> della quale, | dei    | <i>or</i> delle quali, |
| <i>D.</i> A cui,     | al     | <i>or</i> alla quale,  | ai     | <i>or</i> alle quali,  |
| <i>Ac.</i> Che, cui, | il     | <i>or</i> la quale,    | i      | <i>or</i> le quali,    |
| <i>Ab.</i> Da cui,   | dal    | <i>or</i> dalla quale, | dai    | <i>or</i> dalle quali, |
|                      | onde*, |                        | onde*, |                        |

il ci  
del  
al c  
il ci  
dal

Infinitive.  
**Parlare,**

Past part.  
**parlato.**

il monte.  
la contrada.  
il campo.  
il prato, la siepe.  
il fosso.  
il cespuglio.  
l' albero.  
il bosco.  
la strada (maestra).  
la rotaia.  
il sentiero.  
il fiume.  
lo stagno.  
il ruscelletto.  
l' edificio, la fabbrica.  
il mulino.  
il podere.  
la capanna.  
il buco.  
la pietra.

la valle.  
la casa.  
il giardino.  
il cortile.  
la villa.  
il castello.  
la rovina.  
la chiesa.  
il villaggio.  
la città.  
il palazzo della città  
la strada.  
il teatro.  
la piazza.  
il mercato.  
il ponte.  
il palazzo.  
la cattedrale.  
il lago.  
la rupe.

\* *Où, d'où, and onde* are only used in reference to things.



## SECTION XIX.—RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

## EXERCISE 19.

Have you seen (*or did*<sup>1</sup> you see) the man who (has) brought your umbrella? I have seen (*or I did see*) him. — Did you see the woman who found your purse? I did not see her (*or I have not seen her*). — Have you seen the house of which I have spoken to you? Yes, Miss, I have seen it. — Have you seen the man whose son has sold you some tobacco? I have seen him. — Have you seen the man to whom I have sent a letter? No, Madam, I have not seen him. — Have you seen the garden that I have bought? Yes, I have seen it. — Has your father received the money of (*or about*) which I have spoken to you? He has received it. — Did your friend find the castle, of which my brother has spoken (*or spoke to him*)? He did find it. — Has he seen the church? Yes, Sir, he has seen the church and the river. — When shall you have time to read the letters that<sup>2</sup> I have sent you? To-morrow. — Have you seen the boy to whose<sup>3</sup> father I (have) lent some money? Yes, Sir, I have seen him. — Have you seen the boys to whose<sup>4</sup> father I have given some money? No, Sir, I have not seen them. — Has Mrs.\*\*\*\* read the newspapers that we have sent (to) her? No, Sir, she has not had time to read them to-day. — When will she have time to read them? She will have time to read them to-morrow. — Have you seen the child whose<sup>5</sup> father I (have seen *or*) saw? I have seen it. — Have you seen the children whose<sup>6</sup> father sold me some paper? I saw them yesterday. — Where did you see them? I saw them at my brother's. — Where is your brother? Here he is. — Did you find the cathedral? Yes, Sir,

Haben Sie den Mann gesehen, der (*or welcher*<sup>1</sup>) Ihren Regenschirm gebracht hat? Ich habe ihn gesehen. — Haben Sie die Frau gesehen, die Ihren Beutel gefunden hat? Ich habe sie nicht gesehen. — Haben Sie das Haus gesehen, wovon ich mit Ihnen gesprochen habe? Ja, Fräulein, ich habe es gesehen. — Haben Sie den Mann gesehen, dessen Sohn Ihnen Tabak verkauft hat? Ich habe ihn gesehen. — Haben Sie den Mann gesehen, welchem ich einen Brief gesandt habe? Nein, Madame, ich habe ihn nicht gesehen. — Haben Sie den Garten gesehen, den ich gekauft habe? Ja, ich habe ihn gesehen. — Hat Ihr Vater das Geld erhalten, wovon ich Ihnen gesprochen habe? Er hat es erhalten. — Hat Ihr Freund das Schloss gefunden, wovon mein Bruder ihm gesprochen hat? Er hat es gefunden. — Hat er die Kirche gesehen? Ja, mein Herr, er hat die Kirche und den Fluss gesehen. — Wann werden Sie Zeit haben, die Briefe zu lesen, welche<sup>2</sup> ich Ihnen geschickt habe? Morgen. — Haben Sie den Knaben gesehen, dessen Vater ich Geld geliehen habe? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe ihn gesehen. — Haben Sie die Knaben gesehen, deren<sup>3</sup> Vater ich Geld gegeben habe?<sup>4</sup> Nein, mein Herr, ich habe sie nicht gesehen. — Hat Frau\*\*\*\* die Zeitungen gelesen, welche wir ihr gesandt haben? Nein, mein Herr, sie hat nicht Zeit gehabt, sie heute<sup>5</sup> zu lesen. — Wann<sup>6</sup> wird sie Zeit haben, sie zu lesen? Sie wird Zeit haben sie morgen<sup>7</sup> zu lesen. — Haben Sie das Kind gesehen, dessen<sup>8</sup> Vater ich gesehen habe?<sup>9</sup> Ich habe es gesehen. — Haben Sie die Kinder gesehen, deren<sup>10</sup> Vater mir Papier verkauft hat?<sup>11</sup> Ich habe sie gestern gesehen. — Wo haben Sie sie gesehen? Ich habe sie bei meinem Bruder gesehen. — Wo ist Ihr Bruder? Hier ist er. — Haben Sie den Dom gefunden? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe<sup>12</sup> den Dom und den Palast gefunden, aber

<sup>1</sup> *Did*, used as an auxiliary, is not expressed in German, French, or Italian. <sup>2</sup> An ellipsis of the relative pronoun often takes place in English, but this never occurs in German, French, or Italian. <sup>3</sup> In German the relative pronoun removes the verb to the end of the sentence. <sup>4</sup> Although the article is not required in English and German, it is expressed in French and Italian. <sup>5</sup> In German the meaning of a sentence is very much affected by the place of the adverb, it is generally placed before the word upon which it is intended to lay any particular stress. See also Section on Adverbs. <sup>6</sup> Take care not to confound *wann* &

## SECTION XIX.—RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

### EXERCISE 19.

Avez-vous vu l'homme qui a apporté votre parapluie? Je l'ai vu. — Avez-vous vu la femme qui a trouvé votre bourse? Je ne l'ai pas vue. — Avez-vous vu la maison dont je vous ai parlé? Oui, Mademoiselle, je l'ai vue. — Avez-vous vu l'homme dont le fils vous a vendu du tabac? Je l'ai vu. — Avez-vous vu l'homme à qui j'ai envoyé une lettre? Non, Madame, je ne l'ai pas vu. — Avez-vous vu le jardin que j'ai acheté? Oui, je l'ai vu. — Votre père a-t-il reçu l'argent dont je vous ai parlé? Il l'a reçu. — Votre ami a-t-il trouvé le château dont mon frère lui a parlé? Il l'a trouvé. — A-t-il vu l'église? Oui, Monsieur, il a vu l'église et la rivière. — Quand aurez-vous le temps de lire les lettres que<sup>7</sup> je vous ai envoyées?<sup>8</sup> Demain. — Avez-vous vu le garçon<sup>9</sup> au père duquel j'ai prêté de l'argent? Oui, Monsieur, je l'ai vu. — Avez-vous vu les enfants<sup>4</sup> au père desquels j'ai donné de l'argent? Non, Monsieur, je ne les ai pas vus. — Madame<sup>\*\*\*</sup> a-t-elle lu les journaux que<sup>7</sup> nous lui avons envoyés? Non, Monsieur, elle n'a pas eu le temps de les lire aujourd'hui. — Quand aura-t-elle le temps de les lire? Elle aura le temps de les lire demain. — Avez-vous vu l'enfant dont j'ai vu<sup>4</sup> le père? Je l'ai vu. — Avez-vous vu les enfants dont<sup>4</sup> le père m'a vendu du papier? Je les ai vus hier. — Où les avez-vous vus? Je les ai vus chez mon frère. — Où est votre frère? Le voici. — Avez-vous trouvé la cathédrale? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai trouvé<sup>6</sup> la cathédrale et le palais, mais je n'ai pas eu le temps de les voir. — Le médecin est-il malade? Non, Monsieur, il n'est pas malade, mais le chirurgien

Ha Ella veduto l'uomo che ha portato il di Lei ombrello? I veduto. — Ha Ella (or avete) veduto la donna che ha trovato la di Lei (or la vostra) borsa? Non l'ho veduta. — Ha l'veduto la casa di cui (or della quale) Le ho parlato? Sì, Signor l'ho veduta. — Ha Ella veduto l'uomo il di cui figlio ha venduto tabacco? L'ho veduto. — Ha Ella veduto l'uomo a cui ho mandato una lettera? No, Signora, non l'ho veduto. — Ha Ella veduto il giardino che ho comprato? l'ho veduto. — Ha il di Lei padre ricevuto il danaro quale Le ho parlato? Egli l'ha ricevuto. — Ha il di Lei amico trovato il castello di cui mio fratello gli ha parlato? Sì, Signore, l'ha trovato. — Ha egli veduto la chiesa? Sì, Signore, egli ha veduto la chiesa ed il fiume. — Quando avrà E tempo di leggere le lettere che<sup>7</sup> Le ho mandate?<sup>8</sup> Domani. — Ha Ella veduto il ragazzo<sup>4</sup> al di cui padre (or al padre di cui ho prestato danaro? Sì, Signore, l'ho veduto. — Ha Ella veduto i ragazzi<sup>4</sup> al padre di cui (or dei quali) ho dato danaro? No, Signore, non li ho veduti. — Ha la<sup>9</sup> Signora<sup>\*\*\*</sup> letto le gazette che (noi) le abbiamo mandate?<sup>7</sup> No, Signore, ella non l'ha avuto tempo di leggerle oggi. — Quando avrà ella tempo di leggerle? Ella avrà tempo di leggerle domani. — Ha Ella veduto fanciullo di cui ho veduto<sup>4</sup> il padre? L'ho veduto. — Ha Ella veduto i fanciulli<sup>4</sup> il di cui padre mi ha venduto della carta? Li ho veduti ieri. — Dove li ha Ella veduti? Li ho veduti a casa di mio fratello. — Dov'è il di Lei fratello? Eccolo qui. — Ha Ella trovato la cattedrale? Sì, Signore, ho trovato<sup>6</sup>

when? (at what time?) with *when*, (when) *if*. <sup>7</sup> The past participle preceded by its direct objective case, *que*, *che*, always agrees with it when combined with the verbs *avoir*, *être*. <sup>8</sup> See Note on ellipsis, page 42. <sup>9</sup> When expressing *Mr.* and *Mrs.*, *Signore* and *Signora* are preceded by the definite article. In German *Mrs.* is expressed by *Frau*.

## SECTION XIX.—RELATIVE PRONOUNS, NAMES OF COUNTRIES, &amp;c.

## EXERCISE 19.

I found the cathedral and the palace, but I had no time to see them. — Is the doctor ill? No, Sir, he is not ill, but the surgeon is ill. — Have you seen my father and mother? I have seen them. — Have you seen my hat or my umbrella? I have seen neither the one nor the other.

ich habe nicht Zeit gehabt, sie zu sehen. — Ist der Arzt krank? Nein, mein Herr, er ist nicht krank, aber der Wundarzt ist krank. — Haben Sie meinen Vater und meine Mutter gesehen? Ich habe sie gesehen. — Haben Sie meinen Hut oder meinen Regenschirm gesehen? Ich habe weder den einen noch den andern gesehen.

## NAMES OF COUNTRIES.

|          |              |
|----------|--------------|
| Africa.  | Ireland.     |
| America. | Italy.       |
| Asia.    | Norway.      |
| Austria. | Poland.      |
| Bavaria. | Portugal.    |
| Belgium. | Prussia.     |
| Denmark. | Russia.      |
| England. | Sardinia.    |
| Europe.  | Scotland.    |
| France.  | Spain.       |
| Germany. | Sweden.      |
| Greece.  | Switzerland. |
| Hanover. | Turkey.      |
| Holland. | Tuscany.     |

| Gen.                  | Gen.        |
|-----------------------|-------------|
| Afrika <sup>1</sup> , | Irland,     |
| Amerika,              | Italien,    |
| Asien,                | Norwegen,   |
| Oesterreich,          | Polen,      |
| Baiern,               | Portugal,   |
| Belgien,              | Preussen,   |
| Dänemark,             | Russland,   |
| England,              | Sardinien,  |
| Europa,               | Schottland, |
| Frankreich,           | Spanien,    |
| Deutschland,          | Schweden,   |
| Griechenland,         | Schweiz,    |
| Hannover,             | Türkei,     |
| Holland,              | Toskana,    |

|                       |                           |                                                                 |
|-----------------------|---------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------|
| *Do I speak?          | you speak, thou speakest. | or<br>I am, thou art, &c.,<br>I do, thou dost, &c.,<br>I speak. |
| Dost thou speak?      | I speak.                  |                                                                 |
| Does he or she speak? | he or she speaks.         |                                                                 |
| Do we speak?          | you speak.                |                                                                 |
| Do you speak?         | I speak, we speak.        |                                                                 |
| Do they speak?        | they speak.               |                                                                 |

|                            |                                          |
|----------------------------|------------------------------------------|
| Spreche ich?               | Sie sprechen, ihr sprecht, du sprichst.  |
| Sprichst du?               | ich spreche.                             |
| Spricht er, sie?           | er, sie spricht.                         |
| Sprechen wir?              | Sie sprechen, ihr sprecht, wir sprechen. |
| Sprechen Sie? sprecht ihr? | ich spreche, wir sprechen.               |
| Sprechen sie?              | Sie sprechen.                            |

<sup>1</sup> When proper nouns end with a vowel an apostrophe is generally used in the genitive case. See also Declension of German Proper Nouns, page 35.  
<sup>2</sup> This construction is not allowed in German, French or Italian: never say *parlant, j'étais parlant, &c.* Do, did, used as auxiliaries, are never expressed. See Appendix of Verbs, pages viii., xi., xix.

## SECTION XIX.—RELATIVE PRONOUNS, NAMES OF COUNTRIES, &c.

### EXERCISE 19.

est malade. — Avez-vous vu mon père et ma mère? Je les ai vus. — Avez-vous vu mon chapeau ou mon parapluie? Je n'ai vu ni l'un ni l'autre.

cattedrale ed il palazzo, ma non ho avuto tempo di vederlo. È ammalato il medico? No, Signore, egli non è ammalato. Il chirurgo è ammalato. — Ha Ella veduto mio padre? madre? Li ho veduti. — Ha Ella veduto il mio ombrello? Non ho veduto nè l'uno nè l'altro.

### NAMES OF COUNTRIES.

l'Afrique.<sup>3</sup>  
l'Amérique.  
l'Asie.  
l'Autriche.  
la Bavière.  
la Belgique.  
le Danemark.  
l'Angleterre.  
l'Europe.  
la France.  
l'Allemagne.  
la Grèce.  
le Hanovre.  
la Hollande.

l'Irlande.  
l'Italie.  
la Norvège.  
la Pologne.  
le Portugal.  
la Prusse.  
la Russie.  
la Sardaigne.  
l'Écosse.  
l'Espagne.  
la Suède.  
la Suisse.  
la Turquie.  
la Toscane.

l'Africa.<sup>4</sup>  
l'America.  
l'Asia.  
l'Austria.  
la Bavière.  
la Belgica.  
la Danimarca.  
l'Inghilterra.  
l'Europa.  
la Francia.  
la Germania.  
la Grecia.  
l'Annovera.  
l'Olanda.

l'Irlanda.  
l'Italia.  
la Norvegia.  
la Polonia.  
il Portogallo.  
la Prussia.  
la Russia.  
la Sardegna.  
la Scozia.  
la Spagna.  
la Svezia.  
la Svizzera.  
la Turchia.  
la Toscana.

Parlé-je? or Est-ce que je parle?<sup>5</sup> vous parlez, tu parles.  
Parles-tu? je parle.  
Parle-t-il, elle? il, elle parle.  
Parlons-nous? vous parlez, nous parlons.  
Parlez-vous? je parle, nous parlons.  
Parlent-ils, elles? ils, elles parlent.

Parlo (io)? Ella parla, (voi) parli.  
Parli (tu)? (io) parlo.<sup>6</sup>  
Parla (egli, ella)? (egli, ella) parla.  
Parliamo (noi)? Elleno parlano, parla-  
liamo.  
Parla Ella, parlate (voi)? (io) parlo, (noi) parlia-  
Parlano Elleno? Parlano (eglino, elleno)? (eglino, elleno) parla-

<sup>3</sup> These nouns are all feminine with the exception of *le Danemark*, *le Hanovre*, and *le Portugal*. <sup>4</sup> These nouns are all feminine except *l'Asie*. <sup>5</sup> *Est-ce que* is most used in the first person, particularly with verbs of one syllable. <sup>6</sup> The Italians sometimes express the different periods of action combined, by using the different tenses of the verb *stare* with the *part. pres.*, or *gerund.*; *aa, sto scrivendo*, I am now writing; *stava scrivendo*, I was writing, &c. See Appendix of Verbs page xxx.

## SECTION XX.—DEMONSTRATIVE AND RELATIVE PRONOUNS COMBINED.

### DEMONSTRATIVE.

### RELATIVE.

|                                           |                              |
|-------------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| she, the one, that, they, those,          | who, which, that.            |
| him, her, the one, that, them, those,     | of whom, which. <sup>1</sup> |
| him, her, the one, that, them, those,     | to whom, which. <sup>1</sup> |
| im, her, the one, that, them, those,      | whom, which, that.           |
| rom him, her, the one, that, them, those, | f. whom, which. <sup>1</sup> |

**What** (the thing which), **of which.**

*I have (got) what I want.*

**Before I, you, he, she, we, they.<sup>2</sup>**

*I speak before<sup>3</sup> I write.*

**Why ? Because, for.**

|                |                |
|----------------|----------------|
| The flower.    | the elm.       |
| The rose.      | the beech.     |
| The violet.    | the birch.     |
| The lily.      | the willow.    |
| The pink.      | the poplar.    |
| The anemone.   | the aspen.     |
| The tulip.     | the acacia.    |
| The poppy.     | the maple.     |
| The primrose.  | the cedar.     |
| The jessamine  | the pine.      |
| The lime tree. | the fir.       |
| The oak.       | the larch.     |
| The ash.       | the palm tree. |
| The root.      | the branch.    |
| The bark.      | the leaf.      |

### DEMONSTRATIVE.

### RELATIVE.

See Declension,  
Section XIX.

| m.                         | f.                 | n.                 | pl. m. f. n.       |
|----------------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|
| <i>N. Derjenige,</i>       | <i>diejenige,</i>  | <i>dasjenige,</i>  | <i>diejenigen,</i> |
| <i>G. Desjenigen,</i>      | <i>derjenigen,</i> | <i>desjenigen,</i> | <i>derjenigen,</i> |
| <i>D. Demjenigen,</i>      | <i>derjenigen,</i> | <i>demjenigen,</i> | <i>denjenigen,</i> |
| <i>Ac. Denjenigen,</i>     | <i>diejenige,</i>  | <i>dasjenige,</i>  | <i>diejenigen,</i> |
| <i>Ab. Von demjenigen,</i> | <i>derjenigen,</i> | <i>demjenigen,</i> | <i>denjenigen,</i> |

weil-er, -e, -es, -e,  
&c., &c., &c., &c.,  
der, die, das, die,  
&c., &c., &c.,  
or wer,<sup>3</sup>

(das) **Was, wovon.**

*Ich habe was ich brauche (or nöthig habe).*

**Wie ich, Sie, er, sie, wir, sie.<sup>2</sup>**

*Ich spreche ehe ich schreibe.*

**Warum ? Weil<sup>4</sup>, denn.**

|                     | Gen.   | Pl. |                     | Gen.   | Pl. |
|---------------------|--------|-----|---------------------|--------|-----|
| die Blume,          | —      | n.  | die Ulme,           | —      | n.  |
| die Rose,           | —      | n.  | die Buche,          | —      | n.  |
| das Veilchen,       | s,     | —   | die Birke,          | —      | n.  |
| die Lilie,          | —      | n.  | die Weide,          | —      | n.  |
| die Nelke,          | —      | n.  | die Pappel,         | —      | n.  |
| die Klapperrose,    | —      | n.  | die Espe,           | —      | n.  |
| die Tulpe,          | —      | n.  | die Akazie, Acacie, | —      | n.  |
| der Mohn,           | es, s, | —   | der Ahorn,          | s,     | e.  |
| die Schlüsselblume, | —      | n.  | die Ceder,          | —      | n.  |
| der Jasmin,         | es, s, | —   | die Fichte,         | —      | n.  |
| die Linde,          | —      | n.  | die Tanne,          | —      | n.  |
| die Eiche,          | —      | n.  | die Lärche,         | —      | n.  |
| die Esche,          | —      | n.  | die Palme,          | —      | n.  |
| die Wurzel,         | —      | n.  | der Zweig,          | es, s, | e.  |
| die Borke,          | —      | n.  | das Blatt,          | es, s, | er. |

<sup>1</sup> may be used as a relative pronoun in the genitive, dative, and ablative, but it is then followed by the preposition ; as, *I see the man that you are speaking of.*  
<sup>2</sup> *Wie* may be used to express *he* or *she* who, the antecedent *he, she*, being omitted, but when a sentence begins with a relative pronoun the  
<sup>3</sup> always removed to the end of it. *Was* may be used with *das*, but *wer* cannot be used after *der*.

## SECTION XX.—DEMONSTRATIVE AND RELATIVE PRONOUNS COMBINED.

| DEMONSTRATIVE.                       |    |    |    | RELATIVE.                                           |  | DEMONSTRATIVE.                         |    |                       |        | RELATIVE.       |       |
|--------------------------------------|----|----|----|-----------------------------------------------------|--|----------------------------------------|----|-----------------------|--------|-----------------|-------|
| m.                                   | f. | m. | f. | m. & f.                                             |  | m.                                     | f. | m.                    | f.     | m. f.           | m. f. |
| N. Celui, celle, ceux, celles,       |    |    |    | qui.                                                |  | N. Quello, quella, quelli, quelle,     |    | che;                  | il, la | i, le           |       |
| G. De celui, celle, ceux, celles,    |    |    |    | de qui, dont, duquel, de laquelle,                  |  | G. Di quello, quella, quelli, quelle,  |    | di cui; del,          | della  | dei, delle      |       |
|                                      |    |    |    | desquels, &c.                                       |  |                                        |    |                       |        |                 |       |
| D. A celui, celle, ceux, celles,     |    |    |    | à qui, auquel, à laquelle, aux-<br>quels, &c.       |  | D. A quello, quella, quelli, quelle,   |    | a cui; al,            | alla   | ai, alle        |       |
| Ac. Celui, celle, ceux, celles,      |    |    |    | que.                                                |  | Ac. Quello, quella, quelli, quelle,    |    | cui; il, la           |        | i, le           |       |
| Ab. De celui, celle, ceux, celles,   |    |    |    | de qui, dont, duquel, de laquelle,<br>desquels, &c. |  | Ab. Da quello, quella, quelli, quelle, |    | da cui; dal,<br>dalla |        | dai, dalla      |       |
| <b>Ce qui, ce que, qu', ce dont.</b> |    |    |    |                                                     |  | <b>Ciò che, ciò di che.</b>            |    |                       |        |                 |       |
| <i>J'ai ce dont j'ai besoin.</i>     |    |    |    |                                                     |  | <i>(Io) ho ciò di che ho bisogno.</i>  |    |                       |        |                 |       |
| <b>Avant de.<sup>3</sup></b>         |    |    |    |                                                     |  | <b>Prima di.<sup>3</sup></b>           |    |                       |        |                 |       |
| <i>Je parle avant d'écire.</i>       |    |    |    |                                                     |  | <i>Parlo prima di scrivere.</i>        |    |                       |        |                 |       |
| <b>Pourquoi? Parce que, car.</b>     |    |    |    |                                                     |  | <b>Perchè? Poichè, perchè.</b>         |    |                       |        |                 |       |
| la fleur.                            |    |    |    | l' (un) orme.                                       |  | il fiore.                              |    |                       |        | l' olmo.        |       |
| la rose.                             |    |    |    | le hêtre.                                           |  | la rosa.                               |    |                       |        | il faggio.      |       |
| la violette.                         |    |    |    | le bouleau.                                         |  | la violette.                           |    |                       |        | la betula.      |       |
| le lis,                              |    |    |    | le saule.                                           |  | il giglio.                             |    |                       |        | il salice.      |       |
| l' (un) œillet.                      |    |    |    | le peuplier.                                        |  | il garofano.                           |    |                       |        | il pioppo.      |       |
| l' (une) anémone.                    |    |    |    | le tremble.                                         |  | l' anemone (f.).                       |    |                       |        | la tremula.     |       |
| la tulipe.                           |    |    |    | l' (un) acacia.                                     |  | il tulipano.                           |    |                       |        | l' acazia (f.). |       |
| le pavot.                            |    |    |    | l' (un) érable.                                     |  | il papavero.                           |    |                       |        | l' acero.       |       |
| la primevère.                        |    |    |    | le cèdre.                                           |  | la primola.                            |    |                       |        | il cedro.       |       |
| le jasmin.                           |    |    |    | le pin.                                             |  | il gelsomino.                          |    |                       |        | il pino.        |       |
| le tilleul.                          |    |    |    | le sapin.                                           |  | il tiglio.                             |    |                       |        | l' abète (m.).  |       |
| le chêne.                            |    |    |    | le mélèze.                                          |  | la quercia.                            |    |                       |        | il larice.      |       |
| le frêne.                            |    |    |    | le palmier.                                         |  | il frassino.                           |    |                       |        | la palma.       |       |
| la racine.                           |    |    |    | la branche.                                         |  | la radice.                             |    |                       |        | il ramo.        |       |
| l' (une) écorce.                     |    |    |    | la feuille.                                         |  | la scorza.                             |    |                       |        | la foglia.      |       |

<sup>3</sup> The pronouns, *I, thou, he, she, &c.*, which follow the word *before* in English and German, are expressed in French and Italian by *de* and *di* with the infinitive.  
<sup>4</sup> The conjunction *well* removes the finite verbs to the end of the sentence. See Section on Conjunctions. <sup>5</sup> *Chi* corresponds with *he who* in English, and *colui* in Italian.

## EXERCISE 20.

Have you (got) what you want? I have got what I want.  
 — Do you speak before<sup>1</sup> you write? I write before<sup>1</sup> I speak.  
 — Who was wrong? He who (has) told you that was wrong.  
 She who told you that was (or has been) right. — Have you seen  
 the man whom I have seen? No, Sir, I have not seen the one whom  
 you have seen, but I have seen another. — Has your brother  
 seen the house that I have bought? He has not seen the one  
 that you have bought, but he has seen the one that you have sold.  
 — Have you found the woman who (has) lent your sister some  
 money? No, Sir, I have not found her, because I have not  
 had time to look for her. — Has the doctor seen the roses and  
 the violets that the peasant has brought? He has seen the roses  
 that the peasant has brought, but he has not seen the violets.  
 — Have you given your sister the flowers that the boy has  
 brought? I have not given her those that the boy has brought,  
 but those that you have sent her. — Why did you not  
 give her those that the boy has brought? Because I did not  
 see them. — Will you have the kindness to pay me the money  
 which I lent you? I have a mind to pay it you, but I have none.  
 — Do you find what you are looking for? I do not find it.  
 — Have you found what you have been looking for? Yes,  
 I have (found it). — Have you found the money you lost?  
 I have not found that which I have lost, but my friend has lent  
 me some. — This is my brother, have you seen him? No, I  
 have not seen him. — These are my brothers and sisters, has

Haben Sie was Sie brauchen? Ich habe was ich brauche.  
 — Sprechen Sie ehe<sup>1</sup> Sie schreiben? Ich schreibe ehe<sup>1</sup> ich  
 spreche. — Wer hat Unrecht gehabt? Derjenige, welcher (or  
 wer) Ihnen das gesagt hat, hat Unrecht gehabt. Diejenige, welche  
 Ihnen das<sup>2</sup> gesagt hat, hat Recht gehabt. — Haben Sie den  
 Mann gesehen, welchen<sup>3</sup> ich gesehen habe?<sup>3</sup> Nein, mein Herr,  
 ich habe nicht denjenigen gesehen, welchen Sie gesehen haben,  
 aber ich habe einen andern gesehen. — Hat Ihr Bruder das  
 Haus gesehen, welches<sup>4</sup> ich gekauft habe?<sup>4</sup> Er hat nicht das-  
 jenige gesehen, welches Sie gekauft haben, aber er hat das ge-  
 sehen, welches<sup>5</sup> Sie verkauft haben.<sup>5</sup> — Haben Sie die Frau ge-  
 gefunden, welche Ihrer Schwester Geld geliehen hat? Nein, mein  
 Herr, ich habe sie nicht gefunden, weil<sup>6</sup> ich nicht Zeit sie zu  
 suchen gehabt habe.<sup>6</sup> — Hat der Arzt die Rosen und die Veil-  
 chen gesehen, die der Bauer gebracht hat? Er hat die Rosen  
 gesehen, die der Bauer gebracht hat<sup>7</sup>, aber er hat die Veilchen  
 nicht gesehen. — Haben Sie Ihrer Schwester die Blumen ge-  
 geben, welche der Knabe gebracht hat? Ich habe ihr nicht die-  
 jenigen gegeben, die der Knabe gebracht hat, sondern die, welche  
 Sie ihr gesandt haben. — Warum haben Sie ihr nicht diejeni-  
 gen gegeben, die der Knabe gebracht hat? Weil ich sie nicht  
 gesehen habe. — Wollen Sie die Güte haben, mir<sup>8</sup> das Geld  
 zu bezahlen, welches ich Ihnen geliehen habe? Ich habe Lust  
 es<sup>9</sup> Ihnen zu bezahlen, aber ich habe keins. — Finden Sie was  
 Sie suchen? Ich finde es nicht. — Haben Sie gefunden, was  
 Sie gesucht haben? Ja, ich habe es gefunden. — Haben Sie  
 das Geld gefunden, welches<sup>10</sup> Sie verloren haben?<sup>10</sup> Ich habe  
 das Geld nicht gefunden, welches ich verloren habe, aber mein  
 Freund hat mir welches geliehen. — Dies ist mein Bruder,  
 haben Sie ihn gesehen? Nein, ich habe ihn nicht gesehen. —  
 Dies sind meine Brüder und meine Schwestern, hat Ihr Freund

<sup>1</sup> See Note 3, page 119.<sup>2</sup> The conjunction *weil* and relative pronouns remove the finite verbs to the end of the sentence.<sup>3</sup> See Note 2, page 36, and

Note 2, page 44.

<sup>4</sup> See Notes 4 and 5, page 27.<sup>5</sup> See Note 3 on the concord of the past participle, page 41, Note 7, page 115, and also Section on Participles.<sup>6</sup> Here the dative precedes the accusative, to avoid obscurity of meaning.<sup>7</sup> See observation on verbs ending in *care* and *gare*, Appendix of Verbs, page xxx.

## SECTION XX.—DEMONSTRATIVE AND RELATIVE PRONOUNS COMBINED.

### EXERCISE 20.

Avez-vous ce dont vous avez besoin? J'ai ce dont j'ai besoin.  
 — Parlez-vous avant<sup>1</sup> d'écrire? J'écris avant de<sup>1</sup> parler.  
 Qui a eu tort? Celui qui vous a dit cela a eu tort. Celle qui vous a dit cela a eu raison. — Avez-vous vu l'homme que j'ai vu? Non, Monsieur, je n'ai pas vu celui que vous avez vu, mais j'en<sup>4</sup> ai vu un autre. — Votre frère a-t-il vu la maison que<sup>5</sup> j'ai achetée?<sup>8</sup> Il n'a pas vu celle que vous avez achetée, mais il a vu celle que<sup>8</sup> vous avez vendue.<sup>8</sup> — Avez-vous trouvé la femme qui a prêté de l'argent à votre sœur? Non, Monsieur, je ne l'ai pas trouvée<sup>8</sup>, parce que je n'ai pas eu le temps de la chercher. — Le médecin a-t-il vues<sup>8</sup> les violettes et les roses que le paysan a apportées? Il a vu les roses que le paysan a apportées, mais il n'a pas vu les violettes. — Avez-vous donné à votre<sup>8</sup> sœur<sup>8</sup> les fleurs que<sup>8</sup> le garçon a apportées?<sup>8</sup> Je ne lui ai pas donné celles que le garçon a apportées, mais celles que<sup>8</sup> vous lui avez envoyées.<sup>8</sup> — Pourquoi ne lui avez-vous pas donné celles que le garçon a apportées? Parce que je ne les ai pas vues. — Voulez-vous avoir la bonté de me payer l'argent que je vous ai prêté? Je veux vous le payer, mais je n'en ai pas. — Trouvez-vous ce que vous cherchez? Je ne le trouve pas. — Avez-vous trouvé ce que vous avez cherché? Oui, je l'ai trouvé. — Avez-vous trouvé l'argent que vous avez perdu? Je n'ai pas trouvé celui que j'ai perdu, mais mon ami m'en a prêté. — Voici mon frère, l'avez-vous vu? Non, je ne l'ai pas vu. — Voici mes frères et mes sœurs, votre ami les a-t-il vus?<sup>8</sup>

Ha Ella ciò di che Ella ha bisogno? Ho ciò di che bisogno. — Parla Ella prima di<sup>1</sup> scrivere? Scrivo prima parlare. — Chi ha avuto torto? Quello che (chi) vi ha detto ha avuto torto. Quella che Le ha detto ciò ha avuto ragione. — Ha Ella veduto l'uomo che ho veduto? No, Signore, non veduto quello che Ella ha veduto; ma ne<sup>4</sup> ho veduto un al.  
 — Ha il di Lei fratello veduto la casa che<sup>8</sup> ho comprata? Egli non ha veduto quella che<sup>8</sup> Ella ha comprata<sup>8</sup>, ma veduto quella che Ella ha venduta.<sup>8</sup> — Ha Ella trovato la dor che ha prestato danaro alla di Lei sorella? No, Signore, l'ho trovata<sup>8</sup>, poichè non ho avuto tempo di cercarla. — Ha il medico veduto le rose e le violette che ha portate il contadin? Egli ha veduto le rose che ha portate il contadino, ma non veduto le violette.<sup>8</sup> — Ha Ella dato alla di Lei sorella i fiori che ha portati<sup>8</sup> il ragazzo? Non le ho dato quelli che<sup>8</sup> ha portati il ragazzo, ma quelli che Ella le ha mandati.<sup>8</sup> — Perchè non le Ella dato quelli che ha portati il ragazzo? Poichè non li veduti. — Vuol Ella aver la bontà di pagarmi il danaro che ho prestato? Ho desiderio di pagarlielo, ma non ne ho. — Trova Ella ciò che Ella cerca? Non lo trovo. — Ha Ella trovato che Ella ha cercato? Sì, l'ho trovato. — Ha Ella trovato danaro che Ella ha perduto? Non ho trovato quello che ha perduto, ma il mio amico me ne ha prestato. — Ecco il fratello, l'ha Ella veduto? No, non l'ho veduto. — Ecco miei fratelli e le mie sorelle, li<sup>8</sup> ha veduti<sup>8</sup> il di Lei amico

<sup>8</sup> When nouns or pronouns of different genders are combined, the concord takes place with the masculine in preference to the feminine, and with the feminine in preference to the neuter.



## 122 SECTION XX.—DEMONSTRATIVE AND RELATIVE PRONOUNS COMBINED, &c.

### EXERCISE 20.

your friend seen them? No, he has not seen them, but he has seen your father, who has lent them some money.

|                   |                |
|-------------------|----------------|
| The dog.          | the rat.       |
| The cat.          | the mouse.     |
| The horse.        | the fox.       |
| The ass.          | the wolf.      |
| The mule.         | the bear.      |
| The ox.           | the wild boar. |
| The cow.          | the stag.      |
| The calf.         | the hare.      |
| The pig.          | the rabbit.    |
| The sheep.        | the chamois.   |
| The lamb.         | the squirrel.  |
| A flock of sheep. | the frog.      |
| A herd of cattle. | the toad.      |

sie gesehen? Nein, er hat sie nicht gesehen, aber er hat Ihren Vater gesehen, der<sup>1</sup> ihnen Geld geliehen hat.<sup>1</sup>

|                  | Gen.   | Pl.  |                   | Gen.   | Pl. |
|------------------|--------|------|-------------------|--------|-----|
| der Hund,        | es,    | "e.  | die Ratte,        | —      | n.  |
| die Katze,       | —      | en.  | die Maus,         | —      | "e. |
| das Pferd,       | es, s, | e.   | der Fuchs,        | es,    | "e. |
| der Esel,        | s,     | —    | der Wolf,         | es, s, | "e. |
| das Maulthier,   | es, s, | e.   | der Bär,          | en,    | en. |
| der Ochs, Ochse, | n,     | n.   | das Wildschwein,  | es, s, | e.  |
| die Kuh,         | —      | "e.  | der Hirsch,       | es,    | e.  |
| das Kalb,        | es, s, | "er. | der Hase,         | n,     | n.  |
| das Schwein,     | es, s, | e.   | das Kaninchen,    | es,    | —   |
| das Schaf,       | es, s, | "e.  | die Gemse,        | —      | n.  |
| das Lamm,        | es, s, | "er. | das Eichhörnchen, | s,     | —   |
| eine Schafherde, | —      | n.   | der Frosch,       | es,    | "e. |
| eine Viehherde,  | —      | n.   | die Kröte,        | —      | n.  |

### NAMES OF TOWNS, &c.

|                 |              |
|-----------------|--------------|
| London.         | the Thames.  |
| Paris.          | the Rhine.   |
| Brussels.       | the Moselle. |
| Antwerp.        | the Danube.  |
| Cologne.        | the Alps.    |
| Berlin.         | John.        |
| Geneva.         | William.     |
| Milan.          | Henry.       |
| Vienna.         | Charles.     |
| Venice.         | Robert.      |
| Florence.       | Mary.        |
| Rome.           | Elizabeth.   |
| Naples.         | Margaret.    |
| Constantinople. | Sophia.      |

|                       | Gen. |              | Gen.   |
|-----------------------|------|--------------|--------|
| London <sup>2</sup> , | s.   | die Themse,  | —      |
| Paris,                | es,  | der Rhein,   | es, s. |
| Brüssel,              | s.   | die Mosel,   | —      |
| Antwerpen,            | s.   | die Donau,   | —      |
| Köln,                 | s.   | die Alpen.   | —      |
| Berlin,               | s.   | Johann,      | s.     |
| Genf,                 | s.   | Wilhelm,     | s.     |
| Mailand,              | s.   | Heinrich,    | s.     |
| Wien,                 | s.   | Karl (Carl), | s.     |
| Venedig,              | s.   | Robert,      | s.     |
| Florenz,              | —    | Maria, -e,   | —      |
| Rom,                  | s.   | Elisabeth,   | —      |
| Neapel,               | s.   | Margarethe,  | —      |
| Constantinopel,       | s.   | Sophie, -a,  | —      |

<sup>1</sup> See Note 2, page 120.

<sup>2</sup> See Declension of Proper Nouns, page 35.

## SECTION XX.—DEMONSTRATIVE AND RELATIVE PRONOUNS COMBINED, &c.

### EXERCISE 20.

Non, il ne les a pas vus<sup>2</sup>, mais il a vu votre père, qui leur a prêté de l'argent.

|                          |                   |
|--------------------------|-------------------|
| le chien.                | le rat.           |
| le chat.                 | la souris.        |
| le cheval.               | le renard.        |
| un âne.                  | le loup.          |
| le mulet.                | un ours.          |
| le bœuf.                 | le sanglier.      |
| la vache.                | le cerf.          |
| le veau.                 | le lièvre.        |
| le cochon.               | le lapin.         |
| la brebis.               | le chamois.       |
| un agneau.               | l' (un) écureuil. |
| un troupeau de moutons.  | la grenouille.    |
| un troupeau de bestiaux. | le crapaud.       |

Egli non li<sup>2</sup> ha veduti<sup>2</sup>, ma egli ha veduto il di Lei padre prestato loro danaro.

|                         |                 |
|-------------------------|-----------------|
| il cane.                | il ratto, topo. |
| la gatta.               | il sorcio.      |
| il cavallo.             | la volpe.       |
| un asino.               | il lupo.        |
| il mulo.                | un orso.        |
| il bue, bove.           | il cinghiale.   |
| la vacca.               | il cervo.       |
| il vitello.             | la lepre.       |
| il porco.               | il coniglio.    |
| la pecora.              | il camoscio.    |
| un agnello.             | lo scoiattolo.  |
| una greggia.            | la rana.        |
| un armento, una mandra. | il rospo.       |

### NAMES OF TOWNS, &c.

|                 |             |                 |             |
|-----------------|-------------|-----------------|-------------|
| Londres.        | la Tamise.  | Londra.         | il Tamigi.  |
| Paris.          | le Rhin.    | Parigi.         | il Reno.    |
| Bruxelles.      | la Moselle. | Brusselle.      | la Mosella. |
| Anvers.         | le Danube.  | Anversa.        | il Danubio. |
| Cologne.        | les Alpes.  | Cologna.        | le Alpi.    |
| Berlin.         | Jean.       | Berlino.        | Giovanni.   |
| Genève.         | Guillaume.  | Ginevra.        | Guglielmo.  |
| Milan.          | Henri.      | Milano.         | Enrico.     |
| Vienne.         | Charles.    | Vienna.         | Carlo.      |
| Venise.         | Robert.     | Venezia.        | Roberto.    |
| Florence.       | Maria.      | Firenze.        | Maria.      |
| Rome.           | Élisabeth.  | Roma.           | Elisabetta. |
| Naples.         | Marguerite. | Napoli.         | Margarita.  |
| Constantinople. | Sophie.     | Costantinopoli. | Sofia.      |

<sup>2</sup> See Note 8, page 121.

## SECTION XXI.—INTERROGATIVE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS

| Pronouns.                |            | Interrogative adjectives and pronouns, used with or without a noun. |                                                           |
|--------------------------|------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|
| For persons.             |            |                                                                     |                                                           |
| <i>Nom.</i>              | Who?       | what, which                                                         | } one, ones?<br>(Omitted in German, French, and Italian.) |
| <i>Gen. or Poss.</i>     | Of whom?   | of what, of which                                                   |                                                           |
|                          | whose?     |                                                                     |                                                           |
| <i>Dat. or Ind. Obj.</i> | To whom?   | to what, to which                                                   |                                                           |
| <i>Acc. or Dir. Obj.</i> | Whom?      | what, which                                                         |                                                           |
| <i>Ab. or Ind. Obj.</i>  | From whom? | from what, from which                                               |                                                           |

*Nom. & Acc.* **What** (meaning what sort of)?

When the interrogative pronoun is followed by the preposition by which it is governed, take care to use *whom*, and not *who*; as, *Whom* are you speaking of?

|                   |                          |
|-------------------|--------------------------|
| The prescription. | the physic.              |
| The corn.         | the diarrhoea.           |
| The headache.     | the constipation.        |
| The toothache.    | the swelling.            |
| The dizziness.    | the pimple.              |
| The colic.        | the dislocation, sprain. |
| The cough.        | the contusion.           |
| The cold.         | the measles.             |
| The hoarseness.   | the small-pox.           |
| The cramp.        | the fever.               |

| Infinitive.    |                 | Past part.   |              |
|----------------|-----------------|--------------|--------------|
| <b>To say,</b> | <b>to tell,</b> | <b>said,</b> | <b>told.</b> |
| <b>To do,</b>  | <b>to make,</b> | <b>done,</b> | <b>made.</b> |

*What is that?* It is a note.

*What did you say?* I (have) said nothing.

When governed by a preposition, *was* is changed into *wo*, and joined to the preposition in the following manner: *womit, wozu, wovon*; when the preposition has a vowel, *r* is inserted; as, *woran, worauf, worüber*. See also Note 2, page 108. <sup>2</sup> See Declension of Indefinite Article, and Note 1, page 26.

| Pronouns.           |                    | Interrogative adjectives, or pronouns, used with or without a noun. |      |      |              |
|---------------------|--------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------|------|------|--------------|
|                     |                    |                                                                     |      |      |              |
| For persons.        | For things.        | m.                                                                  | f.   | n.   | pl. m. f. n. |
| <i>N.</i> Wer?      | was?               | welch-er?                                                           | -e,  | -es, | -e?          |
| <i>G.</i> Wessen?   | wes?               | welch-es?                                                           | -r,  | -es, | -er?         |
| <i>D.</i> Wem?      | wozu? <sup>1</sup> | welch-em?                                                           | -er, | -em, | -en?         |
| <i>Acc.</i> Wen?    | was?               | welch-en?                                                           | -e,  | -es, | -e?          |
| <i>Ab.</i> Von wem? |                    | von welch-em?                                                       | -er, | -em, | -en?         |

*Nom.* **Was für ein-er<sup>2</sup>, ein-e, ein-es...?** } **Was für...?**  
*Acc.* **Was für ein-en, ein-e, ein-es...?**

*Ein* is declined, but omitted in the plural and before names of materials; *für* may be separated from *was*, but not from *ein*, by the insertion of other words,

| Gen.             |            | Pl. | Gen.                        |        | Pl. |
|------------------|------------|-----|-----------------------------|--------|-----|
| das Recept,      | es, s,     | e,  | die Medicin,                | —      | en. |
| das Hühnerauge,  | s,         | n.  | der Durchfall,              | es, s, | e.  |
| der Kopfschmerz, | es,        | en. | die Verstopfung,            | —      | en. |
| der Zahnschmerz, | es,        | en. | die Geschwulst,             | —      | en. |
| der Schwindel,   | s,         | —   | die Finne,                  | —      | n.  |
| die Kolik,       | —          | —   | die Verrenkung,             | —      | en. |
| der Husten,      | s,         | —   | die Quetschung,             | —      | en. |
| der Schnupfen,   | s,         | —   | die Masern, <i>pl. fem.</i> | —      | —   |
| die Heiserkeit,  | —          | —   | die Pocken, <i>pl. fem.</i> | —      | —   |
| der Krampf,      | es, s, "e, | —   | das Fieber,                 | s,     | —   |

| Infinitive.                      | Past part.              |
|----------------------------------|-------------------------|
| <b>Sagen,</b>                    | <b>gesagt.</b>          |
| <b>Thun<sup>2</sup>, machen,</b> | <b>gethan, gemacht.</b> |

Was ist das? Es ist ein Billet.

Was haben Sie gesagt? Ich habe Nichts gesagt.

## SECTION XXI.—INTERROGATIVE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS.

| Pronouns.          |                | Interrogative adjectives,<br>never used without a noun, but always<br>combined with a noun. |            |           |             |
|--------------------|----------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|-----------|-------------|
| For<br>persons.    | For<br>things. | m.                                                                                          | f.         | pl. m.    | f.          |
| <i>N.</i> Qui?     | quoi?          | quel,                                                                                       | quelle,    | quels,    | quelles?    |
| <i>G.</i> De qui?  | de quoi?       | de quel,                                                                                    | de quelle, | de quels, | de quelles? |
| <i>D.</i> A qui?   | à quoi?        | à quel,                                                                                     | à quelle,  | à quels,  | à quelles?  |
| <i>Ac.</i> Qui?    | que?           | quel,                                                                                       | quelle,    | quels,    | quelles?    |
| <i>Ab.</i> De qui? | de quoi?       | de quel,                                                                                    | de quelle, | de quels, | de quelles? |

Also, {lequel, laquelle?  
lequels, lesquelles?  
See Declension,  
Section XIX.

*Nom. & Acc.* **Quel, quels, quelle** (espèce de), **quelles?**

|                               |                          |
|-------------------------------|--------------------------|
| l' (une) ordonnance, recette. | la médecine.             |
| le cor au pied.               | la diarrhée.             |
| le mal de tête.               | la constipation.         |
| le mal de dents.              | la tumeur.               |
| le vertige.                   | le bouton.               |
| la colique.                   | la dislocation, foulure. |
| la toux.                      | la contusion.            |
| le rhume.                     | la rougeole.             |
| l' (un) enrouement.           | la petite vérole.        |
| la crampe.                    | la fièvre.               |

Infinitive.  
**Dire<sup>3</sup>,**  
**Faire,**

Past part.  
**dit.**  
**fait.**

Qu'est-ce que c'est que cela? C'est un billet.  
Qu'avez-vous dit? Je n'ai rien dit.

| Pronouns.          |                | Interrogative adjectives and<br>pronouns,<br>used with or without a noun. |                              |
|--------------------|----------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| For<br>persons.    | For<br>things. | m. & f.                                                                   | pl. m. & f.                  |
| <i>N.</i> Chi?     | che?           | quale?                                                                    | quali, or quai? <sup>4</sup> |
| <i>G.</i> Di chi?  | di che?        | di quale?                                                                 | di quali, or quai?           |
| <i>D.</i> A chi?   | a che?         | a quale?                                                                  | a quali, or quai?            |
| <i>Ac.</i> Chi?    | che?           | quale?                                                                    | quali, or quai?              |
| <i>Ab.</i> Da chi? | da che?        | da quale?                                                                 | da quali, or quai?           |

*Nom. & Acc.* **Che** (sorta), **quale, qual;** **quali, quai**

|                        |                  |
|------------------------|------------------|
| la ricetta.            | la medicina.     |
| il callo.              | la diarrea.      |
| il dolor di testa.     | la costipazione. |
| il dolor di denti.     | il tumore.       |
| la vertigine.          | la bolla.        |
| la colica.             | lo storcimento.  |
| la tosse.              | la contusione.   |
| l' infreddatura (f.).  | la rosolia.      |
| la fiocchezza di voca. | le vaiuole (f.). |
| il granchio.           | la febbre.       |

Infinitive.  
**Dire** (from *dicere*)<sup>5</sup>,  
**Fare,**

Past part.  
**detto.**  
**fatto.**

Cosa è questo? È un biglietto.  
Che, or che cosa, or cosa ha Ella detto? Non ho detto.

<sup>3</sup> *Thun* has nearly the same meaning as the English verb *to do*.  
verb with the following one in the infinitive mood is expressed by *de* and *dé*.

<sup>4</sup> See Note 4, page 108.

<sup>5</sup> In French and Italian the preposition *to*, which is

What did you tell the servant ?

I (have) told him to lend your friend some money.

What have you done ? I have done nothing.

What have you made ? I have made a little box.

What sort of weather is it ? It is fine (bad) weather.

Is it light or dark ? It is dark.

Infinitive.

**To pick up,**

Past part.

**picked up.**

INDICATIVE PRESENT.

Am I picking up ?

you are picking up.

Art thou picking up ?

I am picking up.

Is he picking up ?

he is picking up.

Are we picking up ?

you are picking up.

Are you picking up ?

I am, we are, picking up.

Are they picking up ?

they are picking up.

Infinitive.

**To think of (gen.),**

Past part.

**thought.**

*To think of something.*

Was haben Sie Ihrem Bedienten gesagt ?

Ich habe ihm gesagt Ihrem Freunde Geld zu leihen.

Was haben Sie gethan ? Ich habe Nichts gethan.

Was haben Sie gemacht ? Ich habe ein Kästchen gemacht.

Was für Wetter ist es ? Es ist schönes (schlechtes) Wetter.

Ist es hell oder dunkel ? Es ist dunkel.

Infinitive.

**Aufheben, auf-zu-heben<sup>1</sup>,**

Past part.

**aufgehoben.**

INDICATIVE PRESENT.

Hebe ich auf ?<sup>2</sup>

Sie heben auf. Ihr hebt auf.

Hebst du auf ?

ich hebe auf.

Hebt er auf ?

er hebt auf.

Heben wir auf ?

Sie heben auf. Ihr hebt auf.

Heben Sie auf ? Hebet ihr auf ?

ich hebe auf. Wir heben auf.

Heben sie auf ?

sie heben auf.

Infinitive.

**Denken an (acc.),**

Past part.

**gedacht.**

*An etwas denken.*

# EXERCISE 21.

What do you wish to pick up ? I want to pick up your money.—What have you taken away ? I have taken away your pipe.—What have you got ? I have got a book.—What book have you got ? It is an English book.—What are you thinking of ? I am thinking of my friend, Mr. \* \* \*, who is ill.—What did you say to the doctor ? I told him to go to your house to see your friend. — Whose book

Was haben Sie Lust aufzuheben ?<sup>1</sup> Ich habe Lust, Ihr Geld aufzuheben.<sup>1</sup>—Was haben Sie weggenommen ?<sup>1</sup> Ich habe Ihre Pfeife weggenommen.<sup>1</sup>—Was haben Sie ? Ich habe ein Buch.—Was für ein Buch haben Sie ? Es ist ein englisches Buch.—Woran denken Sie ? Ich denke an meinen Freund, den Herrn \* \* \*, welcher krank ist. Was haben Sie dem Arzte gesagt ? Ich habe ihm gesagt, zu Ihnen zu gehen, um Ihren Freund zu be-

<sup>1</sup> In compound verbs with a separable particle, zu and the augment ge are placed between the separable particle and the verb in the infinitive and past participle, coalescing into one word. <sup>2</sup> The separation takes place in the present and past tenses and the imperative. The separable particle is placed at the end of the sentence after all other words, even including a relative or intermediate member of a sentence ; as, *Mein Vater geht, or ging diesen Morgen mit meiner Mutter weg, my father is going (or went) away with my sister this morning ; Heben Sie den Beutel auf.* When a relative pronoun, adverb, or conjunction

## SECTION XXI.—INTERROGATIVE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS.

Qu'est-ce que vous avez dit au domestique?  
 Je lui ai dit<sup>2</sup> de prêter de l'argent à votre ami.  
 Qu'est-ce que vous avez fait? Je n'ai rien fait.  
 Qu'avez-vous fait? J'ai fait une cassette.  
 Quel temps *fait-il*? Il *fait* beau (mauvais) temps.  
*Fait-il* clair ou obscur? Il *fait* obscur.

|                  |                 |
|------------------|-----------------|
| Infinitive.      | Past part.      |
| <b>Ramasser,</b> | <b>ramassé.</b> |

### INDICATIVE PRESENT.

|                                       |                             |
|---------------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| Est-ce que je ramasse, or ramassé-je? | vous ramassez.              |
| Ramasses-tu?                          | je ramasse.                 |
| Ramasse-t-il?                         | il ramasse.                 |
| Ramassons-nous?                       | vous ramassez.              |
| Ramassez-vous?                        | je ramasse. Nous ramassons. |
| Ramassent-ils?                        | ils ramassent.              |

|                         |               |
|-------------------------|---------------|
| Infinitive.             | Past part.    |
| <b>Penser à (dat.),</b> | <b>pensé.</b> |

*Penser à quelque chose.*

Che cosa ha Ella detto al di Lei domestico?  
 (Io) gli ho detto<sup>2</sup> di prestare danaro al di Lei amico.  
 Che cosa ha Ella fatto? Non ho fatto niente.  
 Che ha Ella fatto? Ho fatto una cassetta.  
 Che tempo *fa* (or è)? *Fa* (or è) bel (cattivo) tempo.  
*Fa* chiaro o oscuro? *Fa* oscuro.

|                                  |                  |
|----------------------------------|------------------|
| Infinitive.                      | Past part.       |
| <b>Raccogliere, or raccorre,</b> | <b>raccolto.</b> |

### INDICATIVE PRESENT.

|                                      |                               |
|--------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Raccolgo (io)?                       | Ella raccoglie. (Voi) gliete. |
| Raccogli (tu)?                       | (io) raccolgo.                |
| Raccoglie (egli)?                    | (egli) raccoglie.             |
| Raccogliamo (noi)?                   | (voi) raccogliete.            |
| Raccoglie (Ella)? Raccogliete (voi)? | (io) raccolgo. (Noi) gliamo.  |
| Raccogliono (eglino)?                | (eglino) raccolgono.          |

|                          |                 |
|--------------------------|-----------------|
| Infinitive.              | Past part.      |
| <b>Pensare a (dat.),</b> | <b>pensato.</b> |

*Pensare a qualche cosa.*

### EXERCISE 21.

Que voulez-vous ramasser? J'ai envie de ramasser votre argent.  
 — Qu'avez-vous emporté? J'ai emporté votre pipe. — Qu'avez-vous? J'ai un livre. — Quel livre avez-vous? C'est un livre anglais. — A quoi pensez-vous? Je pense à mon ami, Monsieur \* \* \*, qui est malade. — Qu'avez-vous dit au médecin? Je lui ai dit d'aller chez vous pour voir votre ami. — A qui est ce livre? C'est le mien. — A qui est ce chien? C'est celui de mon

Che cosa vuol Ella raccorre? Voglior raccorre il di Lei.  
 — Che ha Ella portato via? Ho portato via la di Lei.  
 — Che cosa ha Ella? Ho un libro. — Che libro è? libro inglese. — A che pensa Ella? Penso al mio am Signor \* \* \*, chi è malato. — Che cosa ha Ella detto al m Gli ho detto di andare a casa di Lei, per vedere il di Lei.  
 — Di chi è questo libro? È mio.<sup>3</sup> — Di chi è questo

removes the verb to the end of the sentence, the separable particle is placed before the verb coalescing with it; as, *Ich habe den Knaben gesehen, de Parz aufhob*, I have seen the boy who picked up your passport. When a verb with a separable particle is combined with another verb in the same at the separable particle is placed immediately before the infinitive; as, *Ich fange nach drei Wochen ein wenig an zu sprechen*, I am beginning to speak at the end of three weeks. <sup>3</sup> See Note 5, page 125. <sup>4</sup> In German and Italian the definite article precedes the words *Herre* and *Signore*, not required in English and French. <sup>5</sup> When the verb *essere* precedes the possessive pronouns, the definite article is omitted.

## EXERCISE 21.

is that? It is mine.—Whose dog is that? It is my father's.—Whom did you see? I have seen the bookseller, who sold you some books, pens, ink, and paper.—From whom did you receive a letter yesterday? I received one from the doctor, and I gave it to the banker.—What are you speaking of? I am speaking of the passport that I have lost.—What is your friend speaking of? He is speaking of the dog that he has given to his gardener.—To whom have you given your pen? I have not given it to anybody, I have lent it to your nephew.—What wine have you a mind to drink? I wish to drink some red wine.—What have you brought? I have brought you the pretty ribbon of which I have spoken to you.—Are you looking for what you have lost? Yes, I am.<sup>1</sup>—What is it? It is my purse and my passport.—Has the shoemaker a mind to mend the boots and shoes that I have sent to him? Yes, he has a mind to mend them.—What are you picking up? I am picking up my purse, my stick, and my umbrella.—What have you picked up? I have picked up my gloves.—Why do you pick up that book? I am picking it up because I want to carry it home.—What gloves have you lost? I have lost the new ones.—Of which man are you speaking? I am speaking of the one who sent you a letter yesterday.—Where is he? Here he is.—To which man did you give my passport? I have given it to the one whom you saw here yesterday.—From *which boy* did you receive the parcel? I received it from the *one to whom you have paid* the money.—Who is it? It is

suchen.<sup>2</sup>—Wessen Buch ist das? Es ist meines (or das meinige).—Wem ist dieser Hund? Es ist der meines Vaters.—Wen haben Sie gesehen? Ich habe den Buchhändler gesehen, der Ihnen Bücher, Federn, Dinte und Papier verkauft hat.—Von wem haben Sie gestern einen Brief erhalten? Ich habe einen von dem Arzte erhalten, und habe ihn dem Gelandwechsler gegeben.—Wovon sprechen Sie? Ich spreche von dem Pasze, welchen ich verloren habe.—Wovon spricht Ihr Freund? Er spricht von dem Hunde, den er seinem Gärtner gegeben hat.—Wem haben Sie Ihre Feder gegeben? Ich habe sie Niemand gegeben, ich habe sie Ihrem Neffen geliehen.—Was für Wein haben Sie Lust zu trinken? Ich habe Lust, rothen Wein zu trinken.—Was haben Sie gebracht? Ich habe Ihnen das schöne Band gebracht, wovon ich Ihnen gesprochen habe.—Suchen Sie was Sie verloren haben? Ja, ich suche es.—Was ist es? Es ist mein Geldbeutel und mein Pasz.—Hat der Schuhmacher Lust, die Stiefel und die Schuhe auszubessern,<sup>3</sup> welche ich ihm geschickt habe? Ja, er hat Lust, sie auszubessern.<sup>4</sup>—Was heben Sie auf?<sup>4</sup> Ich hebe meinen Stock, meinen Beutel und meinen Regenschirm<sup>4</sup> auf.—Was haben Sie<sup>4</sup> aufgehoben? Ich habe meine Handschuhe<sup>4</sup> aufgehoben.—Warum heben Sie dieses Buch auf? Ich hebe es auf,<sup>4</sup> weil ich es nach Hause tragen will.—Was für Handschuhe haben Sie verloren? Ich habe die neuen verloren.—Von welchem Manne sprechen Sie? Ich spreche von demjenigen, der Ihnen gestern einen Brief gesandt hat.—Wo ist er? Hier ist er.—Welchem Manne haben Sie meinen Pasz gegeben? Ich habe ihn demjenigen gegeben, den Sie gestern hier gesehen haben.—Von welchem Knaben haben Sie diesen Pack erhalten? Ich habe ihn von demjenigen erhalten, dem<sup>4</sup> Sie das Geld bezahlt haben.<sup>3</sup>—Wer ist das? Es ist mein Bruder.—Wer ist das? Es ist meine Schwester.—Was

<sup>1</sup> See Note 1, on Ellipsis, page 42.  
<sup>2</sup> See Note 1, page 126.

<sup>3</sup> To see, meaning to make a call, is expressed in German by *besuchen*, instead of *sehen*.

<sup>4</sup> See Note 2, page 126.

## SECTION XXI.—INTERROGATIVE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS.

### EXERCISE 21.

père. — Qui avez-vous vu? J'ai vu le libraire qui vous a vendu des livres, des plumes, de l'encre et du papier. — De qui avez-vous reçu hier une lettre? J'en<sup>s</sup> ai reçu une du médecin, et je l'ai donnée au banquier. — De quoi parlez-vous? Je parle du passe-port que j'ai perdu. — De quoi votre ami parle-t-il? Il parle du chien qu'il a donné à son jardinier. — A qui avez-vous donné votre plume? Je ne l'ai donnée à personne, je l'ai prêtée à votre neveu. — Quel vin avez-vous envie de boire? J'ai envie de boire du vin rouge. — Qu'avez-vous apporté? Je vous ai apporté le joli ruban dont je vous ai parlé. — Cherchez-vous ce que vous avez perdu? Oui, je le cherche. — Qu'est-ce que c'est? C'est ma bourse et mon passe-port. — Le cordonnier a-t-il envie de raccommode les bottes et les souliers que je lui ai envoyés? Oui, il a envie de les raccommode. — Que ramassez-vous? Je ramasse ma canne, ma bourse et mon parapluie. — Qu'avez-vous ramassé? J'ai ramassé mes gants. — Pourquoi ramassez-vous ce livre? Je le ramasse parce que je veux le porter à la maison. — Quels<sup>s</sup> gants avez-vous perdus? J'ai perdu les nouveaux. — De quel homme parlez-vous? Je parle de celui qui vous a envoyé hier une lettre. — Où est-il? Le voici. — A quel homme avez-vous donné mon passe-port? Je l'ai donné à celui que vous avez vu hier ici. — De quel garçon avez-vous reçu le paquet? Je l'ai reçu de celui à qui vous avez payé l'argent. — Qui est-ce? C'est mon frère. — Qui est-ce là? C'est ma sœur. — Qu'est-ce que c'est que cela? C'est une vache que j'ai envie de vendre au

È quello di mio padre. — Chi ha Ella veduto? Ho libraio che Le ha venduto libri, penne, dell' inchiostro e de. — Da chi ha Ella ricevuto ieri una lettera? Ne<sup>s</sup> ho rice dal medico, e l' ho data al banchiere. — Di che parla Ell del passaporto che ho perduto. — Di che parla il di Le Egli parla del cane ch' egli ha dato al suo giardiniere. — ha Ella dato la di Lei penna? Non l' ho data a nessi prestata al di Lei nipote. — Che (or qual) sorta di Ella bere? Ho desiderio di bere del vino rosso (or ne Che ha Ella portato? Le ho portato il bel nastro del ho parlato. — Cerca Ella ciò che Ella ha perduto? Sì, — Cosa è? È la mia borsa ed il mio passaporto. — calzolaio desiderio di raccommode gli stivali e le scarp ho mandati? Sì, egli ha desiderio di raccommodarli. — cosa raccoglie Ella (or raccogliete)? Raccoglio la mia mia borsa ed il mio ombrello. — Che ha Ella raccol raccolto i miei guanti. — Perché raccoglie Ella quest Lo raccolgo poichè ho voglia di portarlo a casa mia. — guanti ha Ella perduti? Ho perduto i nuovi. — Di qui parla Ella? Parlo di quello che Le ha mandato ieri una le Dov' è egli? Eccolo quà. — A qual uomo ha Ella da passaporto? L' ho dato a quello che Ella ha veduto qui Da qual ragazzo ha Ella ricevuto il fardellino? L' ho ric quello a cui Ella ha pagato il danaro. — Chi è (questo o È mio fratello. — Chi è questa (or colei)? È mia sor Cosa è ciò? È una vacca che ho desiderio di vender

<sup>s</sup> See Notes 4 and 5, page 37.

<sup>s</sup> The past participle agrees with its direct objective case. See Note 3, page 41, Note 7, page 115, and Section 300.



## EXERCISE 21.

my brother.—Who is that? It is my sister.—What is that? It is a cow that I want to sell to the butcher.—Which pig has your friend bought? He has bought the fat one.—What money is that? It is German money.—What is that? It is a parcel that my uncle has sent (to) me.—Who is there? It is the tailor.—Whom have you seen? I have seen the boy of (or about) whom I have spoken to you.—What have you seen? I have seen the book of which you have spoken to me.—What is your brother? He is a<sup>1</sup> doctor.—What are these men? They are tailors.—Have you any money? I have some.—Will you give me what you have? Yes, I will give it you.—What have you (got) to<sup>2</sup> do? I have to write a letter.—Is<sup>3</sup> anything the matter with you? Nothing<sup>4</sup> is the matter with me.—What is the matter with your friend? He has<sup>4</sup> a headache.

To be ashamed } to (infinitive).  
To be afraid } of (part. ing).

## FUTURE.

|                    |                            |
|--------------------|----------------------------|
| Shall I pick up?   | you will pick up.          |
| Wilt thou pick up? | I shall pick up.           |
| Will he pick up?   | he will pick up.           |
| Shall we pick up?  | you will pick up.          |
| Will you pick up?  | I shall, we shall pick up. |
| Will they pick up? | they will pick up.         |

ist das? Das ist eine Kuh, die<sup>1</sup> ich dem Fleischer verkaufen will.<sup>2</sup> — Welches Schwein hat Ihr Freund gekauft? Er hat das fette gekauft. — Was für Geld ist das? Es ist deutsches Geld. — Was ist das? Es ist ein Packet, welches mein Oheim mir gesandt hat. — Wer ist da? Es ist der Schneider. — Wen haben Sie gesehen? Ich habe den Knaben gesehen, wovon<sup>3</sup> ich Ihnen gesprochen habe.<sup>4</sup> — Was haben Sie gesehen? Ich habe das Buch gesehen, wovon<sup>3</sup> Sie mir gesprochen haben.<sup>5</sup> — Was ist Ihr Bruder? Er ist ein<sup>1</sup> Arzt. — Was sind diese Männer? Sie sind Schneider. — Haben Sie Geld? Ich habe welches. — Wollen Sie mir das geben, welches Sie haben? Ich will es Ihnen geben. — Was haben Sie zu<sup>3</sup> thun (or machen)? Ich habe einen Brief zu schreiben. — Fehlt Ihnen (or haben<sup>4</sup> Sie) Etwas? Mir fehlt (or ich habe<sup>4</sup>) Nichts. — Was hat ihr Freund? Er hat<sup>4</sup> Kopfschmerzen.

Sich schämen, or Scham haben } zu (infinitive).  
Sich fürchten, or Furcht haben }

## FUTURE.

|                        |                          |                        |             |
|------------------------|--------------------------|------------------------|-------------|
| Werde ich              | } aufheben? <sup>2</sup> | Sie werden, ihr werdet | } aufheben. |
| Wirst du               |                          | ich werde              |             |
| Wird er                |                          | er wird                |             |
| Werden wir             |                          | Sie werden, ihr werdet |             |
| Werden Sie, werdet ihr |                          | ich werde, wir werden  |             |
| Werden sie             |                          | sie werden             |             |

<sup>1</sup> In French and Italian, in such phrases as these, the definite article is always omitted; in German it may be expressed or omitted. <sup>2</sup> The preposition *to* which connects the verbs *avoir* and *avoir* with the following verb in the infinitive mood, is expressed by *à* in French and *da* in Italian.

<sup>3</sup> see Note 3, page 116. <sup>4</sup> Notice the use of *haben*, *avoir*, and *avoir*, in these expressions differing from the English. <sup>5</sup> See future terminations in the Appendix of Verbs.

## SECTION XXI.—INTERROGATIVE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS.

### EXERCISE 21.

boucher. — Quel cochon votre ami a-t-il acheté ? Il a acheté le cochon gras. — Quelle espèce d'argent est-ce ? C'est de l'argent allemand. — Qu'est-ce que c'est que cela ? C'est un paquet que mon oncle m'a envoyé. — Qui est là ? C'est le tailleur. — Qui avez-vous vu ? J'ai vu le garçon dont je vous ai parlé. — Qu'avez-vous vu ? J'ai vu le livre dont vous m'avez parlé. — Votre frère qu'est-il (*or* que fait-il) ? Il est<sup>1</sup> médecin. — Ces hommes que sont-ils (*or* font-ils) ? Ils sont tailleurs. — Avez-vous de l'argent ? J'en ai. — Voulez-vous me donner ce que vous avez ? Je veux bien vous le donner. — Qu'avez-vous à<sup>2</sup> faire ? J'ai à<sup>2</sup> écrire une lettre (*or* j'ai une lettre à écrire). — Avez-vous<sup>4</sup> quelque chose ?<sup>4</sup> Je n'ai rien.<sup>4</sup> — Votre ami qu'a-t-il ? Il a<sup>4</sup> mal à la tête.

**Avoir honte** } *de (infinitive).<sup>7</sup>*  
**Avoir peur** }

#### FUTURE.

|                              |                    |                       |
|------------------------------|--------------------|-----------------------|
| Ramasserai-je ? <sup>6</sup> | vous ramasserez.   |                       |
| Ramasseras-tu ?              | je ramasserai.     |                       |
| Ramassera-t-il ?             | il ramassera.      |                       |
| Ramasserons-nous ?           | vous ramasserez.   |                       |
| <br>Ramasserez-vous ?        | <br>je ramasserai. | <br>Nous ramasserons. |
| Ramasseront-ils ?            | ils ramasseront.   |                       |

cellaio. — Qual porco ha comprato il di Lei amico ? Egli comprato il grasso. — Che danaro è questo ? È danaro toscano. — Che cosa è questo ? È un fardellino che mi ha mandato mio zio. — Chi è là ? È il sartore. — Chi ha Ella veduto il ragazzo di cui Le ho parlato. — Che ha veduto ? Ho veduto il libro di cui (*or* del quale) Ella mi ha parlato. — Ch'è (*or* che fa) il di Lei fratello ? È<sup>1</sup> mio. — Che sono questi uomini ? Sono sartori. — Ha Ella danaro ? Ne ho. — Vuol Ella darmi ciò ch' Ella ha ? Vede darglielo. — Che ha Ella da<sup>2</sup> fare ? Ho da<sup>2</sup> scrivere una lettera. — Ha<sup>4</sup> Ella qualche<sup>4</sup> cosa ? Non ho<sup>4</sup> niente. — Che ha Lei amico ? Egli ha<sup>4</sup> mal di capo (*or* il dolor di testa).

**Aver vergogna** } *di (infinitive).<sup>7</sup>*  
**Aver paura** }

#### FUTURE.

|                              |                    |                                        |
|------------------------------|--------------------|----------------------------------------|
| Raccorrò (io) ? <sup>6</sup> | Ella raccorrà.     | (Voi) raccorrà.                        |
| Raccorrà (tu) ?              | (io) raccorrò.     |                                        |
| Raccorrà (egli) ?            | (egli) raccorrà.   |                                        |
| Raccorreremo (noi) ?         | (Voi) raccorrrete. | Elleno corranno.                       |
| <br>Raccorrà Ella ?          | <br>Raccorrrete    | <br>(io) raccorrà. (Noi) raccorreremo. |
| (voi) ?                      |                    |                                        |
| Raccorranno (eglino) ?       |                    | (eglino) raccorranno.                  |

<sup>6</sup> Adverbs, prepositions, nouns, adjectives, or even several words, may combine with verbs as prefixes or separable particles; as, *zu Mittag essen*, &c.  
<sup>7</sup> See Section XXXI., prepositions for French and Italian verbs, after which the preposition *to* is not translated when combined with another verb infinitive mood.

## SECTION XXII.—PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

| 1ST PERSON. |            |            |                | 2ND PERSON.  |     |                |          | 1ST PERSON.    |           |            |  | 2ND PERSON. |  |  |  | Polite<br>address. |
|-------------|------------|------------|----------------|--------------|-----|----------------|----------|----------------|-----------|------------|--|-------------|--|--|--|--------------------|
| N.          | I,         | we.        | Thou,          | you (ye').   | N.  | Ich,           | wir.     | Du,            | ihr,      | Sie.       |  |             |  |  |  |                    |
| G.          | Of me,     | of us.     | Of thee,       | of you.      | G.  | Meiner (mein), | unser.   | Deiner (dein), | euer,     | Ihrer.     |  |             |  |  |  |                    |
| D.          | To me; me, | to us; us. | To thee; thee, | to you; you. | D.  | Mir,           | uns.     | Dir,           | euch,     | Ihnen.     |  |             |  |  |  |                    |
| Ac.         | Me,        | us.        | Thee,          | you.         | Ac. | Mich,          | uns.     | Dich,          | euch,     | Sie.       |  |             |  |  |  |                    |
| Ab.         | From me,   | from us.   | From thee,     | from you.    | Ab. | Von mir,       | von uns. | Von dir,       | von euch, | von Ihnen. |  |             |  |  |  |                    |

| SING. |               |               |              | 3RD PERSON.    |     |                |              | PLUR.          |            |  |  | SING. |  |  |  | 3RD PERSON. |  |  |  | PLUR. |  |  |  |
|-------|---------------|---------------|--------------|----------------|-----|----------------|--------------|----------------|------------|--|--|-------|--|--|--|-------------|--|--|--|-------|--|--|--|
| N.    | He,           | she,          | it.          | They.          | N.  | Er,            | sie,         | es.            | Sie.       |  |  |       |  |  |  |             |  |  |  |       |  |  |  |
| G.    | Of him,       | of her,       | of it.       | Of them.       | G.  | Seiner (sein), | ihrer (ihr), | seiner (sein). | Ihrer.     |  |  |       |  |  |  |             |  |  |  |       |  |  |  |
| D.    | To him; him,  | to her; her,  | to it; it.   | To them; them. | D.  | Ihm,           | ihr,         | ihm.           | Ihnen.     |  |  |       |  |  |  |             |  |  |  |       |  |  |  |
| Ac.   | Him,          | her,          | it.          | Them.          | Ac. | Ihn,           | sie,         | es.            | Sie.       |  |  |       |  |  |  |             |  |  |  |       |  |  |  |
| Ab.   | From, by him, | from, by her, | from, by it. | From, by them. | Ab. | Von ihm,       | von ihr,     | von ihm.       | Von ihnen. |  |  |       |  |  |  |             |  |  |  |       |  |  |  |

Personal pronouns are generally divided into *conjunctive* and *disjunctive*. The first often contain a preposition understood, the latter require the preposition to be expressed. If the student has thoroughly mastered Sections and Exercises VII., VIII., IX., he will experience no difficulty in using these words correctly.

|             |                       |   |                                                                                            |     |         |                                                                                                                                                                |                                                 |                             |       |
|-------------|-----------------------|---|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|---------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------|-------|
| <i>Nom.</i> | one,                  | { | (indefinite pronoun)                                                                       | pl. | people. | <i>Nom.</i>                                                                                                                                                    | Man (always requires the verb in the singular). |                             |       |
| <i>Gen.</i> | of one's self,        |   | (reflective pronoun).                                                                      | m.  |         | <i>Gen.</i>                                                                                                                                                    | Seiner (sein),                                  | m. f. n. pl.                |       |
| <i>Dat.</i> | to one's self,        |   | m.                                                                                         | f.  | n.      | <i>Dat.</i>                                                                                                                                                    | Sich,                                           | ihrer (ihr), seiner (sein), |       |
| <i>Acc.</i> | one's self,           |   | himself, herself, itself, themselves.                                                      |     |         | <i>Acc.</i>                                                                                                                                                    | Sich,                                           |                             |       |
| <i>Abl.</i> | from, by, one's self, |   | <i>Self</i> , and plur. <i>selves</i> , are also combined with <i>my, thy, our, your</i> . |     |         | <i>Abl.</i>                                                                                                                                                    | Von sich,                                       |                             |       |
|             |                       |   |                                                                                            |     |         | { The invariable word <i>selbst</i> or <i>selber</i> may be combined with any pronoun or substantive; as, <i>ich selbst</i> , <i>der Mann selbst</i> , &c. &c. |                                                 |                             | sich. |
|             |                       |   |                                                                                            |     |         |                                                                                                                                                                |                                                 |                             | sich. |
|             |                       |   |                                                                                            |     |         |                                                                                                                                                                |                                                 |                             | sich. |

<sup>1</sup> Ye is only used in the solemn or burlesque style.

## SECTION XXII.—PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

| 1ST PERSON. |                 |               | 2ND PERSON. |               |
|-------------|-----------------|---------------|-------------|---------------|
| N.          | Je, moi,        | nous.         | Tu, toi,    | vous.         |
| G.          | De moi,         | de nous.      | De toi,     | de vous.      |
| D.          | A moi; moi, me, | à nous; nous. | A toi; te,  | à vous; vous. |
| Ac.         | Moi, me,        | nous.         | Toi, te,    | vous.         |
| Ab.         | De moi,         | de nous.      | De toi,     | de vous.      |

|     | SING.                       | 3RD PERSON.     | PLUR.             |
|-----|-----------------------------|-----------------|-------------------|
| N.  | Il, lui,                    | elle.           | Ils, eux, elles.  |
| G.  | De lui; en, d'elle; en.     | D'eux; en,      | d'elles; en.      |
| D.  | A lui; lui, à elle; lui; y. | A eux; leur; y, | à elles; leur; y. |
| Ac. | Lui, le, elle, la.          | Eux, les,       | elles, les.       |
| Ab. | De lui; en, d'elle; en.     | D'eux; en,      | d'elles; en.      |

*Y* and *en* are used in speaking of things and places. It is more polite to say, *de lui, d'elle*, in speaking to people of their relatives; as, *Avez-vous besoin de mon frère? Oui, Monsieur, j'ai besoin de lui*, instead of, *j'en ai besoin*. Otherwise *en* is equally applicable to persons. *Y* cannot be used in speaking of persons.

*Nom.* On (always requires the verb in the singular).

*Gen.* De soi.

*Dat.* A soi, { se, s'. } Singular and  
*Acc.* Soi, { se, s'. } plural.

*Abl.* De soi.

*Même* and plur. *mêmes* are also combined with *moi, toi, lui, elle, nous, vous, eux, elles*; as, *moi-même, &c.*

| 1ST PERSON. |                                  |                          | 2ND PERSON. |          |
|-------------|----------------------------------|--------------------------|-------------|----------|
| N.          | Io,                              | noi.                     | Tu,         | voi,     |
| G.          | Di me,                           | di noi.                  | Di te,      | di voi,  |
| D.          | A me; mi, me, a noi; ci, ce, ne. | A te; ti, te, a voi; vi, |             |          |
| Ac.         | Mi, me,                          | noi; ci, ce, ne.         | Ti, te,     | voi; vi, |
| Ab.         | Da me,                           | da noi.                  | Da te,      | da voi,  |

|     | SING.               | 3RD PERSON. | PLUR.                |
|-----|---------------------|-------------|----------------------|
| N.  | Egli, esso, ei, e', | Ella, essa. | Eglio, essi, eller.  |
| G.  | Di lui; ne,         | di lei; ne. | Di loro; ne, di lo.  |
| D.  | A lui; gli (li),    | a lei; le.  | A loro; loro, a lor. |
| Ac. | Lui, lo, il,        | lei, la.    | Loro, gli, li, loro, |
| Ab. | Da lui; ne,         | da lei; ne. | Da loro; ne, da lo   |

*Meco, teco, seco* are generally used instead of *con me, con se*, to express *with me, with thee, &c.*

The prepositions *con, in, su, per, with, in, on, for*, combined with the definite article, and are contracted as follows: *co colla, coll', coi, co', cogli, cogl', colle; nel, nello, nella, nell', negli, negl', nelle; sul, sullo, sulla, sull', sui, su', sugli, sugl', pel, pella, pell', pei, pe, pelle.*

*Nom.* Si. { *Si* requires the verb in the singular or plural; it requires the plural when the direct objective case is as, *Si dice una bugia*, they tell a story; *si dicono bu*  
*Gen.* Di sè. { tell stories.  
*Dat.* A sè, { si, s'. } Singular and plural.  
*Acc.* Sè, { si, s'. }  
*Abl.* Da sè. { *Stesso, medesimo.*   
bined

## SECTION XXII.—PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

The word *own* is often combined with the possessive pronoun or adjective in English, in order to express possession more strongly; but it is omitted in German, French, and Italian.

|                        |             |
|------------------------|-------------|
| It is I <sup>1</sup> , | it is we.   |
| It is thou,            | it is you.  |
| It is he,              | it is you.  |
| It is she,             | it is they. |

| Infinitive.                            | Past part.                        |
|----------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| <b>To go for, fetch,</b>               | <b>gone or been for, fetched.</b> |
| <b>To send for,</b>                    | <b>sent for.</b>                  |
| <b>To have or get made,</b>            | <b>had or got made.</b>           |
| <b>To kill, slaughter,</b>             | <b>killed.</b>                    |
| <b>To listen (dat.),</b>               | <b>listened.</b>                  |
| <b>To answer (acc.), reply (dat.),</b> | <b>answered, replied.</b>         |

| In,              | on, | for,           | with. |
|------------------|-----|----------------|-------|
| The eagle.       |     | the sparrow.   |       |
| The hawk.        |     | the swallow.   |       |
| The raven.       |     | the blackbird. |       |
| The crow.        |     | the thrush.    |       |
| The magpie.      |     | the cock.      |       |
| The dove.        |     | the hen.       |       |
| The canary.      |     | the peacock.   |       |
| The parrot.      |     | the peahen.    |       |
| The nightingale. |     | the owl.       |       |

In German, as in Italian, prepositions are often contracted, forming a combination with the definite article; as, *ins, in, vom, zum*, for *in das, in dem, von dem, zu dem, &c.*

|             |              |
|-------------|--------------|
| Ich bin es, | wir sind es. |
| Du bist es, | ihr seid es. |
| Er ist es,  | Sie sind es. |
| Sie ist es, | sie sind es. |

| Infinitive.                            | Past part.                        |
|----------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| <b>Holen<sup>2</sup>,</b>              | <b>geholt.</b>                    |
| <b>Holen lassen<sup>2</sup>,</b>       | <b>hollen lassen.<sup>2</sup></b> |
| <b>Machen lassen,</b>                  | <b>machen lassen.<sup>1</sup></b> |
| <b>Töden, schlachten,</b>              | <b>getödtet, geschlachtet.</b>    |
| { <b>Anhören</b> (acc.),               | { <b>angehört.</b>                |
| { <b>Zuhören</b> (dat.),               | { <b>zugehört.</b>                |
| { <b>Antworten</b> (dat.), persons.    | { <b>geantwortet.</b>             |
| { <b>Antworten auf</b> (acc.), things. | { <b>beantwortet.</b>             |
| { <b>Beantworten</b> (acc.).           |                                   |

**In** { *dat.* indicating repose, *auf* { *dat.* repose, **für** (acc.), **mit** (dat.).  
*acc.* indicating motion, *acc.* motion,

|                    | Gen.   | Pl.    |                | Gen.   | Pl. |
|--------------------|--------|--------|----------------|--------|-----|
| der Adler,         | s,     | —      | der Sperling,  | es, s, | e.  |
| der Falke,         | n,     | n.     | die Schwalbe,  | —      | n.  |
| der Rabe,          | n,     | n.     | die Amsel,     | —      | n.  |
| die Krähe,         | —      | n.     | die Drossel,   | —      | n.  |
| die Elster,        | —      | n.     | der Hahn,      | es, s, | e.  |
| die Turteltaube,   | —      | n.     | die Henne,     | —      | n.  |
| der Canarienvogel, | s,     | —      | der Pfau,      | en,    | en. |
| der Papagei,       | es, s, | e, en. | die Pfauhenne, | —      | n.  |
| die Nachtigall,    | —      | en.    | die Eule,      | —      | n.  |

<sup>1</sup> Never say it is *me, it is him, it is her, it is them*. When a verb relates to several persons (in concord), the 1st is preferred to the 2nd, and the 2nd to the 3rd.  
<sup>2</sup> When the verb *lassen* is combined with another verb in the infinitive mood, the infinitive *lassen* is used instead of the past participle. See also Appendix of Verbs, page vi.

## SECTION XXII.—PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

The disjunctive personal pronouns, *moi, toi, lui, elle, soi, nous, vous, eux, elles*, are used in answer to a question, as, *Qui est-ce? C'est moi*; before the relative *qui*, as, *C'est moi qui suis malade*; after *et* in such phrases as *Vous et moi et lui aussi nous serons punis*; and before the word *seul*, as, *Lui seul sera puni*. All reflective verbs, the verbs *aller, venir, courir, penser, songer, boire*, a verb governing separate pronouns in the same case; as, *Je vous aime, vous, lui et elle*; *je vous parle, à vous, à lui et à elle*, and all prepositions, require the use of these pronouns after them.

| Infinitive.                            |             | Past part.                   |              |
|----------------------------------------|-------------|------------------------------|--------------|
| <b>Aller chercher</b> <sup>1</sup> ,   |             | <b>allé or été chercher.</b> |              |
| <b>Envoyer chercher</b> <sup>1</sup> , |             | <b>envoyé chercher.</b>      |              |
| <b>Faire faire,</b>                    |             | <b>fait faire,</b>           |              |
| <b>Tuer,</b>                           |             | <b>tué.</b>                  |              |
| <b>Écouter</b> (acc.),                 |             | <b>écouté,</b>               |              |
| <b>Répondre</b> (dat.),                |             | <b>répondu.</b>              |              |
| <b>Dans,</b>                           | <b>sur,</b> | <b>pour,</b>                 | <b>avec.</b> |
| l' (un) aigle.                         |             | le moineau.                  |              |
| le faucon.                             |             | l' (une) hirondelle.         |              |
| le corbeau.                            |             | le merle.                    |              |
| la corneille.                          |             | la grive.                    |              |
| la pie.                                |             | le coq.                      |              |
| la tourterelle.                        |             | la poule.                    |              |
| le serin.                              |             | le paon, } the o is not      |              |
| le perroquet.                          |             | la paonne, } sounded.        |              |
| le rossignol.                          |             | le hibou, la chouette.       |              |

In Italian the disjunctive personal pronouns are used after prepositions, after verbs of motion, *tornare*, and with the verbs *toccare, spettare*, as, *Tocca a lui*, it is his turn,

In Italian, it is *I, it is thou, it is he, son' io, sei tu, è egli, è ella, siamo noi*, making the verb agree with the pronoun; in French, *c'est moi, c'est toi, c'est lui, c'est elle, est-ce eux, elles? ce sont eux, elles.*

| Infinitive.                              |                    |             |
|------------------------------------------|--------------------|-------------|
| <b>Andare a</b> <sup>1</sup> cercare,    | <b>andato or</b>   |             |
| <b>Mandare a</b> <sup>1</sup> cercare or | <b>mandato a</b>   |             |
| <b>chiamare,</b>                         |                    |             |
| <b>Far fare,</b>                         | <b>fatto fare.</b> |             |
| <b>Uccidere, macellare,</b>              | <b>ucciso, ma-</b> |             |
| <b>Ascoltare</b> (acc.),                 | <b>ascoltato.</b>  |             |
| <b>Rispondere</b> (dat.),                | <b>risposto.</b>   |             |
| <b>In,</b>                               | <b>su</b> (sopra), | <b>per,</b> |
| l' aquila (f.).                          |                    | il passero. |
| il falcone.                              |                    | la rondinel |
| il corvo.                                |                    | il merlo.   |
| la cornacchia.                           |                    | il tordo.   |
| la gazza.                                |                    | il gallo.   |
| la colomba.                              |                    | la gallina. |
| il canarino.                             |                    | il pavone.  |
| il pappagallo.                           |                    | la pavones  |
| il rosignuolo.                           |                    |             |

Notice that the verbs *to go, to send*, combined with the preposition *for*, are connected with *andare* and *mandare* are connected with *cercare* by the preposition *per*.

## SECTION XXII.—PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

The bullfinch.  
The goldfinch.  
The robin.

the bat.  
the bird.  
the nest.

How?      well,      badly,      ill.  
                 ill, unwell.  
Ever,      never,      now,      just now.  
It (to it),      in it,      to answer it.<sup>1</sup>  
Them (to them),      in them,      to answer them.<sup>1</sup>

der Buchfink,      Gen. Pl.  
                 en, en.  
der Stieglitz,      es, e.  
das Rothkehlchen,      s, —      die Fledermaus,      Gen. Pl.  
                                der Vogel,      —      e.  
                                das Nest,      s, s, er.

Wie?      wohl, gut,      schlecht.  
                 Krank, unwohl.  
Je,      nie,      jetzt,      sogleich.  
Darauf,      darin,      darauf<sup>1</sup> antworten.

## EXERCISE 22.

Who has carried away my gloves? It is I who have carried them away.—Are you ill? Yes, I am.<sup>2</sup> No, I am not.—Who has sent for the doctor? It is he who has sent for him.—Why did he send for him? He has sent for him because his aunt is ill.—What is the matter with her? She has the toothache.—What is the matter with your uncle? He has a headache.—Good morning! How do you do? or how are you? I am very well.—How have you been? Unwell.—How is your mother? She is not well.—What do you wish to have made? I wish to have a coat made.—Will you have the kindness to tell the tailor to make me one? Yes, I will tell him to make you one.—Who will go for the shoemaker? Your neighbour's son will go and fetch him.—Will you send for<sup>2</sup> him? I will go for him.—Where is he? Here he is.—What did you tell him? I have told him to go for the shoemaker.—Whose horse is that? It is mine.<sup>2</sup>—Whose glove is this? It is yours.—Whose gloves are those? They

Wer hat meine Handschuhe weggenommen? Ich bin es, der sie weggenommen habe.—Bist du krank? Ja, ich bin es.<sup>2</sup> Nein, ich bin es nicht.—Wer hat den Arzt holen lassen?<sup>4</sup> Er ist es, der ihn holen lassen hat.—Warum hat er ihn holen<sup>4</sup> lassen? Er hat ihn holen lassen, weil seine Tante krank ist.—Was fehlt ihr? Sie hat Zahnschmerzen.—Was fehlt Ihrem Onkel? Er hat Kopfschmerzen.—Guten Morgen! Wie befinden Sie sich?<sup>4</sup> Ich befinde mich wohl.—Wie haben Sie sich befunden? Nicht wohl.—Wie befindet<sup>2</sup> sich Ihre Frau Mutter? Sie ist nicht wohl.—Was wollen Sie machen lassen? Ich will einen Rock machen lassen.—Wollen Sie die Güte haben, dem Schneider zu sagen, mir einen zu machen? Ja, ich will ihm sagen Ihnen einen zu machen.—Wer will den Schuhmacher holen? Der Sohn Ihres Nachbarn will ihn holen.—Wollen Sie ihn holen lassen? Ich will ihn holen lassen.—Wo ist er? Hier ist er.—Was haben Sie ihm gesagt? Ich habe ihm gesagt den Schuhmacher zu holen.—Wessen Pferd ist das? Es ist meines.—Wessen Handschuh ist das? Es ist der Ihrige.—Wessen Handschuhe sind das? Es sind die Ihrigen.—Wo haben sie sie gekauft? Sie haben sie bei dem Hutmacher gekauft.—Haben Sie von

<sup>1</sup> It, them are expressed by *darauf, y, ci, vi*, when referring to notes or letters; when referring to persons the personal pronouns in the dative case are used.  
<sup>2</sup> In such phrases as these the pronouns *es, le*, are introduced in French and German: In French, when the pronoun *le* refers to an adjective, a participle, or noun used as an adjective, *le* remains unchanged, corresponding with the English adverb *so*. See also Indefinite Pronouns, Section XXIII. In Italian the adjective

## SECTION XXII.—PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

le bouvreuil, pinson.  
le chardonneret.  
le rouge-gorge.

la chauve-souris.  
l' (un) oiseau.  
le nid.

**Comment?**                      **bien,**                      **mal.**  
                                         **Malade.**  
**Jamais, ne—jamais, à présent, tout-à-l'heure.**  
**Y,**                                      **y' répondre.**

il fringuello.  
il cardellino.  
il pettirosso.

il pipistrello.  
l' (un) uccello.  
il nido.

**Come?**                              **bene,**                      **male.**  
                                         **Malato, ammalato.**  
**Mal, non—mal, adesso, or', ora,**  
**Ci, vi,**                                      **risponderci.<sup>1</sup>**

### EXERCISE 22.

Qui a emporté mes gants? C'est moi qui les ai emportés.—  
Êtes-vous malade? Oui, je le <sup>2</sup> suis. Non, je ne le <sup>2</sup> suis pas.  
— Qui a envoyé chercher le médecin? C'est lui qui l'a  
envoyé chercher.—Pourquoi l'a-t-il envoyé chercher? Il l'a  
envoyé chercher parce que sa tante est malade.—Qu'a-t-elle?  
Elle a mal aux dents.—Votre oncle qu'a-t-il? Il a mal à la  
tête.—Bon-jour! Comment vous portez-vous?<sup>3</sup> Je me porte  
bien.—Comment vous êtes-vous porté?<sup>4</sup> Pas bien.—  
Madame votre mère comment se <sup>5</sup> porte-t-elle? Elle ne se porte  
pas bien.—Que voulez-vous faire faire? Je veux faire faire  
un habit.—Voulez-vous avoir la bonté de dire au tailleur de  
m'en faire un? Oui, je veux lui dire de vous en faire un.—  
Qui veut aller <sup>6</sup> chercher le cordonnier? Le fils de votre voisin  
veut aller le chercher.—Voulez-vous l'envoyer chercher? Je  
veux l'envoyer chercher.—Où est-il? Le voici.—Que lui  
avez-vous dit? Je lui ai dit d'aller chercher le cordonnier.—  
A qui est ce cheval? C'est le mien (or C'est <sup>7</sup> à moi).—A qui

Chi ha portato via i miei guanti? Son io che (or io)  
tati via.—È Ella malata? Sì, sono <sup>2</sup> malato. No, n  
malato.—Chi ha mandato a <sup>4</sup> cercare (or chiamare) il  
Egli ha mandato a cercarlo.—Perchè ha egli ma  
cercarlo? Egli ha mandato a cercarlo poichè sua zia è  
lata.—Che ha? Ha il dolor di denti.—Che ha il di l  
Ha il dolor di testa.—Buon giorno! Come sta Ella? St  
—Come è Ella stato (or stata)? Male.—Come sta la  
Signora madre? Non <sup>5</sup> ista bene.—Che cosa vuol Ella fa  
Ho voglia di far fare un vestito.—Vuol Ella aver la b  
dire al sartore di farmene uno? Sì, voglio dirgli di fa  
uno.—Chi vuol andare a <sup>6</sup> cercare il calzolaio? Il figlio  
Lei vicino vuol andare a <sup>6</sup> cercarlo.—Vuol Ella mand  
cercare? Voglio mandarlo a cercare.—Dov' è? Ecco  
—Cosa gli ha Ella detto? Gli ho detto d' andare a ce  
calzolaio.—Di chi è questo cavallo? È mio.<sup>7</sup> Di chi è  
quanto? È il di Lei.—Di chi sono questi guanti?

<sup>1</sup> is generally repeated in the answer. When *le* refers to a noun, or an adjective used as a noun, it is subject to concord; as, *Êtes-vous la mère de cet enfant?*  
*Je la suis.* In Italian the noun is generally used in the answer. <sup>2</sup> See Note 4, page 134. <sup>3</sup> See Note 2, page 134. and Note 3, page 134.  
Verbs, Appendix, page vii. <sup>4</sup> For the sake of sound, the letter *i* is added to words beginning with *s* followed by another  
sounds with a consonant. <sup>5</sup> See Note 5, page 127.



## EXERCISE 22.

are theirs.—Where did they buy them? At the hatter's.—Did you receive a letter from your friend yesterday? Yes, I did receive one from him, and I have sent it to your sister.—Where is the doctor? He is in<sup>1</sup> the garden with his neighbour.—Where are my books? They are on<sup>1</sup> the table.—Are you speaking of my brother? I am not speaking of him.—Of whom are you speaking? I am speaking of the man who was (has been) killed<sup>2</sup> to-day.—Where was he killed? He was killed on the bridge.—Will you lend me some money to buy some bread? Yes, I will lend you some.—When will you lend it to me? I will lend it you now.—Where is it? There it is.—Have you lent your friends any money? No, I have not lent them any.—Why did you not lend them any? Because I had not (got) any.—Of whom are you thinking? I am thinking of my brothers and sisters.—Are you thinking of me? No, I am not thinking of you.—Will you go with me? I have not time to go with you.—Has the boy found a nest? Yes, he has found one.—Did he kill the bird? No, he did not.<sup>3</sup>—Did you listen to the man? Yes, I did listen to him.—Did he listen to you? No, he did not listen to me.—Why did he not listen to you? Because he had a headache.—Has the boy a mind to listen to the man? He will not listen to him.—Has the girl a mind to listen to him? She has a mind to listen to him.—Do you wish to answer your brother? I wish to answer him.—Do you wish to answer your brothers? I wish to answer them.—Do you wish to answer this note? I wish to answer it.—Do you wish to answer these notes? I do not wish to answer them.—Will your friend answer my letter? He will answer it.—Has the doctor answered your note? He has not answered it.—Which letter has he answered? He has answered the baker's.—Will he answer the banker's letter? No, he will not answer the banker's letter, but he will answer his mother's.—Has the

Ihrem Freunde gestern einen Brief erhalten? Ja, ich habe einen von ihm erhalten, und habe ihn Ihrer<sup>4</sup> Schwester geschickt.—Wo ist der Arzt? Er ist mit seinem Nachbar in<sup>1</sup> dem Garten.—Wo sind meine Bücher? Sie sind auf<sup>1</sup> dem Tische.—Sprechen Sie von meinem Bruder? Ich spreche nicht von ihm.—Von wem sprechen Sie? Ich spreche von dem Manne, der heute getödtet worden<sup>5</sup> ist.—Wo ist er getödtet worden? Er ist auf der Brücke getödtet worden.—Wollen Sie mir Geld leihen, um Brod zu kaufen? Ja, ich will Ihnen welches leihen.—Wann wollen Sie es mir<sup>6</sup> leihen? Ich will es<sup>7</sup> Ihnen jetzt leihen.—Wo ist es? Da ist es.—Haben Sie Ihren Freunden Geld geliehen? Ich habe ihnen keines geliehen.—Warum haben Sie ihnen keines geliehen? Weil ich keines habe.—An wen<sup>8</sup> denken Sie? Ich denke an meine Brüder und Schwestern.—Denken Sie an<sup>9</sup> mich? Nein, ich denke nicht an Sie.—Wollen Sie mit mir gehen? Ich habe nicht Zeit, mit Ihnen zu gehen.—Hat der Knabe ein Nest gefunden? Ja, er hat eines gefunden.—Hat er den Vogel getödtet? Nein, er hat ihn nicht getödtet.—Haben Sie den Mann angehört? Ja, ich habe ihn angehört.<sup>10</sup>—Hat er Ihnen zugehört?<sup>11</sup> Nein, er hat mir nicht zugehört.—Warum hat er Ihnen nicht zugehört? Weil er Kopfschmerzen hatte.—Hat der Knabe Lust, den Mann<sup>12</sup> anzuhören? Er will ihn nicht anhören.—Hat die Magd Lust, ihn anzuhören? Sie hat Lust, ihn anzuhören.—Wollen Sie Ihrem<sup>13</sup> Bruder antworten? Ich will ihm<sup>14</sup> antworten.—Wollen Sie Ihren<sup>15</sup> Brüdern antworten? Ich will ihnen<sup>16</sup> antworten.—Wollen Sie dieses Billet beantworten? Ich will darauf<sup>17</sup> antworten.—Wollen Sie diese Billette beantworten? Ich will sie nicht beantworten.—Will Ihr Freund meinen Brief beantworten? Er will ihn beantworten.—Hat der Doctor Ihr Billet beantwortet? Er hat es nicht beantwortet.—Welchen Brief hat er beantwortet? Er hat den des Bäckers beantwortet.—Will er den Brief des Geld-

<sup>1</sup> Auf and in, when not implying motion from one place to another, govern the dative case. See also Section on Prepositions. <sup>2</sup> See Passive Verbs, Appendix, page vi. <sup>3</sup> See Note 2, page 44, and Note 4, page 70. <sup>4</sup> The personal pronouns may be used in the dative case instead of the possessive pronouns. <sup>5</sup> Notice that the verb to think governs the genitive in English, the accusative with the preposition an in German, and the dative in French and Italian. <sup>6</sup> Anhören go-

## SECTION XXII.—PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

### EXERCISE 22.

est ce gant? C'est le vôtre (or C'est à vous).<sup>4</sup> — A qui sont ces gants? Ce sont les leurs. — Où les ont-ils achetés? Chez le chapelier. — Avez-vous reçu hier une lettre de votre ami? Oui, j'en ai reçu une de lui, et je l'ai envoyée à votre sœur. — Où est le médecin? Il est dans le jardin avec son voisin. — Où sont mes livres? Ils sont sur la table. — Parlez-vous de mon frère? Je ne parle pas de lui. — De qui parlez-vous? Je parle de l'homme qui a<sup>5</sup> été tué aujourd'hui. — Où a-t-il été tué? Il a été tué sur le pont. — Voulez-vous me prêter de l'argent pour acheter du pain? Oui, je veux vous en prêter. — Quand voulez-vous me le prêter? Je veux vous le prêter à présent. — Où est-il? Le voilà. — Avez-vous prêté de l'argent à vos amis? Non, je ne leur en ai pas prêté. — Pourquoi ne leur en avez-vous pas prêté? Parce que je n'en ai pas. — A qui<sup>6</sup> pensez-vous? Je pense à mes frères et à mes sœurs. — Pensez-vous à moi? Non, je ne pense pas à vous. — Voulez-vous aller avec moi? Je n'ai pas le temps d'aller avec vous. — Le garçon a-t-il trouvé un nid? Oui, il en a trouvé un. — A-t-il tué l'oiseau? Non, il ne l'a pas tué. — Avez-vous écouté l'homme? Oui, j'<sup>7</sup> l'ai écouté. — Vous a-t-il écouté? Non, il ne m'a pas écouté. — Pourquoi ne vous a-t-il pas écouté? Parce qu'il avait mal à la tête. — Le garçon a-t-il envie d'écouter l'homme? Il ne veut pas l'écouter. — La fille a-t-elle envie de l'écouter? Elle a envie de l'écouter. — Voulez-vous répondre<sup>8</sup> à votre frère? Je veux lui<sup>9</sup> répondre. — Voulez-vous répondre à vos frères? Je veux leur<sup>9</sup> répondre. — Voulez-vous répondre à ce billet? Je veux y<sup>10</sup> répondre. — Voulez-vous répondre à ces billets? Je ne veux pas y répondre. — Votre ami veut-il répondre à ma lettre? Il veut y répondre. — Le médecin a-t-il répondu à votre billet? Il n'y a pas répondu. — A quelle lettre a-t-il répondu? Il a répondu à celle du boulanger. — Veut-il répondre à la lettre du banquier? Non, il ne veut pas répondre à la lettre du

loro. — Dove li hanno comprati? Dal cappellaio. — ricevuto ieri una lettera dal di Lei amico? Sì, ne ho una da lui, e l'ho mandata alla di Lei sorella. — medico? Egli è nel giardino col suo vicino. — Dov' miei libri? Sono sulla tavola. — Parla Ella di mio Non parlo di lui. — Di chi parla Ella? Parlo dell'uoi stato ucciso<sup>2</sup> oggi. — Dov' è egli stato ucciso? Eg ucciso sul ponte. — Vuol Ella prestarmi danaro per del pane? Sì, voglio prestargliene. — Quando v prestarmelo? Voglio prestarglielo adesso. — Dov' è? là. — Ha Ella prestato del danaro ai di Lei amici? N prestato loro. — Perché non ne ha prestato loro? Po ne ho. — A chi<sup>3</sup> pensa Ella? Penso ai miei fratelli ed sorelle. — Pensa Ella a me? Non penso a Lei (or a Vuol Ella andare meco? Non ho tempo di andare con Ha trovato un nido il ragazzo? Sì, egli ne ha trovato Ha egli ucciso l'uccello? Egli non l'ha ucciso. — Ha coltato l'uomo? Sì<sup>4</sup>, l'ho ascoltato. — Vi ha egli asc L'ha egli ascoltato)? Egli non mi ha ascoltato. — non vi ha ascoltato? Poiché egli aveva mal di testa. — ragazzo desiderio d'ascoltar l'uomo? Egli non vuol a — Ha voglia la ragazza di ascoltarlo? Ella ha voglia tarlo. — Vuol Ella rispondere al<sup>5</sup> di Lei fratello? V pondergli.<sup>6</sup> — Vuol Ella rispondere ai<sup>5</sup> di Lei fratelli? risponder<sup>8</sup> loro. — Vuol Ella rispondere a questo l Voglio risponderci.<sup>7</sup> — Vuol Ella rispondere a questi Non voglio risponderci. — Vuol il di Lei amico rispon mia lettera? Vuol risponderci. — Ha il medico risp Lei biglietto? Egli non ci ha risposto. — A qual le egli risposto? Egli ha risposto a quella del fornai. — egli rispondere alla lettera del banchiere? Non vuol ri alla lettera del banchiere, ma vuol rispondere a quell madre. — Le ha mai prestato danaro il banchiere?

verbs the accusative and *zuhören* the dative case; *écouter* and *ascoltare* govern the accusative. <sup>7</sup> See verbs *antworten* and *beantworten*, page 134. that the verbs *répondre* and *rispondere* govern the dative case, that *leur* and *loro* are used in reference to persons, and *y*, *ci*, *vi* in reference to letters  
<sup>8</sup> See Note 1, page 136. <sup>10</sup> See Note 1, page 142.

## EXERCISE 22.

banker ever lent you any money? He has never lent me any. — Will he lend me some now? He will not lend you any now. — When will he lend me some? He will lend you some to-morrow. — Has your son sent for the hairdresser? Yes, he has sent for the hairdresser and tailor. — Has the tailor made my coat? No, he has not made it. — When will he make it? He will make it to-morrow. — Will he make it well? Yes, he will make it well. — Has the shoemaker made the boots and shoes well? No, he has made them badly. — Does he ever make them well? No, he never makes them well. Is your aunt well? She is unwell. — Why has your uncle sent for the bookseller? Because he has a mind to buy a few books, some pens, ink and paper. — Which books has he a mind to buy? He will buy the tailor's books. — Why did your grandfather send for the baker? Because he has a mind to buy some bread. — Will he have a waistcoat made? He will have one made. — When will he have it made? He will have it made just now. — Have you found what you lost? Yes, I have found it.

|                |                  |
|----------------|------------------|
| The insect.    | the spider.      |
| The fly.       | the ant.         |
| The gnat.      | the grasshopper. |
| The butterfly. | the beetle.      |
| The moth.      | the caterpillar. |
| The bee.       | the snail.       |
| The wasp.      | the worm.        |
| The flea.      | the leech.       |
| The louse.     | the snake.       |
| The bug.       | the viper.       |

wechslers beantworten? Nein, er will nicht auf<sup>1</sup> den des Geldwechslers, sondern auf<sup>1</sup> den seiner Mutter antworten. — Hat der Geldwechsler Ihnen je Geld geliehen? Er hat mir nie welches geliehen. — Will er mir jetzt welches leihen? Er will Ihnen jetzt keines leihen. — Wann wird<sup>2</sup> er mir welches leihen? Er wird<sup>2</sup> Ihnen morgen welches leihen. — Hat Ihr Sohn den Friseur holen lassen? Ja, er hat den Friseur und den Schneider holen lassen. — Hat der Schneider meinen Rock gemacht? Nein, er hat ihn nicht gemacht. — Wann wird<sup>2</sup> er ihn machen? Er wird<sup>2</sup> ihn morgen machen. — Will er ihn gut machen? Er will ihn gut machen. — Hat der Schuhmacher die Stiefel und die Schuhe gut gemacht? Nein, er hat sie schlecht gemacht. — Hat er sie je gut gemacht? Nein, er hat sie nie gut gemacht. — Ist Ihre Tante wohl? Sie ist unwohl. — Warum hat Ihr Onkel den Buchhändler holen lassen? Weil er Lust, einige Bücher, Federn, Dinte und Papier zu kaufen<sup>3</sup> hat. — Welche Bücher hat er Lust zu kaufen? Er will die des Schneiders kaufen. — Warum hat Ihr Großvater den Bäcker holen lassen? Weil er Lust, Brod zu kaufen hat. — Will er eine Weste machen lassen? Er will eine machen lassen. — Wann will er sie machen lassen? Er will sie sogleich machen lassen. — Haben Sie gefunden was Sie verloren haben? Ja, ich habe es gefunden.

|                    | Gen.   | Pl. |               | Gen.   | Pl. |
|--------------------|--------|-----|---------------|--------|-----|
| das Insect,        | es, s, | en. | die Spinne,   | es, s, | en. |
| die Fliege,        | —      | n.  | die Ameise,   | —      | n.  |
| die Mücke,         | —      | n.  | die Grille,   | —      | n.  |
| der Schmetterling, | es, s, | e.  | der Käfer,    | s,     | —   |
| die Motte,         | —      | n.  | die Raupe,    | —      | n.  |
| die Biene,         | —      | n.  | die Schnecke, | —      | n.  |
| die Wespe,         | —      | n.  | der Wurm,     | es, s, | cr. |
| der Floh,          | es, s, | e.  | der Blutegel, | s,     | —   |
| die Laus,          | —      | e.  | die Schlange, | —      | n.  |
| die Wanze,         | —      | n.  | die Natter,   | —      | n.  |

<sup>1</sup> cases governed by *antworten* and *beantworten*, page 134.

<sup>2</sup> See the verb *werden*, Appendix, page vi.

<sup>3</sup> See Note 2, on removal of finite verb.

## EXERCISE 22.

banquier, mais à celle de sa mère. — Le banquier vous a-t-il jamais prêté de l'argent? Il ne m'en a jamais prêté. — Vient-il m'en prêter à présent? Il ne veut pas vous en prêter à présent. — Quand m'en prêtera-t-il?<sup>4</sup> Il vous en prêtera<sup>4</sup> demain. — Votre fils a-t-il envoyé chercher le perruquier? Oui, il a envoyé chercher le perruquier et le tailleur. — Le tailleur a-t-il fait mon habit? Non, il ne l'a pas fait. — Quand le fera-t-il? Il le fera<sup>4</sup> demain. — Le fera-t-il bien? Il le fera bien. — Le cordonnier a-t-il bien fait les bottes et les souliers? Non, il les a mal faits. — Les fait-il jamais bien? Non, il ne les fait jamais bien. — Votre tante se porte-t-elle bien? Elle ne se porte pas bien. — Pourquoi votre oncle a-t-il envoyé chercher le libraire? Parce qu'il a envie d'acheter quelques livres, des plumes, de l'encre, et du papier. — Quels livres a-t-il envie d'acheter? Il veut acheter les livres du tailleur. — Pourquoi votre grand-père a-t-il envoyé chercher le boulanger? Parce qu'il a envie d'acheter du pain. — Veut-il faire faire un gilet? Il veut en faire faire un. — Quand le fera-t-il faire? Il le fera faire tout-à-l'heure. — Avez-vous trouvé ce que vous avez perdu? Oui, je l'ai trouvé.

l' (un) insecte.  
la monche.  
le cousin.  
le papillon.  
la mite, teigne.  
l' (une) abeille.  
la guêpe.  
la puce.  
le pou.  
la punaise.

l' (une) araignée.  
la fourmi.  
la sauterelle.  
l' (un) escarbot.  
la chenille.  
le limaçon.  
le ver.  
la sangsue.  
la couleuvre.  
la vipère.

me ne ha mai prestato. — Vuol egli prestarmene adesso? Non vuol prestargliene adesso. — Quando me ne presterà?<sup>5</sup> Gliene presterà<sup>5</sup> domani. — Ha il-di Lei figlio mandato a cercare il parrucchiere? Sì, egli ha mandato a cercare il parrucchiere ed il sartore. — Ha il sartore fatto il mio vestito? Egli non l'ha fatto. — Quando lo farà<sup>5</sup> egli? Lo farà<sup>5</sup> domani. — Lo farà egli bene? Lo farà bene. — Ha fatto bene gli stivali e le scarpe il calzolaio? No, li ha fatti male. — Li fa mai bene? Egli non li fa mai bene. — Sta bene la di Lei zia? Ella non ista bene. — Perchè ha il di Lei zio mandato a cercare il libraio? Poichè egli ha voglia di comprare alcuni libri, delle penne, dell' inchiostro e della carta. — Che libri ha egli desiderio di comprare? Vuol comprare i libri del sartore. — Perchè ha il di Lei nonno mandato a cercare il fornai? Poichè ha desiderio di comprare del pane. — Vuol egli far fare un giubbotto? Ha desiderio di far farne uno. — Quando lo farà egli fare? Lo farà fare subito. — Ha Ella trovato ciò che Ella ha perduto? Sì, l'ho trovato.

l' (un) insetto.  
la mosca.  
la zanzara.  
la farfalla.  
la tignuola.  
l' ape (f.), la pecchia.  
la vespa.  
la pulce.  
il pidocchio.  
la cimice.

il ragno.  
la formica.  
la cavalletta.  
lo scarafaggio.  
il brucio.  
la chiocciola.  
il verme.  
la sanguisuga.  
la biscia.  
la vipera.

<sup>4</sup> See future terminations of French verbs, Appendix, page xix., and (*faire*) irregular verbs, page xxviii. Appendix, page xxx., and (*faire*) irregular verbs, pages xxxi. and xxxii.

<sup>5</sup> See future terminations of Italian verbs.

# SECTION XXIII.—INDEFINITE OR IMPRO-

People, folks, they (govern the verb in the plural).  
 Every one, everybody.  
 No one, nobody.  
 Somebody, some one, anybody.  
 Several\*, many\*.<sup>1</sup>  
 Many a one, many a.†  
 Some.\*  
 Each, or every one, each.\*

Each other.

Other.\*

The same.\*

Both.\*

Whoever, whosoever, any one, who.  
 Such a one, such a.†

**All** (everything), **something**, **nothing**.  
**It**, **so**.\*

People say *so*. — *It is said*. — *It has been said*.  
**Is there?** **Are there?** **There is.** **There are.**

Infinitive.

**To take place,**

Past part.

**taken place.**

Do you like?

Does he like?

Do they like?

to talk? No, I like to study, play, and dance.

Man (indeclinable, always requires the verb).  
 Jedermann (declinable).  
 Niemand, keiner (decl.).  
 Jemand, einer (decl.).  
 Mehrere\*, verschiedene\* (decl.).  
 Mancher\* (decl.).  
 Einige\*, etliche\* (decl.).  
 Jeder (decl.).

Einander.

Ander\* (decl.).  
 Derselbe\* (decl.).

Beide, beides (decl.).  
 Wer (immer), ein jeder der (decl.), irgend einer (decl.).

Solcher\*, ein Solcher\*, Solch ein\*, einer.\*  
**Alles** (decl.), **Etwas** (indecl.), **Nichts** (indecl.).

**Es.**

*Man sagt es*. — *Man hat es gesagt*.  
**Gibt es?** **Ist — da?** **Sind — da?** **Es gibt\*, ist, sind.**

Past part.

**Statt gefunden.**

Infinitive.

**Statt finden,**

Haben, essen, trinken Sie gern?

Hat, iszt, trinkt er gern?

Haben, essen, trinken sie gern?

Gefällt es Ihnen zu reden?  
 spielen und tanzen.

{ mögen Sie,  
 { belieben Sie,  
 { mag er,  
 { beliebt er,  
 { mögen sie,  
 { belieben sie,

{ or gefällt  
 { Ihnen, ihm,  
 { ihnen....?

Nein, es gefällt mir zu studiren,

with or without a noun; those marked with (+) are always used with a noun, the others are always used without a noun. *solch* precedes *ein*, *solch* remains unchanged and *ein* is declined. *Es gibt* implies indefinite existence, *es ist*, *es sind* imply definite existence. For the sake of sound, *von* is used instead of *aus* when the adjectives and participles to agree in gender and number; as, *On n'est pas heureux* when united. For the sake of sound, *von* is used instead of *aus* when the adjectives and participles to agree in gender and number; as, *On n'est pas heureux* when united.

## SECTION XXIII.—INDEFINITE OR IMPROPER PRONOUNS.

On, l'on (always require the verb in the singular).<sup>6</sup>

Chacun, tout le monde.

Personne, pas, un\*, nul\*, aucun\*—ne.

Quelqu'un, certain.†

Plusieurs.\*

Maint.\*

Quelques-uns, quelque.†

Chacun, chaque.†

L'un, l'autre.

Autre\*, autrui.

Le même.\*

L'un et l'autre.

Quiconque.

Tel\*, un tel.\*

**Tout, quelque chose, rien.**

**Le.**

*On le dit.* — *On l'a dit.*

**Y a-t-il? Il y a.**

Infinitive.

**Avoir lieu,**

Past part.

**eu lieu.**

Aimez-vous?

Aime-t-il?

Aiment-ils?

Aimez-vous à parler? Non, j'aime à étudier, à jouer et à danser.

Si (governs the verb in the singular or plural).<sup>6</sup>

Ognuno, ciascuno, ciascheduno.

Nessuno\*, niuno\*, veruno.

Qualcuno, qualcheduno, alcuno\*, taluno.

Parecchi.\*

Altrettali\*, parecchi.\*

Alcuni.\*

Ogni (is used with nouns, *m.* or *f.*, in the singular only).

(*Ognisanti*, All Saints' Day, is an exception).

L'un, l'altro.

Altro\*, altrui.

Medesimo\*, stesso.\*

Ambedue, l'uno e l'altro.

Chiunque, qualunque.\*

Tale\*, cotale.\*

**Tutto, qualche cosa, niente.**

**Lo** (not expressed in the simple tenses).

*Si dice?*, *si dicono.* — *L'hanno detto.*

**C'è? V'è? Ci or vi sono? C'è, ve, ci or vi s**

Infinitive.

**Aver luogo,**

Past part.

**avuto luogo.**

*Le or vi piace, or piacciono?*

*Gli piace, or piacciono?*

*Piace loro, or piacciono loro?*

*Le piace parlare? No, mi piace studiare, giuocare e balls*

on after *et, si, ou*, when not immediately followed by *le, la, les, lui, leur*; as, *et l'on dit, et on le dit*. <sup>6</sup> *Si* requires the verb in the plural when the objective case is in the plural; as, *Si dicono delle bugie*, they tell stories. <sup>7</sup> In such expressions as, *they tell me, I am told, we are told, &c.*, do not say, *si* but *mi si dice*; it is even better to say *mi vien detto, mi è detto*, changing the active into the passive; *mi è stato detto*, I have been told. *Si* is never used the reflective pronoun *se, si*, as in French *on se*: *uno, taluno, alcuno, taluni, alcuni*, or a pronoun denoting the sense of the phrase, must then be used; or *taluno si lusingo*, one flatters oneself. *Si* is changed into *se* before *ne*, and preceded by *non* in a negative sentence; *non se ne parla*, they do not speak of it.

## SECTION XXIII.—INDEFINITE OR IMPROPER PRONOUNS.

|                   |                                     |                                  |
|-------------------|-------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Must I?           | Am I to?                            | } With a verb in the infinitive. |
| Must you?         | Are you to?                         |                                  |
| Must he?          | Is he to?                           |                                  |
| Must we?          | Are we to?                          |                                  |
| Must they?        | Are they to?                        |                                  |
| Must one, people? | Is one, are people to? <sup>6</sup> |                                  |

|                       |                        |                                  |
|-----------------------|------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Muß ich? <sup>1</sup> | Soll ich? <sup>2</sup> | } With a verb in the infinitive. |
| Müssen Sie?           | Sollen Sie?            |                                  |
| Muß er?               | Soll er?               |                                  |
| Müssen wir?           | Sollen wir?            |                                  |
| Müssen sie?           | Sollen sie?            |                                  |
| Muß man?              | Soll man?              |                                  |

## II.

## That (conjunction).

|                        |                        |                                  |
|------------------------|------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Can I?                 | May I?                 | } With a verb in the infinitive. |
| Can you?               | May you?               |                                  |
| Can he?                | May he?                |                                  |
| Can we?                | May we?                |                                  |
| Can they?              | May they?              |                                  |
| Can (any) one, people? | May (any) one, people? |                                  |

## Wenn.

Das! { Both these conjunctions remove the finite verb to the end of the sentence

|                        |                       |                        |                                  |
|------------------------|-----------------------|------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Kann ich? <sup>3</sup> | Mag ich? <sup>4</sup> | Darf ich? <sup>5</sup> | } With a verb in the infinitive. |
| Können Sie?            | Mögen Sie?            | Dürfen Sie?            |                                  |
| Kann er?               | Mag er?               | Darf er?               |                                  |
| Können wir?            | Mögen wir?            | Dürfen wir?            |                                  |
| Können sie?            | Mögen sie?            | Dürfen sie?            |                                  |
| Kann man?              | Mag man?              | Darf man?              |                                  |

|                    |                      |
|--------------------|----------------------|
| The play.          | a string instrument. |
| The ball.          | a wind instrument.   |
| The concert.       | the trumpet.         |
| The music.         | the horn.            |
| The song.          | the bassoon.         |
| The accompaniment. | the clarinet.        |
| The violin.        | the hautboy.         |
| The tenor, viol.   | the flute.           |
| The violoncello.   | the flageolet.       |
| The bass.          | the fife.            |
| The bow.           | the drum.            |
| The guitar.        | the piano-forte.     |
| The harp.          | the organ.           |
| The string.        | the orchestra.       |

|                 | Gen.   | Pl.  |                       | Gen.      | Pl.   |
|-----------------|--------|------|-----------------------|-----------|-------|
| das Schauspiel, | es, s, | e.   | das Saiteninstrument, | es, s,    | e.    |
| der Ball,       | es, s, | “ e. | das Blasinstrument,   | es, s,    | e.    |
| das Concert,    | es, s, | e.   | die Trompete,         | —         | n.    |
| die Musik,      | —      | en.  | das Horn,             | es, s, e, | “ er. |
| das Lied,       | es, s, | er.  | das Fagott,           | es, s,    | e.    |
| die Begleitung, | —      | en.  | die Clarinette,       | —         | n.    |
| die Violine,    | —      | n.   | die Hoboe,            | —         | s.    |
| die Viole,      | —      | n.   | die Flöte,            | —         | n.    |
| das Violoncell, | es, s, | e.   | das Flageolet,        | s,        | e.    |
| der Baß,        | sses,  | “ e. | die Pfeife,           | —         | n.    |
| der Bogen,      | s,     | “    | die Trommel,          | —         | n.    |
| die Guitarre,   | —      | n.   | das Fortepiano,       | s,        | s.    |
| die Harfe,      | —      | n.   | die Orgel,            | —         | n.    |
| die Saite,      | —      | n.   | das Orchester,        | s,        | —     |

<sup>1</sup> *Müssen* has nearly the same signification as the English verb *must*. <sup>2</sup> *Sollen* implies moral obligation subject to the will of another person. <sup>3</sup> *Können* implies both moral and physical possibility. <sup>4</sup> *Mögen* implies permission from another person. <sup>5</sup> *Dürfen* denotes the liberty of doing a thing without being subject to the will of another person. <sup>6</sup> The verbs, *dürfen*, *lassen*, *mögen*, *müssen*, *können*, *sollen*, *wollen*, *lehren*, *lernen*, are combined with the following verb

## SECTION XXIII.—INDEFINITE OR IMPROPER PRONOUNS.

|              |                       |                                  |
|--------------|-----------------------|----------------------------------|
| Dois-je?     | Me faut-il?           | } With a verb in the infinitive. |
| Devez-vous?  | Vous faut-il?         |                                  |
| Doit-il?     | Lui faut-il?          |                                  |
| Devons-nous? | Nous faut-il?         |                                  |
| Doivent-ils? | Leur faut-il?         |                                  |
| Doit-on?     | Faut-il? <sup>8</sup> |                                  |

**Si** (*Si* before 11, 11s).

**Que** (conjunction).<sup>7</sup>

|                                                    |                                  |
|----------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Puis-je ( <i>or est-ce que je peux, or puis</i> )? | } With a verb in the infinitive. |
| Pouvez-vous?                                       |                                  |
| Peut-il?                                           |                                  |
| Pouvons-nous?                                      |                                  |
| Peuvent-ils?                                       |                                  |
| Peut-on?                                           |                                  |

|                         |                                  |
|-------------------------|----------------------------------|
| le spectacle.           | l' (un) instrument à cordes.     |
| le bal.                 | l' (un) instrument à vent.       |
| le concert.             | la trompette.                    |
| la musique.             | le cor.                          |
| la chanson.             | le basson.                       |
| l' (un) accompagnement. | la clarinette.                   |
| le violon.              | le hautbois.                     |
| la viole.               | la flûte.                        |
| le violoncelle.         | le flageolet.                    |
| la contrebasse.         | le fife.                         |
| l' (un) archet.         | le tambour.                      |
| la guitare.             | le piano ( <i>forte</i> ).       |
| la harpe.               | l' (un) orgue ( <i>pl. f.</i> ). |
| la corde.               | l' (un) orchestre.               |

|                            |                       |                 |
|----------------------------|-----------------------|-----------------|
| Debbo, devo, deggio?       | Mi bisogna?           | Mi è d' uopo?   |
| Debbe, deve Ella? dovete?  | Le bisogna?           | Le è d' uopo?   |
| Debbe, deve, dee?          | Gli bisogna?          | Gli è d' uopo?  |
| Dobbiamo?                  | Ci bisogna?           | Ci è d' uopo?   |
| Debbono, devono, deggiono? | Bisogna loro?         | E loro d' uopo? |
| Si debbe, deve, dee?       | Bisogna? <sup>8</sup> | E d' uopo?      |

**Se.**<sup>7</sup>

**Che** (conjunction)

|                         |                                  |
|-------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Posso ( <i>forse</i> )? | } With a verb in the infinitive. |
| Può Ella? potete?       |                                  |
| Può?                    |                                  |
| Possiamo?               |                                  |
| Possono?                |                                  |
| Si può?                 |                                  |

|                          |                             |
|--------------------------|-----------------------------|
| lo spettacolo.           | lo strumento da cord.       |
| il ballo.                | lo strumento da fiato.      |
| il concerto.             | la tromba.                  |
| la musica.               | il corno.                   |
| la canzone.              | il fagotto.                 |
| l' accompagnamento.      | la chitarra.                |
| il violino.              | l' (un) oboè.               |
| la viola.                | il flauto.                  |
| il violoncello.          | lo zupfelo.                 |
| il violone, contrabasso. | il piffero.                 |
| l' (un) archetto.        | il tamburo.                 |
| la chitarra.             | il piano-forte.             |
| l' arpa ( <i>f.</i> ).   | l' organo.                  |
| la corda.                | l' orchestra ( <i>f.</i> ). |

<sup>7</sup> in the infinitive without the preposition *za*. See observation on these verbs, Appendix, page vi.  
<sup>8</sup> *sogna* governs the subjunctive mood with *que* and *che*.

<sup>7</sup> See Conjunctions, Section XXXII.

<sup>8</sup> *Il fau*



## EXERCISE 23.

What do people say? They say that we have been wrong in going to the ball. — When did the ball take place? It took place yesterday. — Who told you so? Your brother (has) told me so. — Who told it (to) your brother? His friend told him so. — I am told that you have bought a violin, a flute, and a piano; is it true? No, it is not true. — Who said so? Nobody said so. — Is there any money in the purse? No, there is none. — Are there any flowers in the garden? Yes, there are some. — What flowers are they? They are roses, violets, and tulips. — Will you have the kindness to give me a few of them, because they are beautiful ones, and I am fond of flowers? — Has the concert taken place? Yes, it has (taken place). — Do you like this wine? No, I do not (like it). — Does your brother like beef? Yes, he does (like it). — Does he like dancing<sup>a</sup> (or to dance)? Yes, he likes to dance, but he does not like to study. — Do you like apples and pears? Yes, I do like them. — Must I study? Yes, you must read and study. — Am I to go to the ball or the concert? You must go neither to the ball nor the concert, you must go to the play. — Who says so? Everybody says so. — Can you come and see me to-day? Yes, I can. — Must the tailor make you a new coat? Yes, he may make me one. — What do they say in town? They say nothing. — What did they say? They have said nothing. — What are people talking about? They are talking of the fruit-woman whose child was killed yesterday. — Where was it killed? It was killed in the square. — Has your brother received any letters from me? No, he has not received any from you, but he has received several notes from me. — What news is

Was sagt man? Man sagt, daß wir Unrecht hatten, auf<sup>1</sup> den Ball zu gehen. — Wann hat der Ball Statt gefunden? Er hat gestern Statt gefunden. — Wer hat es Ihnen gesagt? Ihr Bruder hat es mir gesagt. — Wer hat es Ihrem Bruder gesagt? Sein Freund hat es ihm gesagt. — Man hat mir gesagt, daß<sup>2</sup> Sie eine Violine, eine Flöte und ein Klavier gekauft haben<sup>3</sup>; ist das wahr? Nein, es ist nicht wahr. — Wer hat es gesagt? Niemand hat es gesagt. — Ist Geld in dem Bbeutel? Es ist keines darin. — Sind Blumen in dem Garten? Ja, es sind welche darin. — Was für Blumen sind darin? Es sind Rosen, Veilchen und Tulpen darin. — Wollen Sie die Güte haben, mir einige zu geben, weil<sup>4</sup> sie schön sind<sup>5</sup>, und die Blumen mir gefallen? — Hat das Concert Statt gefunden? Ja, es hat Statt gefunden. — Gefällt Ihnen dieser Wein? Nein, er gefällt mir nicht. — Iszt Ihr Bruder gern Ochsenfleisch? Ja, er iszt es gern. — Gefällt es ihm zu tanzen? Es gefällt ihm zu tanzen, aber es gefällt ihm nicht zu studiren. — Essen Sie gern Aepfel und Birnen? Ja, ich esse sie gern. — Musz ich studiren? Ja, Sie müssen lesen und studiren. — Soll ich auf<sup>1</sup> den Ball oder in das Concert gehen? Sie sollen weder in das Concert noch auf den Ball gehen. Sie müssen ins Theater gehen. — Wer sagt es? Jedermann sagt es. — Können Sie mich heute besuchen? Ja, ich kann es. — Musz der Schneider Ihnen einen neuen Rock machen? Ja, er mag mir einen machen. — Was sagt man in der Stadt? Man sagt Nichts. — Was hat man gesagt? Man hat Nichts gesagt. — Wovon spricht man? Man spricht von der Obsthändlerin, deren<sup>6</sup> Kind gestern getödtet worden ist.<sup>7</sup> — Wo ist es getödtet worden?<sup>8</sup> Es ist auf dem Platze getödtet worden.<sup>9</sup> — Hat Ihr Bruder von mir Briefe erhalten? Nein, er hat keine von Ihnen, aber<sup>10</sup> von mir hat er<sup>11</sup> verschiedene Billette erhalten. — Was sagt<sup>12</sup> man Neues? Man sagt nichts Neues. — Spricht man davon? Man spricht nicht

<sup>1</sup> See Note 1, page 138, and prepositions, Section XXXI. <sup>2</sup> See conjunctions that remove the verb to end of sentence, Section XXXII. <sup>3</sup> *Que* and *che* govern the subjunctive mood. See conjunctions, Section XXXII. <sup>4</sup> See passive verbs, Appendix, page vi. <sup>5</sup> See Note 3, page 114. <sup>6</sup> When a sentence begins (or two minor sentences combine, and the first begins) with an adverb, conjunction, or preposition followed by its case, the nominative case in the second

## EXERCISE 23.

Que dit-on? On dit que nous avons eu tort d'aller au bal. — Quand le bal a-t-il eu lieu? Il a eu lieu hier. — Qui vous l'a dit? Votre frère me l'a dit. — Qui l'a dit à votre frère? Son ami le lui a dit. — On m'a dit que vous avez acheté un violon, une flûte, et un piano; est-ce vrai? Non, ce n'est pas vrai. — Qui l'a dit? Personne. — Y a-t-il de l'argent dans la bourse? Non, il n'y en a pas. — Y a-t-il des fleurs dans le jardin? Oui, il y en a. — Quelle espèce de fleurs y a-t-il? Il y a des roses, des violettes, et des tulipes. — Voulez-vous avoir la bonté de m'en donner quelques-unes, parce qu'elles sont jolies, et j'aime les fleurs? — Le concert a-t-il eu lieu? Oui, il a eu lieu. — Aimez-vous ce vin? Non, je ne l'aime pas. — Votre frère aime-t-il le bœuf? Oui, il l'aime. — Aime-t-il à danser? Oui, il aime à danser, mais il n'aime pas à étudier. — Aimez-vous les pommes et les poires? Oui, je les aime. — Me faut-il étudier? Oui, il vous faut lire et étudier. — Dois-je aller au bal ou au concert? Il ne vous faut aller ni au bal ni au concert, il faut que vous alliez au théâtre. — Qui le dit? Tout le monde le dit. — Pouvez-vous venir me voir aujourd'hui? Oui, je le puis. — Le tailleur faut-il qu'il vous fasse un habit? Oui, il peut m'en faire un. — Que dit-on en ville? On n'y dit rien. — Qu'a-t-on dit? On n'a rien dit. — De quoi parle-t-on? On parle de la marchande de fruits, dont l'enfant a été tué hier. — Où a-t-il été tué? Il a été tué sur la place. — Votre frère a-t-il reçu des lettres (de ma part) de moi? Non, il n'en a pas reçu de vous, mais il a reçu plusieurs billets de moi. — Que dit-on de nouveau? On ne dit rien de nouveau.

Che si dice (or che dicono)? Dicono (or si dice) che abbiamo avuto torto d'andare al ballo. — Quand ha avuto luogo il ballo? Ha avuto luogo ieri. — Chi gliel' (or ve l') ha detto? Vostro fratello me l'ha detto. — Chi l'ha detto al di Lei fratello? Il suo amico glielo ha detto. — Mi vien detto che avete comprato un violino, un flauto ed un piano-forte; è vero? Non è vero. — Chi l'ha detto? Nessuno. — C'è del danaro nella borsa? No, non c'è ne. — Ci son fiori nel giardino? Sì, ce ne sono. — Chi fioriscono? Ci sono delle rose, delle violette, e dei tulipani. — Vuc Ella (or volete) aver la bontà di darmene alcuni, poichè sono belli ed i fiori mi piacciono? — Ha avuto luogo il concerto? Sì, ha avuto luogo. — Le piace questo vino? Non mi piace. — Piac al di Lei fratello il manzo? Sì, gli piace. — Gli piace ballare (o il ballare)? Sì, gli piace ballare, ma non gli piace studiare (or lo studiare). — Le piacciono le mele e le pere? Sì, mi piacciono. — Debbo io (or mi bisogna, or mi è d'uopo) studiare? Sì, Ella deve (or Le bisogna, or Le è d'uopo) leggere e studiare. — Debbo forse (or mi è d'uopo, or mi abbisogna) andare al ballo o al concerto? Non Le bisogna andare al ballo nè al concerto, mi bisogna ch'Ella vada (or Le abbisogna andare) allo spettacolo. — Chi lo dice? Ognuno lo dice. — Può Ella venire a vedermi oggi? Sì, posso venire. — Bisogna che il sartore Le faccia un vestito? Sì, egli può farmene uno. — Che si dice (che vien detto) nella città? Non vi si dice niente. — Che cosa è stato detto (or che hanno detto)? Non hanno detto niente. — Di che cosa si parla? Si parla (or parlano) della fruttaiuola, il di cui fanciullo (or bambino) è stato ucciso ieri. — Dov'è stato ucciso? È stato ucciso nella piazza. — Ha ricevuto lettere di me il di Lei fratello? Non ne ha ricevuto da Lei, ma da me ha ricevuto parecchi biglietti. — Che si dice di nuovo? Non si dice niente di nuovo. — Si parla (or parlano) di ciò? Non se ne parla. — Si crede (or credono) questo? Non lo credono.

must follow the verb. <sup>7</sup> In French participles are repeated before each noun. with the present participle in English. <sup>8</sup> See Note 3 on *andare*, *mandare*, page 135.

<sup>9</sup> In Italian the infinitive of a verb may be used as a noun. <sup>10</sup> See Notes on *ma*, *on*, *et*, pages 142 and 143.

## EXERCISE 23.

there? There is nothing new. — Do people speak of that? They do not speak of it. — Do people believe that? They do not believe it. — Who believes it? Everybody believes it, because everybody says that it is true. — Do you play the violin? No, I do not play the violin, but my brother plays the flute. — Who is to go to the market, to buy some butter, meat, and eggs? The poulterer must go (there). — What is he to buy? He is to buy some partridges, but he must not buy (them o'd) any old ones. — Such a one has told me that you have sold your horse; why did you sell it? Whoever told you so was wrong in telling you so, because I have not sold it.

davon. — Glaubst man es? Man glaubt es nicht. — Wer glaubt es? Jedermann glaubt es, weil<sup>1</sup> Jedermann sagt daß es wahr ist.<sup>1</sup> — Spielen Sie Violine? Nein, ich spiele sie nicht, aber mein Bruder bläst die Flöte. — Wer muß auf den Markt gehen, um Butter, Fleisch und Eier zu kaufen? Der Hühnerhändler muß dahin gehen. — Was soll er kaufen? Er soll Rebhühner kaufen, aber er muß keine alten kaufen. — Ein solcher<sup>2</sup> (or solch einer) hat mir gesagt, daß<sup>1</sup> Sie Ihr Pferd verkauft<sup>1</sup> haben; warum haben Sie es verkauft? Wer immer es Ihnen gesagt hat, hat Unrecht gehabt, es Ihnen zu sagen, denn<sup>3</sup> ich habe es nicht verkauft.

## IMPERSONAL VERBS DENOTING THE STATE OF THE WEATHER.

|                   |                      |
|-------------------|----------------------|
| It rains.         | it has rained.       |
| It snows.         | it has snowed.       |
| It hails.         | it has hailed.       |
| It thunders.      | it has thundered.    |
| It lightens.      | it has lightened.    |
| It freezes.       | it has frozen.       |
| It thaws.         | it has thawed.       |
| It is foggy.      | it is very slippery. |
| It is very dirty. | it is very dusty.    |
| All day long.     | all the morning.     |
| All night long.   | all the evening.     |

|                        |                        |
|------------------------|------------------------|
| Es regnet.             | es hat geregnet.       |
| Es schneit.            | es hat geschneit.      |
| Es hagelt.             | es hat gehagelt.       |
| Es donnert.            | es hat gedonnert.      |
| Es blitzt.             | es hat geblitzt.       |
| Es friert.             | es hat gefroren.       |
| Es thaut (auf).        | es hat gethaut.        |
| Es ist nebelicht.      | es ist sehr staubig.   |
| Es ist sehr schmutzig. | es ist sehr glitschig. |
| Den ganzen Tag.        | den ganzen Morgen.     |
| Die ganze Nacht.       | den ganzen Abend.      |

<sup>1</sup> Conjunctions that remove the verb to the end of the sentence.  
<sup>2</sup> See Note 2, page 142.  
<sup>3</sup> See Note 3, page 53.

<sup>2</sup> See Note 2, page 142.

<sup>3</sup> This conjunction does not remove the

## EXERCISE 23.

Parle-t-on de cela? On n'en parle pas.—Croit-on cela? On ne le croit pas.—Qui le croit? Tout le monde le croit, parce que tout le monde dit que c'est vrai.—Jouez-vous du violon? Non, je ne joue pas du violon, mais mon frère joue de la flûte.—Qui doit aller au marché, pour acheter du beurre, de la viande et des œufs? Le marchand de volaille doit y aller.—Que doit-il acheter? Il lui faut acheter des perdrix, mais il ne faut pas qu'il en achète de vieilles.—Un tel m'a dit que vous avez vendu votre cheval; pourquoi l'avez-vous vendu? Quiconque vous a dit cela a eu tort de vous le dire, parce que je ne l'ai pas vendu.

Chi lo crede? Ognuno lo crede, poichè ciascuno dice ch'è vero.—Suona Ella il violino? Non suono il violino, ma suona il flauto<sup>5</sup> il fratello mio.—Chi deve (or a chi bisogna, or a chi è d'uopo) andare al mercato per comprare del burro (or butirro), della carne e delle uova? Il pollainolo deve andarci.—Che cosa gli è d'uopo comprare? Gli bisogna (or gli è d'uopo, or deve) comprare delle pernici, ma egli non deve comprarle attempate.—Taluno (or cotale) mi ha detto che Ella ha venduto il di Lei cavallo; perchè l'ha Ella venduto? Chiconque Le ha detto questo ha avuto torto di dirglielo<sup>6</sup>, poichè non l'ho venduto.

## IMPERSONAL VERBS DENOTING THE STATE OF THE WEATHER.

|                                   |                               |
|-----------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Il pleut (or tombe de la pluie).  | il a plu.                     |
| Il neige (or tombe de la neige).  | il a neigé.                   |
| Il grêle (or tombe de la grêle).  | il a grêlé.                   |
| Il tonne (or fait du tonnerre).   | il a tonné.                   |
| Il éclaire (or fait des éclairs). | il a éclairé.                 |
| Il gèle.                          | il a gélé.                    |
| Il dégèle.                        | il a dégelé.                  |
| Il fait du brouillard.            | il fait bien glissant.        |
| Il fait bien de la crotte.        | il fait bien de la poussière. |
| Toute la journée.                 | toute la matinée.             |
| Toute la nuit.                    | toute la soirée.              |

|                    |                       |
|--------------------|-----------------------|
| Piove.             | è or ha piovuto.      |
| Nevica.            | è or ha nevicato.     |
| Grandina.          | è or ha grandinato.   |
| Tuona.             | è or ha tuonato.      |
| Balena.            | è or ha balenato.     |
| Gela.              | è or ha gelato.       |
| Dighiaccia.        | è or ha dighiacciato. |
| V'è nebbia.        | si sdrucciola.        |
| V'è molto fango.   | v'è molta polvere.    |
| Tutta la giornata. | tutta la mattina.     |
| Tutta la notte.    | tutta la sera.        |

<sup>5</sup> See Notes on personal pronouns, Sections VII., VIII., IX., and Note 5, page 103. The same combination takes place after the 1st and 2nd persons of imperative affirmative; as, *dategliene*, give him some.

How much? How many?  
 Much, a good (*or* great) deal of, many.  
 Too much, too many.  
 So much, so many.  
 A little, not much, many.

**But** (meaning only).

But little, only a little.

**Enough.**

Not enough, too little.

**Perhaps. — Still.**

Any more, some more, more.<sup>1</sup>  
 No more, not any more.<sup>2</sup>  
 How much, how many more?<sup>2</sup>  
 Much more, a great deal more, many more.  
 A little more.  
 Not much more, not many more.  
 One, two, three, &c., more.  
 A few more, several more.

Infinitive.

**To intend, to be inclined to,**

Past part.

**intended.**

*Not yet, already.*  
*Often, sometimes, now and then.*

Wie viel? Wie viele?  
 Viel, viele.  
 Zu viel, zu viele.  
 So viel, so viele.  
 Ein wenig, wenig, nicht viel, viele.

**Nur.**

Nur ein wenig, nur wenig.

**Genug.<sup>1</sup>**

Nicht genug, zu wenig.

**Vielleicht. — Noch.**

Noch.<sup>2</sup>  
 Kein (declined), mehr.<sup>2</sup>  
 Wie viel, viele — noch?<sup>2</sup>  
 Noch viel, viele.  
 Noch ein wenig.  
 Nicht mehr, viel, viele.  
 Noch ein (declined), zwei, drei, &c.  
 Noch einige, verschiedene.

Infinitive.

**Gedenken (gesonnen sein), zu,**

Past part.

**gedacht.**

*Noch nicht, schon.*  
*Oft, oftmals, manchmal.*

<sup>1</sup> *Genug* always follows the noun.  
 expressed by *mehr*, *plus*, and *più*.

<sup>2</sup> Take care not to confound the word *more* in these expressions with *more*, the sign of the comparative degree, which is  
<sup>3</sup> Notice that *more* in an affirmative or negative sentence is expressed differently.

## SECTION XXIV.—WORDS OF QUANTITY COMBINED WITH NOUNS.

Combien de?  
Beaucoup de.  
Trop de.  
Tant de.

Un peu de, peu de, ne — pas beaucoup de.

**Ne — que.**

Ne — que peu de, ne — guère de.

**Assez de.**

Ne — pas assez de, trop peu de.

*Peut-être. — Encore.*

Encore, du, de la, de l', des.<sup>4</sup>

Ne — plus de.<sup>4</sup>

Combien de — encore.<sup>4</sup>

Encore beaucoup de.

Encore un peu de.

Ne — plus guère de, ne — plus beaucoup de.

Encore un, une, deux, trois, &c.

Encore quelques, encore plusieurs.

Infinitive.  
**Compter<sup>4</sup>, avoir dessein de,**

Past part.  
**compté.**

*Ne — pas encore, déjà.*

*Souvent, quelquefois, de temps en temps.*

|                                |         |         |                  |
|--------------------------------|---------|---------|------------------|
| m.                             | f.      | pl. m.  | f.               |
| Quanto? <sup>4</sup>           | quanta? | quanti? | quante?          |
| Molto,                         | molta,  | molti,  | molte, or assai. |
| Troppo,                        | troppa, | troppi, | troppa.          |
| Tanto,                         | tanta,  | tanti,  | tante.           |
| Poco,                          | poca,   | pochi,  | poche.           |
| { Un poco di, non — molto, &c. |         |         |                  |

**Non — che.**

Non — che, or se non poco, or soltanto poco, &c.

**Abbastanza.**

Non — abbastanza, troppo poco.

*Forse. — Ancora.*

Ancora (sometimes followed by the article).<sup>4</sup>

Non — più.<sup>4</sup>

Quanto, -a, &c., ancora.<sup>4</sup>

Ancora molto, -a, &c.

Ancora poco, -a, &c., ancora un poco di.

Non — più molto, -a, &c.

Ancora un, uno, una, due, tre, &c.

Ancora alcuni, -e, parecchi, -e.

Infinitive.  
**Pensare, intendere<sup>4</sup>,**

Past part.  
**pensato, inte-**

*Non — ancora, non — per anco; già.*

*Spesso, qualche volta, di quando in quando.*

<sup>4</sup> The words *quanto, molto, troppo, tanto, poco* become adjectives, and agree with the nouns to which they are joined. <sup>5</sup> The verbs *compter, penser* are combined with the following verb in the infinitive mood without a preposition. See also Section XXXI, on Prepositions.

## EXERCISE 24.

Where are you going? I am going to (the) market.—Why are you going (there)? Because I want to buy some butter, cheese, and a rump of beef.—Must I buy much butter? Yes, you must buy a great deal of butter.—How much meat must I buy? You must only buy a little meat, but a great deal of bread.—Do you intend to buy many eggs? Yes, I intend to buy a great many eggs.—Have we much bread? We have a great deal of bread, but only a little wine.—Has the servant enough money to pay for it? Yes, Sir, he has enough money to pay for it.—Does he intend to bring the butter and eggs home? Yes, he does intend to bring them home.—I want a little money, can you lend me some? Yes, I can lend you some; but you must give it me back to-morrow, because I have promised to pay<sup>1</sup> my tailor<sup>1</sup> what I owe him.—Do you often go to market? I do not often go to the market, but I often go to the play.—Is there much wine in the house? There is no wine, but plenty of beer and cider. If you want any wine you must buy some.—Who is to pay for it? You must pay for it, because you have a great deal (plenty) of money.—Does the doctor intend to give me any more<sup>2</sup> physic? No, he intends to give you some more<sup>2</sup> wine and meat. I am glad of it, because I cannot<sup>2</sup> take any more<sup>2</sup> physic.—How much more meat do you want? I do not want much more meat, but I want a little more wine, tea, and coffee.

Wo gehen Sie hin? Ich gehe auf den Markt.—Warum gehen Sie dahin? Weil ich Butter, Käse und den Hintertheil von einem Ochsen kaufen will.—Muss ich viel Butter kaufen? Ja, Sie müssen viel Butter kaufen.—Wie viel Fleisch muss ich kaufen? Sie müssen nur wenig Fleisch, aber viel Brod kaufen.—Gedenken Sie viele Eier zu kaufen? Ja, ich gedenke viele Eier zu kaufen.—Haben wir viel Brod? Wir haben viel Brod, aber nur wenig Wein.—Hat der Bediente Geld genug, um dafür<sup>1</sup> zu bezahlen? Ja, mein Herr, er hat Geld genug, um dafür<sup>1</sup> zu bezahlen.—Ist er gesonnen, die Butter und die Eier nach Hause zu tragen? Ja, er ist gesonnen, sie nach Hause zu tragen.—Ich brauche ein wenig Geld, wollen Sie mir welches leihen? Ja, ich kann Ihnen welches leihen; aber Sie müssen es mir morgen wieder geben, weil ich meinem Schneider versprochen habe<sup>1</sup> ihm zu bezahlen, was ich ihm schuldig bin.—Gehen Sie oft auf den Markt? Ich gehe nicht oft auf den Markt, aber oft ins Schauspiel.—Ist viel Wein zu Hause? Es ist kein Wein zu Hause, aber viel Bier und Aepfelwein. Wenn Sie Wein brauchen, so<sup>2</sup> müssen Sie welchen kaufen.—Wer soll dafür bezahlen? Sie müssen dafür bezahlen, weil Sie viel Geld haben.—Ist der Arzt gesonnen, mir noch<sup>2</sup> Medicin zu geben? Nein, er gedenkt Ihnen noch<sup>2</sup> Wein und Fleisch zu geben.—Ich bin damit<sup>1</sup> zufrieden, denn ich kann keine<sup>2</sup> Medicin<sup>2</sup> mehr nehmen.—Wie viel Fleisch brauchen Sie noch? Ich brauche nicht mehr viel Fleisch, aber ich habe noch ein wenig Wein, Thee und Kaffee nöthig.

<sup>1</sup> See Note 2, page 108; Note 1, page 96; and Note 2, page 97.

<sup>2</sup> Adverbs of quantity, with the exception of *encore* and *bien*, require the preposition *de*

## EXERCISE 24.

Où allez-vous? Je vais au marché. — Pourquoi y allez-vous? Parce que j'ai besoin d'acheter du beurre, du fromage et une culotte de bœuf. — Dois-je acheter beaucoup<sup>2</sup> de beurre? Oui, vous devez acheter beaucoup de<sup>2</sup> beurre. — Combien de viande dois-je acheter? Il ne vous faut acheter que peu de viande, mais beaucoup de pain. — Comptez-vous acheter beaucoup d'œufs? Oui, je compte acheter beaucoup d'œufs. — Avons-nous beaucoup de pain? Nous avons beaucoup de pain, mais guère de vin. — Le domestique a-t-il assez d'argent pour le<sup>1</sup> payer? Oui, Monsieur, il en a assez pour le payer. — A-t-il dessein d'apporter le beurre et les œufs à la maison? Oui, il compte les y apporter. — J'ai besoin d'un peu d'argent, pouvez-vous m'en prêter? Oui, je puis vous en prêter, mais il vous faut me le rendre demain, parce que j'ai promis à mon tailleur de lui<sup>1</sup> payer ce que je lui dois. — Allez-vous souvent au marché? Je ne vais pas souvent au marché, mais je vais souvent au spectacle. — Y a-t-il beaucoup de vin à la maison? Il n'y a pas de vin, mais beaucoup de bière et de cidre; si vous voulez du vin, il vous faut en acheter. — Qui doit le payer? Vous devez le payer, parce que vous avez beaucoup d'argent. — Le médecin a-t-il dessein de me donner encore<sup>3</sup> de la médecine? Non, il a l'intention de vous donner encore<sup>3</sup> du vin et de la viande. J'en suis bien (aise) content, parce que je ne peux plus<sup>4</sup> prendre de<sup>5</sup> médecine. — Combien de viande vous faut-il encore? Il ne me faut plus beaucoup de viande, mais il me faut encore un peu de<sup>6</sup> vin, un peu de thé, et un peu de<sup>6</sup> café.

Dove va Ella (or andate)? Vo al mercato. — Perchè ci va Ella? Poichè mi bisogna (or è d'uopo) comprare del butirro, del cacio ed una groppa di manzo. — Debbo forse comprare molto<sup>2</sup> burro? Sì, Le abbisogna (or è d'uopo) comprare molto butirro. — Quanta<sup>2</sup> carne mi bisogna comprare? Le bisogna comprare soltanto poca<sup>2</sup> carne, ma molto pane. — Pensa Ella comprare molte<sup>2</sup> uova? Sì, intendo comprare molte uova. — Abbiamo molto pane? Abbiamo molto pane, ma solamente poco vino. — Ha il domestico abbastanza danaro per pagarlo?<sup>1</sup> Sì, Signore, egli ne ha abbastanza per pagarlo. — Intende egli portare a casa il butirro e le uova? Sì, egli pensa portarceli. — Mi abbisogna un poco danaro, può Ella forse prestarmene. — Sì, posso prestargliene<sup>5</sup>, ma Le abbisogna restituir-melo<sup>5</sup> domani, poichè ho promesso al mio sartore di pagargli ciò che gli debbo. — Va Ella (or andate) spesso al mercato? Io non vo spesso al mercato, ma vado spesso allo spettacolo. — C'è molto vino in casa? Non c'è vino in casa, ma molta birra e molto sidro; se Le è d'uopo vino, Le bisogna comprarne. — Chi deve (or a chi è d'uopo, or bisogna) pagarlo? Ella deve pagarlo, poichè ha molto danaro. — Intende il medico dar-mi ancora della medicina? No, egli pensa darle ancora<sup>6</sup> vino e carne. Ne son molto contento (or ciò mi rallegra molto), poichè non posso più prendere della medicina. — Quanta<sup>2</sup> carne Le abbisogna ancora? Non ho più bisogno di molta carne, ma mi abbisogna ancora poco vino, poco tè, ed un poco di caffè.

<sup>1</sup> when combined with a noun.<sup>2</sup> See Note 4, page 151.<sup>3</sup> See Note 6, page 146.<sup>4</sup> See Note 4, page 45.<sup>5</sup> See Notes 2 and 3, page 150.<sup>6</sup> See Note 2, page 108.<sup>7</sup> In French, partitives are repeated before each noun.



## SECTION XXIV.

The spade.  
The shovel.  
The hoe.  
The rake.  
The barrow.  
The plough.  
The harrow.  
The pitchfork.  
The scythe.  
The sickle.  
The axe.  
The saw.  
The chisel.  
The plane.  
The gimlet.  
The nail.  
The screw.  
The nut.  
The vice.  
The pincers.  
The hammer.  
The file.  
The wedge.  
The glue.  
The ladder.  
The basket.  
The chair.  
The poker.  
The pocket.  
The tongs.  
The bell.  
The picture.  
The paint-brush.  
The sponge.

the cannon.  
the gun.  
the rifle.  
the pistol.  
the ramrod.  
the touchhole.  
the powder.  
the powder-flask.  
the ball.  
the shot.  
the fishing-rod.  
the line.  
the hook.  
the net.  
the saddle.  
the bridle.  
the whip.  
the trace.  
the wheel.  
the spring.  
the hay.  
the straw.  
the oats.  
the grass.  
the corn.  
the wheat.  
the linen cloth.  
the carpet.  
the school.  
the lesson.  
the library.  
the passage.  
the pantry.  
the cellar.

| Gen.                 | Pl.    |                     | Gen.      | Pl.  |
|----------------------|--------|---------------------|-----------|------|
| der Spaten,          | s,     | — die Kanone,       | —         | n.   |
| die Schaufel,        | —      | n. die Flinte,      | —         | n.   |
| die Haue,            | —      | n. die Büchse,      | —         | n.   |
| die Harke,           | —      | n. die Pistole,     | —         | n.   |
| der Schubkarren,     | s,     | — der Ladestock,    | es, s,    | "e.  |
| der Pflug,           | es, s, | "e. das Zündloch,   | es, s,    | "er. |
| die Egge,            | —      | n. das Pulver,      | s,        | —    |
| die Gabel,           | —      | n. das Pulverhorn,  | es, s; e, | "er. |
| die Sense,           | —      | n. die Kugel,       | —         | n.   |
| die Sichel,          | —      | n. der Schrot,      | es, s,    | e.   |
| die Axt,             | —      | "e. die Angelruthe, | —         | n.   |
| die Säge,            | —      | n. die Angelschnur, | —en,      | "e.  |
| der Meißel,          | s,     | — die Angel,        | —         | n.   |
| der Hobel,           | s,     | — das Netz,         | es,       | e.   |
| der Bohrer,          | s,     | — der Sattel,       | s,        | "—   |
| der Nagel,           | s,     | "— der Zaum,        | es, s,    | "e.  |
| die Schraube,        | —      | n. die Peitsche,    | —         | n.   |
| die Schraubenmutter, | —      | "— der Strang,      | es, s,    | "e.  |
| der Schraubstock,    | es, s, | "e. das Rad,        | es, s,    | "er. |
| die Zange,           | —      | n. die Feder,       | —         | n.   |
| der Hammer           | s,     | "— das Heu,         | es, s,    |      |
| die Feile,           | —      | n. das Stroh,       | es, s,    |      |
| der Keil,            | es, s, | e. der Hafer,       | s,        |      |
| der Leim,            | es, s, | das Gras,           | es,       | "er. |
| die Leiter,          | —      | n. das Getreide,    | s,        |      |
| der Korb,            | es, s, | "e. der Weizen,     | s,        |      |
| der Stuhl,           | es, s, | "e. die Leinwand,   | —         |      |
| das Schürisen,       | s,     | — der Teppich,      | es, s,    | e.   |
| die Tasche.          | —      | n. die Schule,      | —         | n.   |
| die Zange,           | —      | n. die Lection,     | —         | en.  |
| die Schelle,         | —      | n. die Bibliothek,  | —         | en.  |
| das Gemälde,         | s,     | — der Gang,         | es, s,    | "e.  |
| der Pinsel,          | s,     | — die Speisekammer, | —         | n.   |
| der Schwamm,         | es, s, | "e. der Keller,     | s,        | —    |

## SECTION XXIV.

la bêche.  
la pelle.  
la houe.  
le râseau.  
la brouette.  
la charrue.  
la herse.  
la fourche.  
la faux.  
la faucille.  
la cognée.  
la scie.  
le ciseau.  
le rabot.  
le foret.  
le clou.  
la vis.  
l' (un) écrou.  
l' (un) étau.  
les tenailles (*f. pl.*).  
le marteau.  
la lime.  
le coin.  
la colle.  
l' (une) échelle.  
le panier.  
la chaise.  
le fourgon.  
la poche.  
les pincettes (*f. pl.*)  
la cloche.  
le tableau.  
le pinceau.  
l' (une) éponge.

le canon.  
le fusil.  
l' (une) arquebuse.  
le pistolet.  
la baguette.  
la lumière.  
la poudre.  
la poudrière.  
la balle.  
le plomb, la dragée.  
la canne à pêcher.  
la ligne.  
le hameçon.  
le filet.  
la selle.  
la bride.  
le fouet.  
le trait.  
la roue.  
le ressort.  
le foin.  
la paille.  
l'avoine (*f.*).  
l' (une) herbe.  
le grain.  
le blé.  
la toile.  
le tapis.  
l' (une) école.  
la leçon.  
la bibliothèque.  
le corridor.  
le buffet, l' (une) office.  
la cave.

la vanga.  
la pala, paletta.  
la zappa.  
il rastrello.  
il carretto.  
l' aratro, aratolo.  
l' erpice (*f.*).  
la forca.  
la falca.  
la falciuola.  
la scure.  
la sega.  
lo scarpello.  
la pialla.  
il succhiello.  
il chiodo.  
la vite.  
la chiocciola.  
la morsa.  
la tanaglia.  
il martello.  
la lima.  
il conio.  
la colla.  
la scala.  
il paniero.  
la sedia, seggiola.  
l' attizzatoio.  
la tasca.  
le molli (*f. pl.*).  
la campanella.  
il quadro.  
il pennello.  
la spugna.

il cannone.  
lo schioppo, fucile.  
l' archibugio.  
la pistola.  
la bacchetta.  
il focone.  
la polvere.  
la fiaschetta.  
la palla.  
i pallini.  
la canna pescatoria.  
la lenza.  
l' amo.  
la rete.  
la sella.  
la briglia.  
la frusta.  
la tirella.  
la ruota.  
la molla.  
il fieno.  
la paglia.  
l' avena (*f.*).  
l' erba (*f.*).  
il grano.  
il frumento.  
la tela.  
il tappeto.  
la scuola.  
la lezione.  
la biblioteca.  
il corridoio.  
la dispensa, il guardar  
la cantina.

How much (of it)? How many (of them)?  
 Much, a great deal (of it). Many (of them).  
 Too much (of it). Too many (of them).  
 So much (of it). So many (of them).  
 A little (of it).  
 But little, only a little, not much (of it).  
 Enough (of it, of them).  
 Not enough (of it, of them).

|                   |                |                     |                   |
|-------------------|----------------|---------------------|-------------------|
| Infinitive.       | Past part.     | Infinitive.         | Past part.        |
| <b>To put on,</b> | <b>put on.</b> | <b>To take off,</b> | <b>taken off.</b> |

*Any, some more (of it, of them).*  
*No more, not any more (of it, of them).*  
*How much more (of it)? How many more (of them)?*  
*Much more, a great deal more (of it). Many more (of them).*  
*A little more (of it).*  
*But little more*  
*Only a little more* } (of it). *Many more (of them).*  
*Not much more*  
*One, two, three, and more (of them).*  
*A few more, several more (of them).*

**Before.****After.<sup>1</sup>**

*After (followed by the present participle).*  
*After having studied I go out.*

|                |                    |                                              |
|----------------|--------------------|----------------------------------------------|
| <b>Then.</b>   | <b>Afterwards.</b> | <b>As soon as.</b>                           |
| <b>To let.</b> | <b>To allow.</b>   | { <b>To excuse.</b><br><b>To beg pardon.</b> |

Wie viel? Wie viele — davon?  
 (dessen) viel. (deren) viele.  
 (dessen) zu viel. (deren) zu viele.  
 (dessen) so viel. (deren) so viele.  
 (dessen) wenig, ein wenig (davon).  
 (dessen) nur ein wenig, or wenig.  
 (dessen, deren) genug.  
 (dessen, deren) nicht genug.

|                                                       |            |             |            |
|-------------------------------------------------------|------------|-------------|------------|
| Infinitive.                                           | Past part. | Infinitive. | Past part. |
| { <b>Anziehen, angezogen. Ausziehen, ausgezogen.</b>  |            |             |            |
| { <b>Aufsetzen, aufgesetzt. Abnehmen, abgenommen.</b> |            |             |            |

*Acc. Noch welchen, —e, —es, —e.*  
*Acc. Keinen, —e, —es, —e mehr.*  
*Wie viel, viele — noch (davon)?*  
*(dessen) noch viel. (deren) noch viele.*  
*(dessen) noch ein wenig, or wenig.*

*(dessen) nicht mehr viel. (deren) nicht mehr viele.*

*Noch ein, &c. (declinable). (deren) noch zwei, drei.*  
*Noch einige, verschiedene.*

|                                                         |                                    |
|---------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| <b>Vor</b> { <i>acc. motion.</i><br><i>dat. repose.</i> | <b>Nach</b> (dative). <sup>1</sup> |
|---------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------|

*Nachdem<sup>2</sup> (removes the finite verb to the end of the sentence).<sup>1</sup>*  
*Nachdem ich studirt habe, gehe<sup>2</sup> ich aus.*

|                |                  |                     |
|----------------|------------------|---------------------|
| <b>Dann.</b>   | <b>Nachher.</b>  | <b>So bald als.</b> |
| <b>Lassen.</b> | <b>Erlauben.</b> | <b>Verzeihen.</b>   |

<sup>1</sup> See cases governed by prepositions, Section XXXI.

<sup>2</sup> *Nachdem* also removes the subject after the verb in the following clause of the sentence. See

## COMBINED WITH PRONOUNS AND VERBS.

Combien — en ?  
 En — beaucoup.  
 En — trop.  
 En — tant.  
 En — un peu, peu.  
 N'en — guère, or que peu; n'en — pas beaucoup.  
 En — assez.  
 N'en — pas assez.

| Infinitive.    | Past part.  | Infinitive.  | Past part.  |
|----------------|-------------|--------------|-------------|
| <b>Mettre,</b> | <b>mis.</b> | <b>Ôter,</b> | <b>ôté.</b> |

*En — encore, davantage.*  
*N'en — plus, pas davantage.*  
*Combien en — encore ?*  
*En — encore beaucoup.*  
*En — encore un peu.*

*N'en — plus guère; — plus beaucoup.*

*En — encore un, une, deux, trois, &c.*  
*En — encore quelques-uns<sup>2</sup>, plusieurs.*

**Avant, devant.<sup>4</sup>**

**Après.<sup>1</sup>**

*Après (followed by inf. pres.).*  
*Je sors après avoir étudié.*

|                 |                   |                                |
|-----------------|-------------------|--------------------------------|
| <b>Puis.</b>    | <b>Ensuite.</b>   | <b>Aussitôt que.</b>           |
| <b>Laisser.</b> | <b>Permettre.</b> | { Excuser.<br>Demander pardon. |

Quanto — <sup>3</sup>, quanti, —e, ne?  
 Ne — molto, molti, —e.  
 Ne — troppo, troppi, —e.  
 Ne — tanto, tanti, —e.  
 Ne — poco, un poco.  
 Non ne — che poco; non — molto.  
 Ne — abbastanza.  
 Non ne — abbastanza.

| Infinitive.                  | Past part.    | Infinitive.                 | Past p      |
|------------------------------|---------------|-----------------------------|-------------|
| <b>Mettersi<sup>2</sup>,</b> | <b>messo.</b> | <b>Levarsi<sup>2</sup>,</b> | <b>leva</b> |

*Ne ancora.*  
*Non ne — più or di più.*  
*Quanto, —i, —e.*  
*Ne — ancora molto, —i, —e.*  
*Ne — ancora, un poco.*

*Non ne — più molto, &c.*

*Ancora uno, una, due, tre, &c.*  
*Ancora alcuni, —e, diversi, —e.*

**Prima (gen.), davanti (dat. or acc.). Dopo (gen. or**

*Dopo (followed by inf. pres.).*  
*Sorto (or esco) dopo aver studiato.*

|                  |                    |                            |
|------------------|--------------------|----------------------------|
| <b>Fol.</b>      | <b>Indi.</b>       | <b>Subito che, tosto o</b> |
| <b>Lasciare.</b> | <b>Permettere.</b> | { Scusare.<br>Perdonare.   |

Note 6, page 146, and Conjunctions, Section XXXII.

<sup>3</sup> When these words are used as adverbs they are not subject to concord, as mentioned in Section XXIV.

<sup>4</sup> *Avant* refers to time, *devant* to position.

## EXERCISE 25.

What do you want to buy? I want to buy some cloth. — Do you wish to buy much? Yes, I wish to buy a great deal. — Has your neighbour bought too much meat? Yes, he has bought too much. — I want a little money, have you any? Yes, I have a little. — Has your friend much money? No, he has only a little, but he has enough. — Has the carpenter many nails? No, he has not many, but he has enough. — How many has he? He has several. — What nails are they? They are iron nails. — Does your brother wish to read any more books? Yes, he wishes to read some<sup>1</sup> more. — Has he any more books to read? He has not (got) any more to read, he has read them all. — Will you lend him a few more? Yes, I will lend him several<sup>1</sup> more. — How many more have you? I have a great many more. — Does your sister intend to write many more letters? She does not intend to write any more, but my brother wishes to write three more. — Do you want any more money? I do not want any more. — Do you want any<sup>1</sup> more books? I want a few more. — What<sup>1</sup> more do you want? I want nothing more. — When did your brother arrive? He arrived after me. — What<sup>1</sup> do you do after you have dined? I write letters. — And what then? Then I eat my supper, and as soon as I have eaten my supper I go to bed. — Do you take off your coat before you take off your hat? I take off my coat after having taken off my hat. — Do you put on your gloves after having put on your hat? I put my gloves on before I put on my hat. — Have you put on your gloves? No, I have taken them off.

Was wollen Sie kaufen? Ich will Tuch kaufen. — Wollen Sie dessen viel kaufen? Ja, ich will dessen viel kaufen. — Hat Ihr Nachbar zu viel Fleisch gekauft? Ja, er hat zu viel gekauft. — Ich brauche ein wenig Geld, haben Sie welches? Ja, ich habe ein wenig. — Hat Ihr Freund viel Geld? Nein, er hat dessen nur wenig, aber genug. — Hat der Zimmermann viele Nägel? Nein, er hat deren nicht viele, aber genug. — Wie viele hat er davon? Er hat verschiedene. — Was für Nägel sind es? Es sind eiserne Nägel. — Will Ihr Bruder noch mehrere Bücher lesen? Ja, er will noch<sup>1</sup> mehrere lesen. — Hat er noch Bücher zu lesen? Er hat keine mehr zu lesen, er hat sie alle gelesen. — Wollen Sie ihm noch einige leihen? Ja, ich will ihm noch einige leihen. — Wie viel haben Sie noch? Ich habe deren noch<sup>1</sup> viele. — Gedenkt Ihre Schwester noch verschiedene Briefe zu schreiben? Sie gedenkt keine mehr zu schreiben, aber mein Bruder will deren noch drei schreiben. — Brauchen Sie noch<sup>1</sup> Geld? Ich brauche keines mehr. — Brauchen Sie noch<sup>1</sup> Bücher? Ich brauche noch einige. — Was brauchen Sie noch?<sup>1</sup> Ich brauche Nichts mehr. — Wann ist Ihr Bruder angekommen? Er ist nach mir angekommen. — Was thun Sie nachdem Sie gespeist haben? Ich schreibe Briefe. — Was thun Sie alsdann? Ich esse dann zu Abend, und sobald ich Abendbrod gegessen habe, gehe<sup>3</sup> ich zu Bette. — Ziehen Sie Ihren<sup>4</sup> (or den) Rock aus, ehe Sie Ihren Hut abziehen? Ich ziehe meinen<sup>4</sup> (or den) Rock aus, nachdem ich meinen Hut abgezogen habe. — Ziehen Sie Ihre Handschuhe an, nachdem Sie Ihren Hut aufgesetzt haben? Ich ziehe meine Handschuhe an, ehe ich meinen Hut aufsetze. — Haben Sie Ihre Handschuhe angezogen? Nein, ich habe sie ausgezogen.

<sup>1</sup> See Notes 2 and 3, page 150.<sup>2</sup> Adverbs of quantity do not require *de* when combined with a pronoun.<sup>3</sup> See Note 6, page 146.

## EXERCISE 25.

Que voulez-vous acheter? Je veux acheter du drap. — Voulez-vous en<sup>2</sup> acheter beaucoup? <sup>1</sup> Oui, je veux en acheter beaucoup. — Votre voisin a-t-il acheté trop de viande? Oui, il en<sup>2</sup> a acheté trop.<sup>2</sup> — J'ai besoin d'argent, en avez-vous? Oui, j'en ai un peu. — Votre ami a-t-il beaucoup d'argent? Non, il n'en a guère, mais il en a assez. — Le charpentier a-t-il beaucoup de clous? Non, il n'en a pas beaucoup, mais il en a assez. — Combien en a-t-il? Il en a plusieurs. — Quelle espèce de clous est-ce? Ce sont des clous de fer. — Votre frère veut-il lire encore quelques livres? Oui, il veut en lire encore quelques-uns. — A-t-il encore des livres à lire? Il n'en a plus à lire, il les a tous lus. — Voulez-vous lui en prêter encore quelques-uns? Oui, je veux lui en prêter encore<sup>1</sup> plusieurs. — Combien en avez-vous encore? J'en ai encore beaucoup. — Votre sœur compte-t-elle écrire encore beaucoup de lettres? Elle ne compte pas en écrire davantage, mais mon frère veut en écrire encore<sup>1</sup> trois. — Vous faut-il encore<sup>1</sup> de l'argent? Il ne m'en faut plus. — Vous faut-il encore des livres? Il m'en faut encore quelques-uns. — Que vous faut-il<sup>1</sup> encore? Il ne me faut plus rien. — Quand votre frère est-il venu? Il est venu après moi. — Que faites-vous après avoir dîné? J'écris des lettres. — Que faites-vous ensuite? Ensuite je soupe, et aussitôt que j'ai soupé je vais me coucher. — Ôtez-vous votre habit avant d'ôter votre chapeau? J'ôte mon habit après avoir ôté mon chapeau. — Mettez-vous vos gants après avoir mis votre chapeau? Je mets mes gants avant de mettre mon chapeau. — Avez-vous mis vos gants? Non, je les ai ôtés.

Che cosa vuol Ella comprare? Voglio comprare del panno. — Vuol Ella comprarne molto? Sì, ho desiderio di comprarne molto. — Ha comprato il di Lei vicino troppa carne? Sì, eg ne ha comprato troppo.<sup>2</sup> — Ho bisogno di danaro, ne ha Ella Sì, ne ho un poco. — Ha il di Lei amico molto danaro? No ne ha se non poco (*or* non ne ha che poco), ma ne ha abbastanza. — Ha molti chiodi il legnaiuolo? Egli non ne ha molti, ma ne ha abbastanza. — Quanti ne ha egli? Egli ne ha parecchi. — Che chiodi sono? Sono chiodi di ferro. — Ha il di Lei fratello voglia di leggere ancora alcuni libri? Sì, egli ha desiderio di leggerne ancora alcuni. — Ha egli ancora libri da leggere? Egli non ne ha più da leggere, li ha tutti letti. — Vuol Ella prestargliene<sup>1</sup> ancora alcuni? Voglio prestargliene ancora alcuni. — Quanti ne ha Ella ancora? Ne ho<sup>1</sup> ancora molti. — Intende la di Lei sorella scrivere ancora molte lettere? Ella non pensa scriverne di più, ma mio fratello ha desiderio di scriverne ancora<sup>1</sup> tre. — Le abbisogna ancora danaro? Non me ne abbisogna di più. — Le è d' uopo ancora libri? Me ne abbisogna ancora alcuni. — Che cosa Le abbisogna<sup>1</sup> ancora? Non mi abbisogna più niente (*or* nulla di più). — Quando è venuto il di Lei fratello? Egli è venuto dopo me (*or* di me). — Che fa Ella (*or* che fate) dopo aver pranzato? Scrivo delle lettere. — È poi che fa Ella? Poi ceno, e subito che ho cenato vado a<sup>4</sup> coricarmi. — Si leva Ella il<sup>4</sup> vestito prima di levarsi il cappello? Mi levo il<sup>4</sup> vestito dopo essermi (*or* che mi sono) levato il cappello. — Si mette Ella i guanti dopo essersi (che Ella si è) messo il cappello? Mi metto i guanti prima di mettermi il cappello. — Si è Ella messo i guanti? No, me li sono levati.

<sup>1</sup> In such phrases as these the definite article is generally used instead of the possessive adjective in German and Italian.

<sup>2</sup> See Note 2, page 135

## SECTION XXV.

## PARTS OF THE BODY, ETC.

|                 |                       |
|-----------------|-----------------------|
| The body.       | the hand.             |
| The bone.       | the finger.           |
| The flesh.      | the thumb.            |
| The muscle.     | the nail.             |
| The nerve.      | the chest.            |
|                 | the rib.              |
| The blood.      | the stomach.          |
| The skin.       | the waist.            |
| The head.       | the lung.             |
| The hair.       | the liver.            |
| The face.       | the heart.            |
| The complexion. | the vein.             |
| The forehead.   | the pulse.            |
| The eye.        | the thigh.            |
| The eyebrow.    | the leg.              |
| The temple.     | the knee.             |
| The nose.       | the calf.             |
| The mouth.      | the ankle.            |
| The lip.        | the foot.             |
| The tooth.      | the toe.              |
| The tongue.     | the heel.             |
| The palate.     | the touch.            |
| The throat.     | the taste.            |
| The cheek.      | the smell.            |
| The chin.       | the sight.            |
| The beard.      | the hearing.          |
| The ear.        | the voice.            |
| The neck.       | the breath.           |
| The back.       | the language, speech. |
| The shoulder.   | the soul.             |
| The arm.        | eternity.             |
| The elbow.      |                       |

| Gen.               | Pl.         |       | Gen.           | Pl.         |
|--------------------|-------------|-------|----------------|-------------|
| der Leib,          | es, s,      | er.   | die Hand,      | — " e.      |
| der Knochen,       | s,          | —     | der Finger,    | s, —        |
| das Fleisch,       | es,         | —     | der Daumen,    | s, —        |
| der Muskel,        | s,          | n.    | der Nagel,     | s, — " e.   |
| { der Nerv,        | en,         | en.   | die Brust,     | — " e.      |
| { die Nerve,       | —           | n.    | die Rippe,     | — n.        |
| das Blut,          | es, s,      | —     | der Magen,     | s, — " en.  |
| die Haut,          | —           | " er. | die Gestalt,   | — en.       |
| der Kopf,          | es, s,      | " e.  | die Lunge,     | — n.        |
| das Haar,          | es, s,      | e.    | die Leber,     | — n.        |
| das Gesicht,       | es, s,      | e.    | das Herz,      | ens, en.    |
| die Gesichtsfarbe, | —           | —     | die Ader,      | — n.        |
| die Stirn,         | —           | en.   | der Puls,      | es, e.      |
| das Auge,          | s,          | n.    | der Schenkel,  | s, n.       |
| die Augenbraune,   | —           | n.    | das Bein,      | es, s, e.   |
| der Schlaf,        | es, s,      | " e.  | das Knie,      | s, e.       |
| die Nase,          | —           | n.    | die Wade,      | — n.        |
| der Mund,          | es, s, " e, | " er. | der Knöchel,   | s, —        |
| die Lippe,         | —           | n.    | der Fuß,       | es, " e.    |
| der Zahn,          | es, s,      | " e.  | die Zehe,      | — n.        |
| die Zunge,         | —           | n.    | die Ferse,     | — n.        |
| der Gaumen,        | s,          | —     | das Gefühl,    | es, s, e.   |
| die Kehle,         | —           | n.    | der Geschmack, | es, s, —    |
| die Wange,         | —           | n.    | der Geruch,    | es, s, " e. |
| das Kinn,          | es, s,      | e.    | das Gesicht,   | es, s, e.   |
| der Bart,          | es, s,      | " e.  | das Gehör,     | es, s.      |
| das Ohr,           | es, s,      | en.   | die Stimme,    | — n.        |
| der Hals,          | es,         | " e.  | der Athem,     | s, —        |
| der Rücken,        | s,          | —     | die Sprache,   | — n.        |
| die Schulter,      | —           | n.    | die Seele,     | — n.        |
| der Arm,           | es, s,      | e.    | die Ewigkeit,  | —           |
| der Ellbogen,      | s,          | —     |                |             |

## SECTION XXV.

### PARTS OF THE BODY, ETC.

le corps.  
l' (un) os.  
la chair.  
le muscle.  
le nerf.  
le sang.  
la peau.  
la tête.  
le cheveu.  
le visage.  
le teint.  
le front.  
l' (un) œil.  
le sourcil.  
la tempe.  
le nez.  
la bouche.  
la lèvre.  
la dent.  
la langue.  
le palais.  
la gorge.  
la joue.  
le menton.  
la barbe.  
l' (une) oreille.  
le cou.  
le dos.  
l' (une) épaule.  
le bras.  
le coude.

la main.  
le doigt.  
le pouce.  
l' (un) ongle.  
la poitrine.  
la côte.  
l' (un) estomac.  
la taille.  
le poumon.  
le foie.  
le cœur.  
la veine.  
le pouls.  
la cuisse.  
la jambe.  
le genou.  
le mollet.  
la cheville.  
le pied.  
le doigt du pied, orteil.  
le talon.  
le toucher.  
le goût.  
l' (un) odorat.  
la vue.  
l' ouïe (f.).  
la voix.  
l' (une) haleine.  
la parole, langue.  
l' (une) âme.  
l' (une) éternité.

il corpo.  
l' (un) osso, *pl. i (a and e, f.)*  
la carne.  
il muscolo.  
il nervo.  
il sangue.  
la pelle.  
il capo.  
il capello.  
il volto.  
la carnagione.  
il *or* la fronte.  
l' (un) occhio.  
il ciglio, *pl. f. a.*  
la tempia.  
il naso.  
la bocca.  
il labbro, *pl. f. a.*  
il dente.  
la lingua.  
il palato.  
la gola.  
la guancia.  
il mento.  
la barba.  
l' (un) orecchio, *pl. f. a.*  
il collo.  
il dorso.  
la spalla.  
il braccio, *pl. f. a.*  
il gomito.

la mano.  
il dito, *pl. f. a.*  
il pollice.  
l' unghia (f.).  
il petto.  
la costa.  
lo stomaco.  
la vita.  
il polmone.  
il fegato.  
il cuore.  
la vena.  
il polso.  
la coscia.  
la gamba.  
il ginocchio, *pl. f. a.*  
la polpa della gamba.  
la nocca del piede.  
il piede.  
il dito del piede.  
il calcagno.  
il tatto.  
il gusto.  
l' odorato.  
la vista.  
l' udito.  
la voce.  
il fiato.  
la parola, lingua.  
l' anima (f.).  
l' eternità.



In English numbers are not affected by gender, but in German the ordinal numbers are subject to gender, number, and declension; a few of the cardinal numbers are also declined. *Ein* is the only one that has a complete declension. See Section IV. *Zwei, drei*, when not preceded by the definite article, a demonstrative or possessive adjective, make in the genitive *zweier, dreier*; dative and ablative *zweien, dreien*; accusative *zwei, drei*. The other numbers, from *vier* to *zwölf* (*sieben* excepted), are declinable when not followed by a noun, making in the nominative and accusative *e*, in the dative and ablative *en*. The whole numbers, *zwanzig, dreissig, vierzig, &c., hundert, tausend*, are declined in the same manner when used as collectives and not combined with a noun. The genitive of these numbers is expressed by *von* with the dative inflection, when not preceded by any article or pronoun indicating the case.

In German, as in English, the ordinal numbers are used to indicate the order of succession in kings; as, *Henry the First, Henry the Fourth, Heinrich der Erste, Heinrich der Vierte*. They must be put in the same case as the noun; as, *Heinrichs des Ersten*.<sup>1</sup>

In dating a letter in German, the ordinal number is used in the accusative case; as, *den ersten, den 2ten Juni*. In relating events, *am* is generally placed before the ordinal number; as, *am zweiten, 3ten Juni*.

In expressing the hour of the day in German the fractional parts, *halb, viertel*, followed by *auf*, refer to the number that follows, and indicate that so much time has elapsed towards the next hour.

Nouns expressing measure, number, weight, as, *Bogen, Buch, Fass, Fusz, Mass, or Schuh, Mann, Loth, Pfund, Riesz, Uhr, Zoll*, remain unchanged in the plural when combined with a numeral; as, *drei Fass Wein*, three casks of wine, &c.; but the following, *die Elle, die Flasche, die Meile, die Tasse, die Tonne, die Masse*, and nouns indicating measure of time, as, *die Stunde*, &c., take the plural; as, *drei Flaschen Wein*, three bottles of wine. In either case *of* is not expressed. If the noun is preceded by an adjective, *of* is expressed by *von* in the following manner: *drei Flaschen von diesem Weine, von diesem guten Weine*, or by the genitive case; as, *drei Flaschen dieses Weines, or dieses guten Weines*.

| Cardinal.     | Ordinal.          | Cardinal.                     | Ordinal.                    |
|---------------|-------------------|-------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 0, naught.    | the last but one. | Null.                         | der Vorletzte. <sup>2</sup> |
| 1, one.       | first, last.      | ein, eine, eins. <sup>3</sup> | erste, letzte.              |
| 2, two.       | second.           | zwei.                         | zweite.                     |
| 3, three.     | third.            | drei.                         | dritte.                     |
| 4, four.      | fourth.           | vier.                         | vierte.                     |
| 5, five.      | fifth.            | fünf.                         | fünfte.                     |
| 6, six.       | sixth.            | sechs.                        | sechste.                    |
| 7, seven.     | seventh.          | sieben.                       | siebente.                   |
| 8, eight.     | eighth.           | acht.                         | achte.                      |
| 9, nine.      | ninth.            | neun.                         | neunte.                     |
| 10, ten.      | tenth.            | zehn.                         | zehnte.                     |
| 11, eleven.   | eleventh.         | elf.                          | elfte.                      |
| 12, twelve.   | twelfth.          | zwölf.                        | zwölfte.                    |
| 13, thirteen. | thirteenth.       | dreizehn.                     | dreizehnte.                 |

<sup>1</sup> *Mann* remains unchanged in such phrases as the following: *ein Bataillon von sechs hundert Mann* (not *Männern*). <sup>2</sup> See Notes on Indefinite Article and Declension, pages 26 and 27.

## SECTION XXVI.—NUMBERS, CARDINAL AND ORDINAL.

163

In French and Italian the ordinal numbers are subject to gender and number; as, *le premier, la première, les premiers, les premières, il primo, la prima, i primi, le prime*. In French *vingt* in *quatre-vingt* and *six-vingt* takes an *s* when followed by a noun; as, *quatre-vingts hommes*, but when it is followed by another number it does not take *s*; as, *quatre-vingt-deux hommes*.

*Cent* takes *s* in the plural except when followed by another number; as, *deux cents livres, deux cent dix livres*; *mille* does not take *s* in the plural.

In writing the date of a year, *mille* is written *mil*; as, *mil huit cent trente-cinq*.

In dating a letter, with the exception of *premier*, the cardinal numbers are used in French; as, *le premier, le trois juin*. In marking the succession of kings and in quotations, with the exception of *premier* and *second*, the cardinal numbers are also used; as, *Henri premier, Henri quatre, and Charles quint, Sixte quint*, in speaking of the celebrated king and pope.

In Italian *vent' uno, una, trent' uno, una, &c.*, require the noun following in the singular to agree with *uno*, and in the plural when preceding to agree with *venti, trenta, &c.*; as, *vent' uno franco, franchi vent' uno*. In speaking of kings, and other dignitaries, and in quotations the ordinal numbers are used as in English and German, and follow the noun without any article; as, *Enrico quarto, libro quarto*.

In dating a letter, with the exception of *primo* and *ultimo*, the article may be used in the singular or plural in the following manner, *il, i, li, or ai, 2, 3, 4, gli, or agli, 8, gli, or agli, 11*. In indicating the date of the year, say *l'anno mille ottocento trenta cinque*.

*Cento* does not change in the plural. *Mille* makes *mila* in the plural. In Italian never say, *eleven hundred, twelve hundred*, but *mille e cento, mille e dugento*. To express *all three, &c.*, say, *tutti e tre*, and not *tutti i tre*.

| Cardinal.             | Ordinal.          | Cardinal.              | Ordinal.                  |
|-----------------------|-------------------|------------------------|---------------------------|
| zéro.                 | l'avant-dernier.  | zero.                  | il penultimo.             |
| un, une. <sup>2</sup> | premier, dernier. | uno, una. <sup>2</sup> | primo, ultimo.            |
| deux.                 | second.           | due.                   | secondo.                  |
| trois.                | troisième.        | tre.                   | terzo.                    |
| quatre.               | quatrième.        | quattro.               | quarto.                   |
| cinq.                 | cinquième.        | cinque.                | quinto.                   |
| six.                  | sixième.          | sei.                   | sesto.                    |
| sept.                 | septième.         | sette.                 | settimo.                  |
| huit.                 | huitième.         | otto.                  | ottavo.                   |
| neuf.                 | neuvième.         | nové.                  | nono.                     |
| dix.                  | dixième.          | dieci.                 | decimo.                   |
| onze.                 | onzième.          | undici.                | undecimo.                 |
| douze.                | douzième.         | dodici.                | duodecimo.                |
| treize.               | treizième.        | tre dici.              | <del>decimo tertio.</del> |

<sup>2</sup> In German the ordinal numbers have the three forms of declension of the adjective.

## SECTION XXVI.—NUMBERS, CARDINAL AND ORDINAL.

| Cardinal.               | Ordinal.            |
|-------------------------|---------------------|
| 14, fourteen.           | fourteenth.         |
| 15, fifteen.            | fifteenth.          |
| 16, sixteen.            | sixteenth.          |
| 17, seventeen.          | seventeenth.        |
| 18, eighteen.           | eighteenth.         |
| 19, nineteen.           | nineteenth.         |
| 20, twenty.             | twentieth.          |
| 21, twenty-one.         | twenty-first.       |
| 22, twenty-two.         | twenty-second.      |
| 30, thirty.             | thirtieth.          |
| 40, forty.              | fortieth.           |
| 50, fifty.              | fiftieth.           |
| 60, sixty.              | sixtieth.           |
| 70, seventy.            | seventieth.         |
| 71, seventy-one.        | seventy-first.      |
| 72, seventy-two.        | seventy-second.     |
| 80, eighty.             | eightieth.          |
| 90, ninety.             | ninetieth.          |
| 91, ninety-one.         | ninety-first.       |
| 92, ninety-two.         | ninety-second.      |
| 100, a hundred.         | hundredth.          |
| 101, a hundred and one. | hundred and first.  |
| 102, a hundred and two. | hundred and second. |
| 200, two hundred.       | two hundredth.      |
| 300, three hundred.     | three hundredth.    |
| 1000, a thousand.       | thousandth.         |
| 2000, two thousand.     | two thousandth.     |

The half.  
The third.  
The quarter.  
The pair, couple.  
The dozen.

one and a half.  
two and a half.  
three and a half.  
an hour and a half.  
the half-hour.

| Cardinal.                      | Ordinal.             |
|--------------------------------|----------------------|
| vierzehn.                      | vierzehnte.          |
| funfzehn.                      | funfzehnte.          |
| sechzehn.                      | sechszehnte.         |
| siebenzehn.                    | siebenzehnte.        |
| achtzehn.                      | achtzehnte.          |
| neunzehn.                      | neunzehnte.          |
| zwanzig.                       | zwanzigste.          |
| ein und zwanzig. <sup>1</sup>  | ein und zwanzigste.  |
| zwei und zwanzig. <sup>1</sup> | zwei und zwanzigste. |
| dreißig.                       | dreißigste.          |
| vierzig.                       | vierzigste.          |
| fünfzig.                       | fünfzigste.          |
| sechzig.                       | sechzigste.          |
| siezig.                        | siebzigste.          |
| ein und siezig.                | ein und siebzigste.  |
| zwei und siezig.               | zwei und siebzigste. |
| achtzig.                       | achtzigste.          |
| neunzig.                       | neunzigste.          |
| ein und neunzig.               | ein und neunzigste.  |
| zwei und neunzig.              | zwei und neunzigste. |
| hundert.                       | hundertste.          |
| hundert eins.                  | hundert und erste.   |
| hundert zwei.                  | hundert und zweite.  |
| zwei hundert.                  | zwei hundertste.     |
| drei hundert.                  | drei hundertste.     |
| tausend.                       | tausendste.          |
| zwei tausend.                  | zwei tausendste.     |

|              | Gen.   | Pl. |
|--------------|--------|-----|
| die Hälfte,  | —      | n.  |
| das Drittel, | s,     | —   |
| das Viertel, | s,     | —   |
| das Paar,    | es, s, | e.  |
| das Dutzend, | s,     | e.  |

anderthalb.  
dritthealb.  
viertelhalb.  
anderthalb\*Stunden.  
die halbe\* Stunde.

When standing alone, fractionals are considered nouns; *halb* is indeclinable.\*When joined to nouns they agree.

<sup>1</sup> In German the units precede the tens.

## SECTION XXVI.—NUMBERS, CARDINAL AND ORDINAL.

Cardinal.  
 quatorze.  
 quinze.  
 seize.  
 dix-sept.  
 dix-huit.  
 dix-neuf.  
 vingt.  
 vingt et un.  
 vingt-deux.  
 trente.  
 quarante.  
 cinquante.  
 soixante.  
 soixante-dix.  
 soixante-onze (et onze).  
 soixante-douze.  
 quatre-vingt.  
 quatre-vingt-dix.  
 quatre-vingt-onze.  
 quatre-vingt-douze.  
 cent.<sup>2</sup>  
 cent un.  
 cent deux.  
 deux cent.<sup>2</sup>  
 trois cent.  
 mille.  
 deux mille.<sup>2</sup>

la moitié.  
 le tiers.  
 le quart.  
 la couple.  
 la douzaine.

Ordinal.  
 quatorzième.  
 quinzième.  
 seizième.  
 dix-septième.  
 dix-huitième.  
 dix-neuvième.  
 vingtième.  
 vingt-unième.  
 vingt-deuxième.  
 trentième.  
 quarantième.  
 cinquantième.  
 soixantième.  
 soixante-dixième.  
 soixante-onzième.  
 soixante-douzième.  
 quatre-vingtième.  
 quatre-vingt-dixième.  
 quatre-vingt-onzième.  
 quatre-vingt-douzième.  
 centième.  
 cent-unième.  
 cent-deuxième.  
 deux centième.  
 trois centième.  
 millième.  
 deux millième.

un et demi.  
 deux et demi.  
 trois et demi.  
 une heure et demie.<sup>2</sup>  
 la demi-heure.<sup>2</sup>

Cardinal.  
 quattordici.  
 quindici.  
 sedici.  
 diecisette, diciassette.  
 dieciotto, diciotto.  
 diecinove, diciannove.  
 venti.  
 ventuno, or vent' uno.  
 ventidue.  
 trenta.  
 quaranta.  
 cinquanta.  
 sessanta.  
 settanta.  
 settantuno.  
 settantadue.  
 ottanta.  
 novanta.  
 novantuno.  
 novantadue.  
 cento.<sup>2</sup>  
 centuno.  
 centodieci.  
 dugento, due cento.<sup>2</sup>  
 tre cento.  
 mille.  
 due mila, dumila.<sup>2</sup>

la meta.  
 il terzo.  
 il quarto.  
 il paio.  
 la dozzina.

Ordinal.  
 decimo quarto.  
 decimo quinto.  
 decimo sesto.  
 decimo settimo.  
 decimo ottavo.  
 decimo nono.  
 ventesimo, or vigesim  
 ventesimo primo.  
 ventesimo secondo.  
 trentesimo, trigesimo.  
 quarantesimo, quadra  
 cinquantesimo, quinq  
 sessantesimo, sessages  
 settantesimo, settuages  
 settantesimo primo.  
 settantesimo secondo.  
 ottantesimo, ottuages  
 novantesimo, nonages  
 novantesimo primo.  
 novantesimo secondo.  
 centesimo.  
 centesimo primo.  
 centesimo secondo.  
 dugentesimo, due cent  
 tre centesimo.  
 millesimo.  
 due millesimo.

uno e mezzo.  
 due e mezzo.  
 tre e mezzo.  
 un' ora e mezzo.  
 la mezz' ora.

<sup>2</sup> See observations, pages 163, 164.

<sup>2</sup> When *demi* follows the noun it agrees; but remains invariable when preceding it.

## SECTION XXVI.—FRACTIONAL PORTIONS OF TIME, &amp;c.

*A week; in a fortnight; to-morrow week.*

*Next week; last week; this day week.*

*The day after to-morrow; the day before yesterday; every day.  
This morning; this evening.*

What o'clock is it? It is one o'clock; it is two o'clock, &c.

It is ten minutes past two; it is a quarter past two.

It is half-past two; it is a quarter to three.

What day of the month is it?

It is the first, the eleventh.

How old is your brother?

He is twenty-one, or one and twenty years old.

How often, or many times (a day)? Once, twice, &c.

How much a head? Five francs a head.

Two and two, three and three. All three, all four, &c.

**Early, late; in the morning, in the evening.**

|                        |                         |
|------------------------|-------------------------|
| The century.           | the quarter of an hour. |
| The year.              | the minute.             |
| The half-year.         | the second.             |
| The quarter of a year. | the Sunday.             |
| The leap-year.         | the Monday.             |
| The month.             | the Tuesday.            |
| The week.              | the Wednesday.          |
| The day.               | the Thursday.           |
| The hour.              | the Friday.             |
| The half-hour.         | the Saturday.           |

*Acht Tage, eine Woche; in vierzehn Tagen; Morgen über acht Tage.*

*Nächste Woche; vorige, letzte Woche; heute vor acht Tagen.*

*Uebermorgen; vorgestern; alle Tage, jeden Tag.*

*Diesen (or heute) Morgen; diesen (or heute) Abend.*

Wie viel Uhr ist es? Es ist ein Uhr; es ist zwei Uhr, &c.

Es ist zehn Minuten nach zwei; es ist ein Viertel auf drei.

Es ist halb drei; es ist drei Viertel auf drei.

Den wievielten (des Monats) haben wir?

Wir haben den ersten, den elften.

Wie alt ist Ihr Bruder?

Er ist ein und zwanzig Jahre alt.

Wie oft, wie viel Mal (des Tages)? Einmal, zweimal, &c.

Wie viel der Mann (per Kopf)? Fünf Franken der Mann.

Zwei und zwei, drei und drei. Alle drei, alle vier, &c.

**Früh, spät; des Morgens, des Abends.**

|                        | Gen.   | Pl. |                     | Gen.   | Pl. |
|------------------------|--------|-----|---------------------|--------|-----|
| das Jahrhundert,       | es, s, | e.  | die viertel Stunde, | —      | n.  |
| das Jahr,              | es, s, | e.  | die Minute,         | —      | n.  |
| das halbe Jahr,        | es, s, | e.  | die Sekunde,        | —      | n.  |
| das viertel Jahr,      | es, s, | e.  | der Sonntag,        | es, s, | e.  |
| das Schaltjahr,        | es, s, | e.  | der Montag,         | es, s, | e.  |
| der Monat,             | es, s, | e.  | der Dienstag,       | es, s, | e.  |
| die Woche,             | —      | n.  | { die Mittwoche,    | —      | n.  |
|                        |        |     | { der Mittwoch,     | es, s, | e.  |
| der Tag,               | es, s, | e.  | der Donnerstag,     | es, s, | e.  |
| die Stunde, —n, Uhr, — | en,    | —   | der Freitag,        | es, s, | e.  |
| die halbe Stunde,      | —      | n.  | der Samstag,        | es, s, | e.  |

## SECTION XXVI.—FRACTIONAL PORTIONS OF TIME, &c.

*Huit jours, une semaine; dans quinze jours; demain en huit.*

*La semaine prochaine; la semaine passée, dernière; aujourd'hui en huit.*

*Après-demain; avant-hier; tous les jours.*

*Ce matin; ce soir.*

Quelle heure est-il? Il est une heure; il est deux heures, &c.

Il est deux heures dix minutes; il est deux heures et un quart.

Il est deux heures et demie; il est trois heures moins un quart.

Quel jour du mois est-ce (*or* avons-nous)?

C'est le premier (*or* nous avons le premier), le<sup>1</sup> onze.

Quel âge votre frère a-t-il?

Il a vingt et un ans.

Combien de fois (par jour)? Une fois, deux fois, &c.

Combien par tête? Cinq francs par tête.

Deux à deux, trois à trois. Tous les trois, tous les quatre, &c.

**De bonne heure, tard; le matin, le soir.**

|                     |                   |
|---------------------|-------------------|
| le siècle.          | le quart d'heure. |
| l' (une) année.     | la minute.        |
| le semestre.        | la seconde.       |
| le trimestre.       | le dimanche.      |
| l'année bissextile. | le lundi.         |
| le mois.            | le mardi.         |
| la semaine.         | le mercredi.      |
| le jour.            | le jeudi.         |
| l' (une) heure.     | le vendredi.      |
| la demi-heure.      | le samedi.        |

*Otto giorni, una settimana; fra quindici giorni; domani giorni.*

*La settimana prossima; la settimana scorsa; oggi a otto.*

*Domani l' altro; ier l' altro; ogni giorno.*

*Stamattina, stamane; stasera.*

Che ora è? È l' una; sono le due, &c.

Sono le due e dieci minuti; sono le due e un quarto.

Sono le due e mezzo; sono le tre meno un quarto.

Quanti ne abbiamo del mese?

Abbiamo il primo; abbiamo gli (*or* siamo agli) undici.

Che età (*or* quanti anni) ha il di Lei fratello?

Egli ha vent' un anno (*or* anni vent' uno).

Quante volte (al giorno)? Una volta. Due volte, &c.

Quanto per uno? Cinque franchi per uno (*or* a testa).

Due a due, tre a tre. Tutti e tre, tutti e quattro, &c.

|                                      |                             |           |
|--------------------------------------|-----------------------------|-----------|
| { Di buon' ora, tardi;<br>per tempo, | la mattina,                 | { la sera |
|                                      | il mattino;                 |           |
|                                      | nella mattina, nel mattino; |           |

|                       |                   |
|-----------------------|-------------------|
| il secolo.            | il quarto d' ora. |
| l' anno.              | il minuto.        |
| il semestre.          | il secondo.       |
| il trimestre.         | la domenica.      |
| l' anno bisestile.    | il lunedì.        |
| il mese.              | il martedì.       |
| la settimana.         | il mercoledì.     |
| il giorno, dì.        | il giovedì.       |
| l' ora ( <i>f.</i> ). | il venerdì.       |
| la mezz' ora.         | il sabato.        |

<sup>1</sup> *Le*, and not *l'*, is used before *onze*.

# SECTION XXVI.—SEASONS, MONTHS, &c.

The season.  
The spring.  
The summer.  
The autumn.  
The winter.  
January.  
February.  
March.  
April.  
May.  
June.  
July.  
August.  
September.  
October.

November.  
December.  
the morning.  
the forenoon.  
the midday, noon.  
the afternoon.  
the evening.  
the twilight, dawn.  
the night.  
the midnight.  
the aurora.  
the break of day.  
the sunrise.  
the sunset.

die Jahreszeit,  
der Frühling,  
der Sommer,  
der Herbst,  
der Winter,  
der Januar,  
der Februar,  
der März,  
der April,  
der Mai,  
der Junius, Juni.  
der Julius, Juli.  
der August,  
der September,  
der October,

Gen. Pl.  
— en.  
es, s. c.  
s, —  
es, s. c.  
s, —  
es, s.  
s, —  
es.  
s.  
es, s.  
—  
s.  
s.

der November,  
der December,  
der Morgen,  
der Vormittag,  
der Mittag,  
der Nachmittag,  
der Abend,  
die Dämmerung,  
die Nacht,  
die Mitternacht,  
die Morgenröthe,  
der Tagesanbruch,  
der Sonnenanfang,  
der Sonnenuntergang,

s, —  
s, —  
s, —  
es, s, c.  
es, s, c.  
es, s, c.  
s, —  
—  
—  
—  
es, s, c.  
es, s, c.  
es, s, c.  
es, s, c.  
es, s, c.

## EXERCISE 26.

When do you start? I start to-morrow. — Do you start early or late? We start early in the morning. — At what o'clock do you get up? We get up at half-past six. — At what o'clock do you breakfast? We breakfast at nine, we dine at ten. — At what o'clock does the one start at ten minutes to bed at eleven. — At what o'clock does the other go to bed? He goes to bed at five. — Do you start at ten minutes to five. — The price of the ticket is ten. — Here are the tickets. — Here comes the train.

Wann reisen Sie ab? Ich reise morgen ab. — Reisen Sie früh oder spät ab? Wir reisen des Morgens früh ab. — Um wie viel Uhr stehen Sie auf? Wir stehen um halb sieben auf. — Um wie viel Uhr frühstücken Sie? Wir frühstücken um neun Uhr, speisen um ein Viertel auf sieben, und essen um zehn Uhr zu Abend. — Um wie viel Uhr geht Ihr Bruder zu Bett? Er geht um elf Uhr zu Bett. — Um wie viel Uhr fährt der Zug ab? Der eine geht zehn Minuten nach vier und der andere zehn Minuten auf fünf weg. — Wollen Sie einen ersten oder zweiten Platz? Was ist der Preis? Die ersten Plätze sind zwanzig und die zweiten zehn Franken. — Hier sind zwanzig Franken; geben Sie mir ein Billet auf den ersten Platz. — Hier kommt der Zug. — Eilen Sie sich gefälligst, mein Platz. — Hier keine Zeit. — Um wie viel Uhr werden wir ankommen? Sie werden da diesen Abend um sechs kommen. — Wo sind wir jetzt? Wir werden vor dem Bahnhofe sein. — Wir haben vor ei

la saison.  
le printemps.  
l'été (m.).  
l'(un) automne (m. & f.).  
l'hiver (m.).  
janvier.  
février.  
mars.  
avril.  
mai.  
juin.  
juillet.  
août.  
septembre.  
octobre.

novembre.  
décembre.  
le matin.  
l'avant-midi (m.).  
le midi.  
l'après-midi (m.).  
le soir.  
le crépuscule.  
la nuit.  
le minuit.  
l'aurore (f.).  
le point du jour.  
le lever du soleil.  
le coucher du soleil.

la stagione.  
la primavera.  
l'estate (f.), la state.  
l'autunno.  
l'inverno.  
gennaio.  
febbraio.  
marzo.  
aprile.  
maggio.  
giugno.  
luglio.  
agosto.  
settembre.  
ottobre.

novembre.  
decembre.  
la mattina.  
l'avantipranzo.  
il mezzodì.  
il dopo pranzo.  
la sera.  
il crepuscolo.  
la notte.  
la mezza-notte.  
l'aurore (f.).  
il far del giorno.  
il levar del sole.  
il tramontar del sole.

## EXERCISE 26.

Quand partez-vous? Je pars demain. — Partez-vous de bonne heure ou tard? Nous partons le matin de bonne heure. — A quelle heure vous levez-vous? Nous nous levons à six heures et demie. — A quelle heure déjeunez-vous? Nous déjeunons à neuf heures, nous dinons à six heures et quart, et nous soupons à dix heures. — A quelle heure votre frère se couche-t-il? Il se couche à onze heures. — A quelle heure le convoi part-il? L'un part à quatre heures dix minutes, et l'autre à cinq heures moins dix minutes. — Avez-vous besoin d'une première ou d'une seconde place? Quel est le prix? Les premières sont de vingt et les secondes de dix francs. — Voici vingt francs; donnez-moi\* un billet pour la première place. — Voici le convoi. Dépêchez-vous, s'il vous plaît, Monsieur, ne perdez pas de temps. — A quelle heure arriverons-nous à Londres? Vous y arriverez à six heures ce soir. — Où sommes-nous maintenant? Nous serons à la gare dans une heure et demie, nous avons passé l'avant-dernière station il y a une demi-<sup>4</sup>

Quando parte Ella? Io parto domani. — Partono Elleno (or partite) di buon'ora o tardi? Partiamo per tempo la mattina. — A che ora si alzano Elleno (or vi alzate)? Noi ci alziamo alle sei e mezzo. — A che ora fate colazione? Facciamo colazione alle nove, pranziamo alle sei ed un quarto, e ceniamo alle dieci. — A che ora si corica il di Lei fratello? Egli si corica alle undici. — A che ora parte il convoglio? L'uno parte alle quattro dieci minuti, e l'altro alle cinque meno dieci minuti. — Vuol Ella un primo o un secondo posto? Qual è il prezzo dei posti? I primi sono di venti ed i secondi di dieci franchi. — Ecco venti franchi; datemi (or mi dia) un primo posto. — Ecco il convoglio. Si sbrighi, di grazia, Signore, non perda tempo. — A che ora arriveremo (or giungeremo) a Londra? Elleno ci arriveranno (or voi ci arriverete) stasera alle sei. — Dove siamo noi adesso? Saremo alla stazione fra un'ora e mezzo. C'è una mezz'ora che abbiamo passato la penultima stazione. — Ha

\* The disjunctive personal pronouns are placed after the imperative affirmative.

<sup>4</sup> See Note 2, page 155.



## SECTION XXVI.—NUMBERS,

## EXERCISE 26.

second volumes, I have not had time to read the third. — Where did you read that? I read it in the newspaper. — How old is this man? He is forty-one years old. — When did you come to England? I came to England in the year eighteen hundred and thirty. — When do you intend to start for Paris? I intend starting (or to start) in a few days. — When shall you return? I shall return in half a year. — When did your brother start? He started the day before yesterday. — Where did you dine yesterday? I dined at the Hôtel d'Angleterre. — How much do people pay a head? Three francs. — That is not dear. I should like to dine there also. Which street is it in? It is in \*\*\*-street, number 7. If you like, I will take you there. — What day of the month is it? It is the first. — When do you expect your brother? I expect him on the twelfth of next month. — Where is he now? He is in London. — Does he often go to London? He goes there twice a year. — How many houses are there in this town? There are three thousand five hundred and fifty houses, three churches, and two bridges. — When were the bridges built? They were built in the last century. — Did you see those men? I saw them all four; they were walking two and two. — Who is that? It is one of my friends (or a friend of mine). — Are you speaking of this man? Yes, I am speaking of him.

*Are you cold?*

*I am not cold.*

*Is he warm or cold?*

*He is neither warm nor cold.*

halben Stunde die vorletzte Station zurückgelegt. — Haben Sie den dritten Band meines Werkes gelesen? Ich habe nur den ersten und zweiten Band gelesen, ich habe nicht Zeit gehabt, den dritten zu lesen. — Wo haben Sie das gelesen? Ich habe es in der Zeitung gelesen. — Wie alt ist dieser Mann? Er ist ein und vierzig Jahre alt. — Wann sind Sie nach England gekommen? Ich bin im Jahre achtzehn hundert und dreißig nach England gekommen. — Wann gedenken Sie nach Paris zu reisen? Ich gedenke in einigen Tagen dahin zu reisen. — Wann werden Sie zurückkommen? Ich werde in einem halben Jahre von da zurückkommen. — Wann ist Ihr Bruder abgereist? Er ist vorgestern abgereist. — Wo haben Sie gestern gespeist? Ich habe in dem englischen Hofe gespeist. — Wie viel bezahlt man per Kopf? Drei Franken. — Das ist nicht teuer. Ich würde auch gern da speisen. In welcher Strasse ist er? Er ist in der \*\*\* Strasse, Nummer 7. Wenn es Ihnen beliebt, so will ich Sie dahin führen. — Den wievielten des Monats haben wir? Wir haben den ersten. — Wann erwarten Sie Ihren Bruder? Ich erwarte ihn den zwölften nächsten Monats. — Wo ist er jetzt? Er ist jetzt in London. — Geht er oft nach London? Er geht zweimal des Jahres dahin. — Wie viele Häuser sind in dieser Stadt? Es sind drei tausend fünf hundert und fünfzig Häuser, drei Kirchen und zwei Brücken darin. — Wann sind die Brücken gebaut worden? Sie sind in dem letzten Jahrhundert gebaut worden. — Haben Sie diese Männer gesehen? Ich habe sie alle vier gesehen; sie gingen zwei und zwei. — Wer ist das? Es ist einer meiner Freunde.<sup>2</sup> — Sprechen Sie von diesem Manne? Ja, ich spreche von ihm.

*Friert es Sie (or ist es Ihnen kalt)?<sup>4</sup>*

*Es friert mich (or es ist mir kalt).*

*Ist es ihm warm oder kalt?*

*Es ist ihm weder warm noch kalt.*

<sup>1</sup> See Note 6, page 146.  
covering this case; otherwise of is expressed by von or unter, with the dative; as, Ich spreche von Ihnen, I am speaking of you, ich sehe zwei von ihnen, I see two of them; but the genitive may be used if the pronoun precede the numeral; as, Es waren ihrer drei, there were three of them.

<sup>2</sup> Es ist ein Freund von mir is also used. The genitive case of the personal pronouns is only used after verbs and adjectives  
<sup>3</sup> See Irregular

## EXERCISE 26.

heure. — Avez-vous lu le troisième volume de mon ouvrage? Je n'ai lu que le premier et le second volume, je n'ai pas eu le temps de lire le troisième. — Où avez-vous lu cela? Je l'ai lu dans le journal. — Quel âge cet homme a-t-il? Il a quarante et un ans. — Quand êtes-vous venu en Angleterre? Je suis venu en Angleterre l'an dix-huit cent trente. — Quand avez-vous le dessein de partir pour Paris? J'ai le dessein d'y aller dans quelques jours. — Quand reviendrez-vous? Je reviendrai dans six mois. — Quand votre frère est-il parti? Il est parti avant hier. — Où avez-vous dîné hier? J'ai dîné à l'hôtel d'Angleterre. — Combien paie-t-on par tête? Trois francs. — Ce n'est pas cher. J'ai envie d'y dîner aussi. — Dans quelle rue est-ce? C'est dans la rue (de) \*\*\*, numéro 7. Si vous voulez, je vous y conduirai. — Quel jour du mois avons-nous? Le premier. — Quand attendez-vous votre frère? Je l'attends le douze du mois prochain. — Où est-il maintenant? Il est à Londres. — Va-t-il souvent à Londres? Il y va deux fois par an. — Combien de maisons y a-t-il dans cette ville? Il y a trois mille cinq cent cinquante maisons, trois églises, et deux ponts. — Quand les ponts ont-ils été bâtis? Ils ont été bâtis dans le dernier siècle. — Avez-vous vu ces hommes? Je les ai vus tous les quatre; ils marchaient deux à deux. — Qui est-ce là? C'est un de mes amis. — Parlez-vous de cet homme-ci? Oui, j'en parle (or je parle de lui).

*Avez-vous froid?*

*Je n'ai pas froid.*

*A-t-il chaud ou froid?*

*Il n'a ni chaud ni froid.*

Ella letto (or avete letto) il terzo volume della mia opera? Non ho letto che il primo ed il secondo volume, non ho avuto tempo di leggere il terzo. — Dove ha Ella letto ciò? L'ho letto nel giornale. — Quanti anni (or che età) ha quest' uomo? Egli ha quarant' uno anno. — Quando è Ella venuto in Inghilterra? Sono venuto in Inghilterra nell' anno mille ottocento trenta. — Quando pensa Ella partire per Parigi? Penso andarci fra pochi giorni. — Quando riverrà? \* Io riverrò fra sei mesi. — Quando è partito il di Lei fratello? È partito ier l' altro. — Dove ha Ella (or avete) pranzato ieri? Ho pranzato all' albergo d' Inghilterra. — Quanto si paga per uno? Tre franchi. — Questo non è caro. Ho desiderio di pranzarvi anch' io. — In che strada è? È nella strada (di) \*\*\*, numero 7. Se volete (or Ella vuole), io ci la condurrò. — Quanti ne abbiamo del mese? Il primo. — Quando aspetta Ella il di Lei (or aspettate vostro) fratello? L' aspetto ai dodici del mese prossimo (or venturo). — Dov' è adesso? È in Londra. — Va egli spesso a Londra? Egli ci va due volte all' anno. — Quante case ci sono in questa città? Ci sono tre mila cinquecento cinquanta case, tre chiese e due ponti. — Quando sono stati edificati i ponti? Eglino sono stati edificati nell' ultimo secolo. — Ha Ella veduto (or avete veduto) questi uomini? Li ho veduti tutti e quattro; eglino passeggiavano due a due. — Chi è questo? È un mio amico (or uno dei miei amici). — Parla Ella di quest' uomo? Sì, ne parlo (or parlo di lui).

*Ha Ella freddo?*

*Non ho freddo.*

*Ha egli caldo o freddo?*

*Egli non ha nè caldo nè freddo.*

Tenses, Appendix, Verb No. 22, page xxxix.

\* In German impersonal verbs are generally conjugated with the auxiliary *haben*; some govern the dative case. When a noun follows the verb, as, *Es frieren mir die Füße*, the personal pronoun must be in the dative case. — See Note 1.

The **Comparative** and **Superlative** are formed:

1st, by adding *r* and *st*; as, *wise-r*, *wise-st*.

2d, „ *er* and *est*; as, *bold-er*, *bold-est*.

3d, by changing *y* into *i* before *er* and *est*; as, *happy*, *happ-i-er*, *happ-i-est*.

4th, by doubling the consonant: as, *wet*, *wetter*, *wettest*.

5th, by prefixing *more*, *most*, *less*, *least*, to adjectives composed of several syllables; as, *more*, *most amiable*; *less*, *least valuable*.

#### Comparative

|                                        |                                            |
|----------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------|
| of superiority,                        | — <i>er</i> or <i>more</i> — <i>than</i> . |
| of inferiority (meaning not equal to), | <i>less</i> — <i>than</i> .                |
|                                        | <i>not so</i> ( <i>as</i> )— <i>as</i> .   |
| of equality,                           | <i>as</i> — <i>as</i> .                    |

The definite article or a possessive adjective placed before the superlative ending in *est* forms the relative superlative, corresponding with the same arrangement in French, Italian, and German.

*Very* before the adjective forms the superlative, corresponding with the German *sehr*, the French *très*, and the Italian *molto*.

In German, to adjectives ending in *e* add *r* to form the comparative, to others add *er*; and decline them like the positive.

To form the superlative of adjectives ending in *au*, *eu*, *ei*, *d*, *h*, *k*, *ck*, *ff*, *mm*, *nn*, *rr*, *pf*, *s*, *tz*, *sch*, *st*, *t*, *z*, add *est*.

Other terminations, as, *e*, *b*, *ch*, *f*, *g*, *l*, *m*, *n*, *nd*, *r*, take *st*, and are declined like the positive.

In *groß* the *sz* is contracted into *zst*; as, *größer-st*, instead of *grösz-est*.

Adjectives in *e* lose this letter after *b* and *g*; as, *eng*, *enger*, *engst*.

Those in *el*, *en*, *er*, lose the *e* in the comparative; as, *edel*, *edler*.

#### Comparative

|                 |                                               |
|-----------------|-----------------------------------------------|
| of superiority, | — <i>er</i> or <i>mehr</i> — <i>als</i> .     |
| of inferiority, | { <i>nicht so</i> — <i>wie</i> , <i>als</i> . |
|                 | <i>weniger</i> — <i>als</i> .                 |
| of equality,    | <i>so</i> — <i>wie</i> , <i>als</i> .*        |

\* *Als* must not be used to express *as*, when followed by a nominative case.

In the comparative and superlative the vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, must be changed into *ä*, *ö*, *ü*; as, *roth*, *röther*, *röthest*.

The vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, are not changed in the following words:

*Barsch*, *blank*, *brav*, *blosz*, *bunt*, *dumpf*, *fahl*, *falb*, *falsch*, *flach*, *froh*, *gemach*, *hohl*, *kahl*, *karg*, *knapp*, *lahm*, *lasz*, *mat*, *morsch*, *nacht*, *platt*, *plump*, *rasch*, *roh*, *rund*, *sacht*, *sansf*, *satt*,

# SECTION XXVII.—DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

17

In French the comparative of adjectives is formed by placing before the adjectives the words

Comparative  
of superiority, *plus*,  
of inferiority, *moins*, *ne—pas aussi*, or *si*, } and *que*<sup>1</sup>  
of equality, *aussi*, *si*, } after.

The superlative *very* is formed by placing before the adjective *très*, *fort*, *infiniment*, *bien*.

The relative superlative, or superlative in the highest or lowest degree, is formed by placing the definite article or a possessive adjective before the comparative; as,

|               |               |            |             |
|---------------|---------------|------------|-------------|
| m.            | f.            | pl.        |             |
| <i>Le,</i>    | <i>la,</i>    | <i>les</i> | <i>plus</i> |
| <i>Mon,</i>   | <i>ma,</i>    | <i>mes</i> | <i>plus</i> |
| <i>Votre,</i> | <i>votre,</i> | <i>vos</i> | <i>plus</i> |

*beau, belle,* { the finest, &c.  
*beaux, belles,* { my finest, &c.  
 &c. { your finest, &c.

The superlative relative requires the noun that follows it to be put in the genitive case, and the verb in the subjunctive mood; as,

*Londres est la plus belle de toutes les villes que je connaisse.*  
 London is the finest of all the cities that I am acquainted with.

The same occurs in Italian, but the English pre-

In Italian the comparative is formed by prefixing to the adjective

|      |                            |       |                                     |          |
|------|----------------------------|-------|-------------------------------------|----------|
| Sup. | <i>Più,</i>                | } and | <i>che, di, del, dello, &amp;c.</i> | } after. |
| Inf. | <i>Meno,</i>               |       | <i>che, di, del, &amp;c.</i>        |          |
|      | <i>Non così,</i>           |       | <i>come</i>                         |          |
| Equ. | <i>Così,</i>               |       | <i>come</i>                         |          |
|      | <i>Tanto, altrettanto,</i> |       | <i>quanto</i>                       |          |

The superlative *very* is formed by changing the final vowel of the adjective into *issimo*, m., *issima*, f.; as, *bello, bellissimo, bellissima, bellissimi, bellissime*.

*Acre, celebre, integro, salubre*, change *e* and *ro* into *errimo, errima*; as, *celebre, celeberrimo, &c.*

By *molto* or *assai* (very); as, *bello, molto bello*.

By the prefixes *arci, stra*; as, *bello, strabello*.

By repeating the adjective; as, *bello bello*, and such expressions as *oltre ogni credere*, beyond belief, &c.

Words in *co* and *go*, *ca* and *ga*, that take *h* in the plural, require it also before the terminations *issimo, &c.*; as, *franco, franchissimo*.

Superlative adverbs are formed by changing the final vowel of adjectives into *issimamente*; as, *franco, franchissimamente*.

*Ottimamente* and *benissimo* are exceptions.

In Italian the superlative relative is formed, as in French, by placing the definite article or possessive

<sup>1</sup> *De* is used instead of *que* before a numeral; as, *J'en ai plus de trois*.

## SECTION XXVII.—DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

Do not say *the best*, but *the better of the two*; and *the best of all*.

## IRREGULAR.

*Good, better, best.*

*Bad or ill, worse, worst.*

*Little, less, least.*

*Much or many, more, most.*

*Far, farther, farthest.*

*Old, older or elder, oldest or eldest.*

*Well, ill or badly, little, much, far*, are also adverbs, and have the same irregularity in their degrees of comparison.

Other adjectives are sometimes used as adverbs in all four languages.

*Nom. and Acc.* A finer.

*Nom. and Acc.* The finest.

## As much as.

Infinitive.

To show.

To get.

To get rid of.

To sell cheap.

to be worth.

to be better.

to be worth while to.

to sell dear.

*schlaff, schlank, schroff, starr, stolz, straff, stumm, stumpf, toll, voll, wahr, wund, zahm.*

*Bang, blasz, fromm, gesund, glatt, klar, naez, zart*, are doubtful.

This modification does not take place with the diphthong *au*, nor with adjectives formed from participles; as, *blau, blauer*.

Neither does it occur in adjectives formed by the terminations *bar, sam, haft, ig, lich*; as, *dankbar, &c.*

## IRREGULAR.

*Gut* (good), *besser, best* (*am besten*).

*Hoch* (high), *höher, höchst* (*am höchsten*).

*Nah* (near), *näher, nächst* (*am nächsten*).

*Viel* (much), *mehr, meist* (*am meisten*).

*Bald* (soon), *eher* (*am ehesten*).

*Gern* (willing), *lieber* (*am liebsten*).

The comparative and superlative of adjectives and adverbs are also formed by prefixing *mehr* and *am meisten* to avoid harshness of sound.

|             |                |                |                             |
|-------------|----------------|----------------|-----------------------------|
|             | m.             | f.             | n.                          |
| <i>Nom.</i> | Ein schönerer, | eine schönere, | ein schöneres. <sup>1</sup> |

|             |                  |                |                |
|-------------|------------------|----------------|----------------|
| <i>Acc.</i> | Einen schöneren, | eine schönere, | ein schöneres. |
|-------------|------------------|----------------|----------------|

|             |               |               |                            |
|-------------|---------------|---------------|----------------------------|
|             | m.            | f.            | n.                         |
| <i>Nom.</i> | Der schönste, | die schönste, | das schönste. <sup>1</sup> |

|             |                |               |               |
|-------------|----------------|---------------|---------------|
| <i>Acc.</i> | Den schönsten, | die schönste, | das schönste. |
|-------------|----------------|---------------|---------------|

## So viel wie.

Infinitive.

Zeigen.

Veranschaffen (sich) (dat.).

Losmachen (sich) (von).

Wohlfeil verkaufen.

werth sein, taugen.

besser sein.

der Mühe werth sein zu.

theuer verkaufen.

<sup>1</sup> Adjectives in the comparative and superlative degree have the three forms of declension. See Section XI., page 56.

— passed by *di, fra, tra*; as,  
*la più bella di (or fra) tutte le città che conosca.*

# IRREGULAR.

good), *meilleur*?, *le meilleur*.  
 is (bad), *pire* or *plus mauvais*, *le pire* or *le plus mauvais*.  
 little), *moindre* or *plus petit*, *le moindre* or *le plus petit*.

ell), *mieux*?, *le mieux*.  
 ily), *pis* or *plus mal*, *le pis* or *le plus mal*.  
 , *plus*, *le plus*.  
 s, *le moins*.

1cc. m. f.  
 Un plus beau, une —.

## DEGREES OF COMPARISON

adjective before the con  
*più bella*, &c., the most b

# IRREGU

Buono (good), *migliore*?, *ottimo*.  
 Cattivo (bad), *peggiore* or *più ca*.  
 Grande (great), *maggiore* or *più g*.  
 Piccolo (small), *minore* or *più picc*.

Bene (well), *meglio*?, *ottimamente* o  
 Male (badly), *peggio*, *pessimamente*.  
 Molto (much), *più*, *il più*.  
 Poco (little), *meno*.

EXERCISE 27.

Have you got any good gloves? Yes, Sir, I have some good  
 ones. — Will you have the kindness to show me some good  
 ones? Certainly, Sir. Here are some. — These are not good  
 (or good for nothing). Have you any better ones? No, Sir, I  
 have no better ones, these are the best that I have. — Has your  
 a smaller hat than this? Yes, Sir, he has a very fine one, but  
 his sister got a fine horse? — Is your brother older than mine?  
 No, he is younger than yours. — How old is he? He is twenty-  
 three years old. — Have you got a fine house? Yes, I have got  
 a very fine one, it is the finest house I know. — Is your house  
 as good as mine? No, it is not as good as yours, but it is better  
 than your brother's. — Are your gloves larger than mine?  
 Yes, they are larger than yours, but his are the largest of all. — Is it  
 Is this your finest dress? Yes, it is my finest dress. — No, I have  
 as fine as this? It is much finer than that, it is the finest dress I  
 ever saw. — Have you been to the hairdresser? No, I have  
 not been to him. — How much is this mantle worth? It is  
 worth a hundred and twenty-one francs. — Is this mantle  
 worth as much (or as good) as that one? This one is worth  
 more (or better) than that one. — I cannot get rid of this  
 you get me a better? — Are your shoes  
 the best that are made. — Are your shoes  
 better than mine, and  
 it worth while to buy any  
 others, because you  
 cheap or

27. Haben Sie gute Handschuhe? Ja, mein Herr, ich habe gute.  
 — Wollen Sie die Güte haben, mir gute zu zeigen? Gewiß,  
 mein Herr. Hier sind welche. — Diese sind nicht viel werth.  
 Haben Sie bessere? Nein, mein Herr, ich habe keine besseren,  
 diese sind die besten die ich habe. — Haben Sie einen kleineren  
 Hut als dieser? Dieser ist der kleinste den ich habe. — Hat  
 Ihr Bruder ein schönes Pferd? Ja, mein Herr, er hat ein sehr  
 schönes, aber seine Schwester hat eines das schöner ist. — Ist  
 Ihr Bruder älter als der meinige? Nein, er ist jünger als der.  
 Ihr Bruder älter als der meinige? Nein, er ist jünger als der.  
 Ihrg. — Wie alt ist er? Er ist drei und zwanzig Jahre alt.  
 — Haben Sie ein schönes Haus? Ja, ich habe ein sehr schönes.  
 es ist das schönste Haus das ich kenne. — Ist Ihr Haus so gut  
 wie das meinige? Nein, es ist nicht so gut als das Ihrige, aber  
 besser als das Ihres Bruders. — Sind Ihre Handschuhe größer  
 als die meinigen? Ja, sie sind größer als die Ihrigen, aber die  
 meinigen sind die größten von allen. — Ist dieses Ihr schönstes  
 Kleid? Ja, es ist mein schönstes Kleid. — Ist es so schön wie  
 jenes? Es ist schöner als jenes; es ist das schönste Kleid das  
 ich je gesehen habe. — Sind Sie bei dem Friseur gewesen?  
 Ich je gesehen habe. — Wie viel ist dieser  
 Mantel werth? Er ist hundert ein und zwanzig Franken werth.  
 — Ist dieser Mantel so viel werth wie jener? Dieser ist  
 mehr werth (or besser) als jener. — Ich will mich von diesem  
 losmachen, können Sie mir einen besseren verschaffen? Ich kann  
 Ihnen keinen bessern verschaffen, denn diese sind die besten die  
 man macht. — Sind Ihre Schuhe gut? Die meinigen sind  
 sehr gut, aber die Ihrigen sind besser als die meinigen, und die  
 Ihres Oheims sind die besten von allen. — Ist es der Mü-  
 werth, andere zu kaufen? Es ist nicht der Mühe werth, und  
 zu kaufen, denn Sie haben schon vier Paar. — Verkauft  
 Schuhmacher theuer oder wohlfeil? Er verkauft zwölf Paare  
 verkauft die Schuhe acht Franken und die Stiefel zwölf Fran-

## EXERCISE 27.

Avez-vous de bons gants? Oui, Monsieur, j'en ai de bons.  
 — Voulez-vous avoir la bonté de m'en montrer de bons? Certainement, Monsieur. En voici. — Ceux-ci ne sont pas bons. En avez-vous de meilleurs? Non, Monsieur, je n'en ai pas de meilleurs, ceux-ci sont (*or voilà*) les meilleurs que j'aie.<sup>1</sup> — Avez-vous un plus petit chapeau que celui-ci? Celui-ci est le plus petit que j'aie. — Votre frère a-t-il un joli cheval? Oui, Monsieur, il en a un très-joli, mais sa sœur en a un plus joli. — Votre frère est-il plus vieux que le mien? Non, il est plus jeune que le vôtre. — Quel âge a-t-il? Il a vingt-trois ans. — Avez-vous une jolie maison? Oui, j'en ai une bien jolie, c'est la plus jolie maison que je connaisse. — Votre maison est-elle aussi bonne que la mienne? Non, elle n'est pas aussi bonne que la vôtre, mais elle est meilleure que celle de votre frère. — Vos gants sont-ils plus grands que les miens? Oui, ils sont plus grands que les vôtres, mais les siens sont les plus grands de tous. — Est-ce votre plus belle robe? Oui, c'est ma plus belle robe. — Est-elle aussi belle que celle-ci? Elle est beaucoup plus belle que celle-là, c'est la plus belle robe que j'aie jamais vue. — Avez-vous été chez le perruquier? Non, je n'ai pas été chez lui. — Combien ce manteau vaut-il? Il vaut cent vingt et un francs. — Ce manteau-ci vaut-il autant que celui-là? Celui-ci vaut plus (*or est meilleur*) que celui-là. — J'ai besoin de me défaire de celui-ci, pouvez-vous m'en procurer un meilleur? Je ne peux pas vous en procurer un meilleur, parce que ceux-ci sont les meilleurs qu'on fasse. — Vos souliers sont-ils bons? Les miens sont très-bons, mais les vôtres sont meilleurs que les miens et ceux de votre oncle sont les meilleurs de tous. — Cela vaut-il la peine d'en acheter d'autres? Cela ne vaut pas la peine d'en acheter d'autres, parce que vous en avez déjà quatre paires. — Votre cordonnier vend-il cher ou à bon marché? Il vend à bon marché, il vend les souliers huit francs et les bottines douze

Ha Ella (*or avete*) buoni guanti? Sì, Signore, ne ho di buoni. — Vuol Ella aver la bontà di mostrarmene dei buoni? Volentieri, Signore. Econe. — Questi non sono buoni. Avetene (*or ne ha Ella*) di migliori? No, Signore, non ne ho di migliori, questi sono i migliori che io abbia.<sup>1</sup> — Ha Ella un più piccolo cappello di questo? Questo è il più piccolo che io abbia. — Ha il di Lei (*or vostro*) fratello un bel cavallo? Sì, Signore, egli ne ha un bellissimo, ma sua sorella ne ha un più bello. — È il di Lei fratello più attempato del mio? No, egli è più giovane del di Lei. — Che età (*or quanti anni*) ha egli? Egli ha ventitrè anni. — Ha Ella (*or avete*) una bella casa? Sì, ne ho una bellissima (*or molto bella*), è la più bella casa che io conosca. — E la di Lei casa così bella come la mia (*or tanto bella quanto, or bella quanto la mia*)? Non è tanto bella quanto la di Lei, ma è migliore di quella del di Lei fratello. — Sono i di Lei guanti più grandi dei miei? Sì, sono più grandi dei vostri, ma i suoi sono i più grandi di tutti. — È questa la di Lei roba più bella? Sì, è la mia roba\* più bella. — E così leggiadra come questa? Sì, è molto più leggiadra di quella, è la più bella roba che io abbia mai veduta. — E Ella andata (*or stata*) dal parrucchiere? Non sono andato a casa sua. — Quanto vale (*or può valere*) questo mantello? Vale cento vent' uno franco. — Vale questo mantello tanto quanto (*or quanto*) quello? Questo val meglio (*or è migliore*) di quello. — Voglio disfarmi di questo, può Ella procurarmene un migliore? Non posso procurargliene un migliore, poichè cotesti sono i migliori che si facciano. — Sono buone le di Lei scarpe? Le mie son ottime, ma le di Lei sono migliori delle mie, e quelle del di Lei zio sono le migliori di tutte. — Val la pena di comprarne altre? Ciò non val la pena di comprarne altre, poichè Ella ne ha già quattro paia. — Vende il di Lei calzolaio caro o a buon mercato? Egli vende \*

<sup>1</sup> When the adjective follows the noun, the article may be omitted.<sup>4</sup> See Note 4, page 45.



ances a' pair. — Will it be worth while to go to the blacker eyes than you, but he has a larger mouth. — Will it be worth while to go there, because it? It will not be worth while to go there, because be nobody there, but it will be worth while to go to it, because you will find a great many people there. Our servant as good as mine? He is better than yours, best servant (that) I know.

God.  
The sky, heaven.  
The angel.  
The spirit.  
Hell.  
The devil.  
The elements.  
The fire.  
The flame.  
The light.  
The darkness.  
The smoke.  
The air.

the shadow.  
the cloud.  
the thunder.  
the lightning.  
the wind.  
the rain.  
the rainbow.  
the frost.  
the snow.  
the hail.  
the ice.  
the dew.  
the fog.  
the heat.  
the cold.

Abend auf den ...  
sein, dahin zu gehen, weil nicht ...  
es wird der Mühe werth sein, ins  
viele Leute dort finden werden. —  
wie der meinige? Er ist besser a  
Bediente den ich kenne.

|                 | Gen.   | Pl.  |
|-----------------|--------|------|
| Gott,           | es, s, | er.  |
| der Himmel,     | s,     | —    |
| der Engel,      | s,     | —    |
| der Geist,      | es,    | er.  |
| die Hölle,      | —      | —    |
| der Teufel,     | s,     | —    |
| das Element,    | es, s, | e.   |
| das Feuer,      | s,     | —    |
| die Flamme,     | —      | n.   |
| das Licht,      | es, s, | er.  |
| die Finsterniß, | —      | sse. |
| der Rauch,      | es,    | s.   |
| die Luft,       | —      | e.   |
| die Erde.       | s,     | er.  |
| das Wasser,     | es, s, | e.   |
| das Meer,       | —      | n.   |
| die Sonne,      | es, s, | e.   |

la-petite. — Cela vaudra-t-il la peine d'y aller? — Cela ne vaudra pas la peine d'y aller, parce qu'il y aura très-peu de monde, mais cela vaudra la peine d'aller au concert, parce que vous y trouverez beaucoup de monde. — Votre domestique est-il autant que le mien? Il vaut mieux que le vôtre, c'est le meilleur domestique que je connaisse.

|                                          |                      |
|------------------------------------------|----------------------|
| Dieu.                                    | l' (une) ombre.      |
| le ciel.                                 | le nuage.            |
| (un) ange.                               | le tonnerre.         |
| (un) esprit.                             | l' (un) éclair.      |
| l'enfer (m.).                            | le vent.             |
| le diable.                               | la pluie.            |
| les éléments.                            | l' (un) arc-en-ciel. |
| le feu.                                  | la gelée.            |
| la flamme.                               | la neige.            |
| la lumière.                              | la grêle.            |
| l'obscurité (f.), les ténèbres (f. pl.). | la glace.            |
| la fumée.                                | la rosée.            |
| l' (un) air.                             | le brouillard.       |
|                                          | la chaleur.          |

piccola piccola.  
Ciò non varrà la pena di  
gente, ma varrà la pena di  
troverà molta gente. — È  
domestico come il mio?  
vostro), è il migliore dome

|                             |
|-----------------------------|
| Dio, Iddio.                 |
| il cielo.                   |
| l' angelo.                  |
| lo spirito.                 |
| l' inferno.                 |
| il diavolo.                 |
| gli elementi.               |
| il fuoco.                   |
| la fiamma.                  |
| la luce.                    |
| l' oscurzza (f.), le tenebr |
| il fumo.                    |
| l' aria (f.).               |
| la terra.                   |
| l' aria (f.).               |

# SECTION XXVIII.—COMPARISON BETWEEN W

than —  
as many — } as —  
much, as many — }  
much, as many — }  
**Two too many; two less.**

read than wine.  
of your bread than of mine.  
of this wine than of that.  
of yours than of mine.  
e of it, of them } than { I (have).  
is (of it, of them) } thou (hast).  
much, as many (of it, of them) } as { he, she (has).  
quite as much, as many (of it, of them) } we (have).  
Not as much, as many (of it, of them) } you (have).  
Still more (of it, of them) than they (have).

See Appendix of Regular and Irregular Verbs for the following Tenses and their Terminations.

What will you do when you have learned French?  
I shall learn Italian. See Note 1, Appendix, page  
you do if you were ill? I should  
and you have done?

Mehr — } als —  
Weniger — }  
So viel, so viele — }  
Eben so viel, viele — } wie, als —  
Nicht so viel, viele — }

**Zwei zu viel; zwei weniger.**

Mehr Brod als Wein.  
Mehr von ihrem Wein als von dem meinigen.  
Mehr von diesem Wein als von jenem.  
Mehr von dem Ihrigen als von dem meinigen.  
Dessen, deren mehr } als { ich.  
Dessen, deren weniger } du.  
Dessen, deren so viel, viele } wie { er, sie.  
Dessen, deren eben so viel, viele } wir.  
Dessen, deren nicht so viel, viele } Sie, ihr.  
Dessen, deren noch mehr als sie.

Was werden Sie thun, wann Sie Französisch g  
haben? Ich werde Italienisch lernen.

Was würden Sie thun, wenn Sie krank  
Ich würde den Arzt holen lassen.  
Was würden Sie gethan haben, wenn Sie  
wesen wären? Ich würde den Arzt h  
haben.

Governing one is placed last.

## COMBINED WITH NOUNS AND PRONOUNS.

|                      |   |          |
|----------------------|---|----------|
| Plus de —            | } | que de — |
| Moins de —           |   |          |
| Autant de —          |   |          |
| Tout autant de —     |   |          |
| Ne — pas autant de — |   |          |

**Deux de trop ; deux de moins.**

|                                           |   |     |
|-------------------------------------------|---|-----|
| <i>Plus de pain que de vin.</i>           |   |     |
| <i>Plus de votre pain que du mien.</i>    |   |     |
| <i>Plus de ce vin-ci que de celui-là.</i> |   |     |
| <i>En — plus du vôtre que du mien.</i>    |   |     |
| <i>En — plus</i>                          | } | que |
| <i>En — moins</i>                         |   |     |
| <i>En — autant</i>                        |   |     |
| <i>En — tout autant</i>                   |   |     |
| <i>N'en — pas autant</i>                  |   |     |
| <i>En — encore plus</i>                   |   |     |

|                    |
|--------------------|
| <i>moi.</i>        |
| <i>toi.</i>        |
| <i>lui, elle.</i>  |
| <i>nous.</i>       |
| <i>vous.</i>       |
| <i>eux, elles.</i> |

|                           |   |                 |
|---------------------------|---|-----------------|
| Più —                     | } | che —           |
| Meno —                    |   |                 |
| Tanto, -a, -i, -e —       | } | quanto, -a, -i, |
| Altrettanto, -a, -i, -e — |   |                 |
| Non — tanto, -a, -i, -e — |   |                 |

**Due di troppo ; due di meno.**

*Più pane che vino.*  
*Più del di Lei pane che del mio.*  
*Più di questo vino che di quello.*  
*Ne — più del di Lei che del mio.*  
*Ne — più } di { me.*  
*Ne — meno } di { te.*  
*Ne — tanto, &c. } quanto { lui, lei.*  
*Ne — altrettanto, &c. } noi.*  
*Non ne — tanto, &c. } voi, Lei.*  
*Ne — anco, anche più, vieppiù di loro.*

*See Appendix of Regular and Irregular Verbs for the following Tenses and their Termination:*

Que *ferez-vous* quand vous *aurez appris* le Français? *J'apprendrai* l'Italien. See Note 1, Appendix, page iv.

Que *feriez-vous* si vous *étiez* malade? *J'enverrais chercher* le médecin.

Qu'est-ce que vous *auriez fait* si vous *aviez* (or *eussiez*) été malade? *J'aurais envoyé chercher* le médecin.

Che *farà* Ella quando Ella *avrà imparato* cese? *Imparerò* l'Italiano.

Che *fareste* se *foste* malato? *Manderei* mare il medico.

Che *avreste fatto* se *foste stato* ammalato? *mandato a chiamare* il medico.

What *were* you *doing* when I *came* in? I *was* *reading* a French book.

At what time *did* you *breakfast* when you *were* at your sister's? I *breakfasted* when she *did*.<sup>1</sup>

What *did* you *do* when you *had crossed* the Alps? We *went* into Italy and to Rome.

To owe (dat.).                      to wear.  
To try to (inf.).                    to ask for somebody.  
To succeed in (pres. part.). to ask for something.

To ask the man for something.  
To thank the man for something.

To like to (inf.) (or pr. p.) better than to (inf.) (or pr. p.).  
To prefer (pres. part.) to (pres. part.).

Do you prefer staying at home to going out?  
{ I like to stay at home better than to go out.  
{ I like staying at home better than going out.

Will you taste this wine?  
No, I thank you.  
Yes, if you please, give me a little.

Was *thaten* Sie als ich *eintrat*? Ich *las* (eben, so eben) ein französisches Buch.

Um wie viel Uhr *frühstückten* Sie als Sie bei Ihrer Schwester *waren*? Ich *frühstückte* als sie *frühstückte*.

Was *thaten* Sie nachdem Sie die Alpen *passirt* *hatten*? Wir *gingen* nach Italien und nach Rom.

Schuldig sein (dat.).                      tragen.  
{ Versuchen zu (inf.).                    nach Jemand fragen.  
{ Sich bemühen zu (inf.).  
Gelingen (used impers.) zu (inf.). Etwas verlangen.

Von dem Manne Etwas verlangen.  
Dem Manne für Etwas danken.<sup>2</sup>

Lieber mögen (inf.) als (inf.).  
Besser gefallen (used imperson.) zu (inf.) als zu (inf.).

Mögen Sie lieber zu Hause bleiben, als ausgehen?  
{ Ich mag lieber zu Hause bleiben, als ausgehen.  
{ Es gefällt mir besser zu Hause zu bleiben, als auszugehen.

Wollen Sie diesen Wein kosten?  
Nein, ich danke Ihnen.<sup>3</sup>  
Bitte (or gefälligst), geben Sie mir ein wenig davon.

<sup>1</sup> See Note 1 on Ellipsis, page 42. An ellipsis should never be made if it obscures the meaning of a sentence.

## COMBINED WITH NOUNS AND PRONOUNS.

Que *faisiez-vous* comme j'*entrais* (or quand je *suis entré*)? Je *lisais* un livre français.<sup>2</sup>

A quelle heure *déjeuniez-vous* lorsque vous *étiez* chez votre sœur? Je *déjeunais* quand elle *déjeunait*.

Que *fîtes-vous* quand vous *eûtes* (or *après avoir*) *passé* les Alpes? Nous *allâmes* (or *sommes allés*) en Italie et à Rome.

|                             |                                |
|-----------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <b>Devoir</b> (dat.).       | <b>porter.</b>                 |
| { <b>Essayer de</b> (inf.). | <b>demandar quelqu'un.</b>     |
| { <b>Tâcher de</b> (inf.).  | <b>demandar quelque chose.</b> |
| <b>Réussir à.</b>           |                                |

Demandar quelque chose à l'homme.  
Remercier l'homme de quelque chose.

**Aimer mieux** (inf.) **que de** (inf.).

*Aimez-vous mieux rester à la maison que de sortir?*

*J'aime mieux rester à la maison que de sortir.*

Voulez-vous goûter ce vin?

Non, je vous remercie.

Donnez m'en un peu, s'il vous plaît.

Che *faceva* Ella (or che *stava* Ella *face* quando io *sono entrato*)? Io *leggeva* (or *stava gendo*) un libro francese.<sup>3</sup>

A che ora *faceva* Ella colazione quando Ell: dalla (or in casa della) di Lei sorella? Io *faceva* colazione quando *faceva* colazione ella.

Che *faceste* quando *aveste* (or dopo *aver*) *passa* Alpi? *Andammo* (or *siamo andati*) in Italia Roma.

|                               |                                          |
|-------------------------------|------------------------------------------|
| <b>Dovere</b> (dat.).         | <b>portare.</b>                          |
| { <b>Provare a</b> (inf.).    | <b>domandare di qualci</b>               |
| { <b>Sforzarsi di</b> (inf.). | <b>domandare qualche</b>                 |
| <b>Riuscire a</b> (inf.).     | (See <i>Uscire</i> , Appendix, p. xxxvi. |

Domandare qualche cosa all' uomo.  
Ringraziare l' uomo per qualche cosa.

{ **Amar meglio, più** (inf.)  
{ **Piacere** (used imperson.) **meglio, più** (inf.) } **che** (i

*Ama Ella meglio rimanere in casa che uscire?*  
{ *Amo meglio rimanere in casa che uscire.*  
{ *Mi piace più restare in casa che uscire.*

Vuol Ella gustare questo vino?

Ne La ringrazio (or grazie tante).

Me ne dia (or datemene) un poco, di grazia.

<sup>2</sup> *Danken* is generally used to thank when refusing. There is no expression in German corresponding with the English expression *if you gr-fälligst* or *büte* is generally then used. <sup>3</sup> This tense is used to express habitual or simultaneous actions.

## EXERCISE 28.

Do you eat more bread than meat? I eat less bread than meat. — Do you drink as much wine as cider? I drink less cider than wine. — Do you read more French than English books? I read more English than French books. — How many have you already read? I have already read more than five. — Have you drunk more of your wine than of mine? I have drunk more of yours than of mine. I have drunk more of this than of that. I have drunk more of the one than of the other. — Has your father received as many letters as notes? He has received quite as many letters as notes, but he has not read as many English letters as French notes. — Has he read more than you (have)? Yes, he has read more than I (have), but he has not read as many as your sister. — Is your room as fine as mine? It is much finer than yours. — Have you any more books? I have several more. — Have you as many as they (have)? They have a great many, but I have still more than they (have). — When will they have some more? I shall lend them a few more when they have<sup>1</sup> read those I have already lent them. — What will you do when you have seen your father? I shall go to market to buy some bread, butter, eggs and meat. — Have I bought too many eggs? You have bought ten too many. — If you had had the toothache, what would you have done? I should have sent for the dentist. — What were you doing when I came in? I was speaking German. — At what time did you go to bed when you were at your uncle's? I went to bed when he did. — What did you do when you had seen the queen? We went to the duke's palace, to see the prince and princess. — Were they there? Yes, Sir, they were there.

Essen Sie mehr Brod als Fleisch? Ich esse weniger Brod als Fleisch. — Trinken Sie so viel Wein wie Apffelwein? Ich trinke weniger Apffelwein als Wein. — Lesen Sie mehr französische als englische Bücher? Ich lese mehr englische als französische Bücher. — Wie viel haben Sie davon schon gelesen? Ich habe (deren) schon mehr als fünf gelesen. — Haben Sie mehr von Ihrem Weine als von dem meinigen getrunken? Ich habe mehr von dem Ihrigen als von dem meinigen getrunken. Ich habe mehr von diesem als von jenem getrunken. — Hat Ihr Vater so viele Briefe als Billette erhalten? Er hat so viele Briefe wie Billette erhalten, aber er hat nicht so viele englische Briefe als französische Billette gelesen. — Hat er deren mehr gelesen als Sie? Ja, er hat deren mehr gelesen als ich, aber er hat deren nicht so viele gelesen wie Ihre Schwester. — Ist Ihr Zimmer so schön wie das meinige? Es ist viel schöner als das Ihrige. — Haben Sie noch Bücher? Ich habe deren noch mehrere. — Haben Sie deren so viele wie sie? Sie haben deren viele, aber ich habe deren noch mehr als sie. — Was werden sie noch welche haben (or bekommen)? Ich werde ihnen noch einige leihen, wenn sie die gelesen haben, die ich ihnen schon geliehen habe. — Was werden Sie thun, wenn Sie Ihren Vater gesehen haben? Ich werde auf den Markt gehen, um Brod, Butter, Eier und Fleisch zu kaufen. — Habe ich zu viel Eier gekauft? Sie haben (deren) zehn zu viel gekauft. — Wenn Sie Zahnschmerzen gehabt hätten, was würden Sie gethan haben? Ich würde den Zahnarzt holen lassen haben.<sup>2</sup> — Was thaten Sie als ich eintrat? Ich sprach Deutsch. — Um wie viel Uhr gingen Sie zu Bette, als Sie bei Ihrem Oheime waren? Ich ging zu Bette als er zu Bette ging. — Was thaten Sie nachdem Sie die Königin gesehen hatten? Wir gingen in den Palaß des Herzogs, um den Prinz und die Prinzessin zu sehen. — Waren sie da? Ja, mein Herr, sie waren da.

<sup>1</sup> Although the present is used in such phrases as these in English and German, the future is used in French and Italian.

<sup>2</sup> See Note 1, page 180.

## COMBINED WITH NOUNS AND PRONOUNS.

### EXERCISE 28.

Mangez-vous plus de pain que de viande? Je mange moins de pain que de viande. — Buvez-vous autant de<sup>4</sup> vin que de cidre? Je bois moins de cidre que de vin. — Lisez-vous plus de livres français que de livres anglais? Je lis plus de livres anglais que de livres français. — Combien en avez-vous déjà lu? J'en ai déjà lu plus de cinq. — Avez-vous bu plus de votre vin que du mien? J'en ai bu plus du vôtre que du mien. J'en ai plus bu de celui-ci que de celui-là. J'en ai bu plus de l'un que de l'autre. — Votre père a-t-il reçu autant de lettres que de billets? Il a reçu tout autant de lettres que de billets, mais il n'a pas lu autant de lettres anglaises que de billets français. — En a-t-il lu plus que vous? Oui, il en a lu plus que moi, mais il n'en a pas lu autant<sup>5</sup> que votre sœur. — Votre chambre est-elle aussi<sup>3</sup> belle que la mienne? Elle est beaucoup plus belle que la vôtre. — Avez-vous encore des livres? J'en ai encore plusieurs. — En avez-vous autant qu'eux? Ils en ont beaucoup, mais j'en ai encore plus qu'eux. — Quand en auront-ils encore? Je leur en prêterai encore quelques-uns quand ils auront<sup>1</sup> lu ceux que je leur ai déjà prêtés. — Que ferez-vous quand vous aurez vu votre père? J'irai au marché (pour) acheter du pain, du beurre, des œufs, et de la viande. — Ai-je acheté trop d'œufs? Vous en avez acheté dix de trop. — Qu'auriez-vous fait si vous aviez eu mal aux dents? J'aurais envoyé chercher le dentiste. — Que faisiez-vous quand je suis entré? Je parlais Allemand. — A quelle heure vous couchiez-vous quand vous étiez chez votre oncle? J'allais me coucher lorsqu'il se couchait. — Que fîtes-vous quand vous eûtes vu la reine? Nous allâmes (or sommes allés) au palais du duc, (pour) voir le prince et la princesse. — Y étaient-ils? Oui, Monsieur, ils y étaient.

Mangia<sup>4</sup> Ella più pane<sup>4</sup> che carne? Io mangio meno di carne. — Beve Ella (or bevete) tanto vino quanto sidro? meno sidro che vino. — Legge Ella (or leggete) più francesi che libri inglesi? Leggo più libri inglesi di francesi. — Quanti ne ha Ella già letti? Ne ho già letti cinque. — Ha Ella bevuto più del di Lei vino che del mio bevuto più del di Lei che del mio. Ne ho bevuto questo che di quello. Ne ho bevuto più dell' uno che altro. — Ha il di Lei padre ricevuto tante lettere biglietti? Egli ha ricevuto altrettante lettere quanti biglietti non ha letto tante lettere inglesi quanti biglietti fin. — Ne ha egli letto più di Lei? Sì, egli ne ha letto più ma non ne ha letto tanti quanto la di Lei sorella. — bella la di Lei camera come la mia? È molto più bella di Lei. — Ha Ella (or avete) ancora libri? Ne ho ancora pochi. — Ne ha Ella tanti quanto loro? Eglino ne hanno ma io ne ho ancora più (or vieppiù) di loro. — Quando ne a eglino ancora? Io gliene presterò (or ne presterò loro) alcuni, quando avranno<sup>1</sup> letto quelli che ho già prestati loro. Che farà Ella quando Ella avrà veduto il di Lei padre andrò al mercato per comprare del pane, del butirro, dell e della carne. — Ho io comprato troppe uova? Ella comprato dieci di troppo. — Che avrebbe Ella fatto avesse avuto il mal di denti? Avrei mandato a cercare i denti. — Che faceva Ella (or stava Ella facendo) quando entrato? Io parlava Tedesco. — A che ora si coricava quando Ella era dal di Lei zio? Mi coricava quando coricava. — Che fecero Elleno quando Elleno ebbero regina? Andammo (or siamo andati) al palazzo de per (or da) vedere il principe e la principessa. — Ci eran Signore, eglino vi erano.

<sup>3</sup> Take care not to confound *aussi* with *autant*.

<sup>5</sup> See Note on verbs in *ciare* and *giare*, Appendix, page xxx.

<sup>4</sup> Adverbs of quantity combined with nouns require de.

<sup>6</sup> When comparison is made between two nouns or two verbs, there is no



A participle is a word derived from a verb, and partakes of the nature of verbs, adjectives, and nouns.

As participles they are capable of government.

As adjectives they give qualification.

As nouns they embody the action of the verb, and should be parsed as such.

There are two participles, the present participle or gerund, ending in *ing* (see its formation, Appendix, page viii.), and the past participle, ending in *ed* in regular verbs.

The child is *beloved* (past part.) by its parents.

The parents mourn the loss of their *beloved* (adjective) child.

A *loving* (adjective) child wins the affection of its parents. A wicked child is incapable of *loving* (pres. part.) virtue. The boy has *learned* (past part.) his lesson, but he is not a *learned* (adjective) boy.

The boy possesses a good *understanding* (noun), but he is not capable of *understanding* (pres. part.) the *perplexing* (adjective) rules of grammar.

The past participle combined with the auxiliary verb *to have*, *haben*, *avoir*, *avere*, forms the compound tenses of all active verbs.

Many active verbs become neuter when used without an accusative or direct objective case; their compound tenses are formed with the auxiliary *to have*, *haben*, &c. &c.; other neuter verbs, denoting change of state or motion, generally form their compound tenses with the auxiliary verb *to be*, *sein*, *être*, *essere*; as, *he is gone*, *he is dead*.

In German the participles present and past also participate in the power of verbs by governing cases, and in the power of adjectives by indicating qualification, and are subject to the rules by which adjectives are declined; as,

|                       |                                |
|-----------------------|--------------------------------|
| Stärkender Wein,      | <i>strengthening wine.</i>     |
| Stärkende Speise,     | <i>strengthening food.</i>     |
| Stärkendes Getränk,   | <i>strengthening beverage.</i> |
| Der lachende Knabe,   | <i>the smiling boy.</i>        |
| Die lachende Magd,    | <i>the smiling maid.</i>       |
| Das lachende Mädchen, | <i>the smiling girl.</i>       |
| Ein liebender Vater,  | <i>a loving father.</i>        |
| Eine liebende Mutter, | <i>a loving mother.</i>        |
| Ein liebendes Kind,   | <i>a loving child.</i>         |

The adverbial form is never used after any verb, especially after *sein*, and we cannot say *der Knabe ist lachend*.

Like an adjective the present participle may be changed by ellipsis into a noun; as, *der Lesende*, meaning he who is reading.

The present participle, corresponding with the termination *ing* in English, cannot be changed into a noun; here the infinitive is used with the article; as, *das Lesen*, (the) reading.

The present participle cannot commence a member of a sentence; as, *having heard a noise, I got up*, nor can the past participle of a verb combine with the present participle of an auxiliary verb; as, *habend erhalten Ihren Brief*, having received your letter.

## SECTION XXIX.—PARTICIPLES.

Each there are also two participles, the present, ending in *ant*, and the past part., ending in the termination peculiar to its conjugation. (See Appendix, pages xix. and xxi.)

When the present participle becomes an adjective it is called a verbal or participial adjective, as it then indicates qualification, an habitual state, a prolonged or continuous action, and takes the gender and number of the word which it qualifies; as,

Une humeur *plaisante* n'est pas celle des gens *souffrants*,  
 Les montagnes nous mettaient à l'abri des vents *brûlants*,  
 Aura-t-il la témérité de s'engager sur cette mer *mugissante* ?

*an agreeable temper does not belong to people enduring pain. the mountains sheltered us from the scorching winds. will he be so rash as to trust himself to that roaring ocean?*

As participle present it remains invariable when denoting a short or accidental action, and governing a direct objective or accusative case, for it then has the power of a verb; as,

Les montagnes dominant (part.) sur la plaine nous mettaient à l'abri des vents *brûlants*,  
*the mountains commanding the plain sheltered us from the scorching winds.*

The present and past participles sometimes become nouns; as,

Les morts font place aux vivants, *the dead make way for the living.*  
 Some present participles, when used as adjectives, change their orthography. *Fatigant*, part., *fatigant*, adj.; *intrigant*, part., *intrigant*, adj.

In Italian the gerund ending in *ando* or *endo* corresponds to the present part. *ing* of the English, but it can never be used as an adjective.

The present participle, formed by changing the termination *are, ere, ire*, into *ante, ente*, as *amante, piangente, morente, amare, piangere, morire*, is used as an adjective, and agrees in gender and number with the word which it qualifies; as,  
 Ho veduto una donna *morendo* di fame, *I have seen a woman dying of hunger.*  
 Ho veduto una donna *morente*, *I have seen a dying woman.*

This participle should not be used in the nom. case, the gerund is then preferable; as,  
 Le donne *piangendo* dissero (and not *Le donne piangenti* dissero), *I the weeping women said.*

### PAST PARTICIPLE.

In Italian the past participle of regular verbs is formed by changing the infinitive terminations *are, ere, ire*, into *ato, uto, ito*. The fem. and plur. are formed after the rules given for adjectives. The concord or agreement of the past participle in Italian may be said to be identical with that of the French, as will be seen by the subjoined examples:—

The pronouns *che, cui, il quale, mi, ti, si, lo, la, l', gli, li, le, ci, vi*, when in the direct objective or accusative case only, as in French, affect the agreement of the past participle.

The words *quale, quali, quanto, quanta, quanti, quante*, joined to a noun, exercise the same influence as the corresponding words in French.

Non l'ho veduto, *I have not seen him.*  
 L'ho veduto, *I have seen him.*  
 L'ho veduta, *I have seen her.*  
 Ho letto la lettera ch' Ella mi ha mandata, *I have read the letter which she sent me.*  
 Ha Ella dato pane a mio fratello? *Has she given bread to my brother?*  
 Gliene ho dato, *I have given it to him.*  
 Egli ha dormito, *He has slept.*  
 Egli è amato, *He is loved.*

the past participle combined with the verb *être*, in the nominative case, whether it precede or follow the verb, and also after

|                       |                          |                               |
|-----------------------|--------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Est-elle aimée?       | <i>is she loved?</i>     | Elle est venue,               |
| Est-elle venue?       | <i>is she come?</i>      | Elles méritent d'être aimées, |
| Elle n'est pas aimée, | <i>she is not loved.</i> | Elles paraissent être aimées, |

When the past participle is combined with the verb *avoir*, *to have*, it never varies, as,

Il l'a aimé, *he has loved, she has loved.* | Ils ont aimé ; elles ont aimé

The past participle *été*, *been*, and the past participle of all neuter or intransitive verbs, remain invariable ; as,

Il (elle) a dormi, *he (or she) has slept.* | Ils (or elles) ont dormi,

In the compound tenses of impersonal or unipersonal verbs, and verbs used absolutely, the past participle is invariable ; as,

|                                                          |                                    |
|----------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| fait de grandes chaleurs cet été,                        | <i>the heat has been excessive</i> |
| fortes pluies qu'il y a eu (invar.) cet été ont nui à la | <i>the heavy rains we have had</i> |
| moisson,                                                 | <i>harvest.</i>                    |

The past participle, preceded by its direct objective or accusative case, and by the auxiliary verb *avoir* or *être*.<sup>1</sup>

and of the past participle are the

The past participle never agrees with its direct objective or accusative case; as,

Ils ont *cultivé* les arts et *négligé* les sciences, *they have cultivated the art.*

The past participle *fait*, combined with a verb in the infinitive, never varies.

Voilà les souliers que j'ai fait (*not faits*) faire, *here are the shoes that I have*

When the past participle is combined with the auxiliary verb and another verb in the infinitive mood; if it be governed by the verb in the infinitive, the past participle agrees with its direct objective; as, Voilà les avocats que j'ai entendus plaider et les criminels que j'ai entendus condamner, *those are the barristers I have heard plead and the criminals I have heard condemn.*

In reflexive and reciprocal verbs, which are always conjugated with the auxiliary verb *être*, the past participle follows the same rule as active verbs conjugated with *avoir*, i. e. it agrees with its direct objective. When the pronoun indicating the reflexive action of the verb is in the first or second person, the past participle remains unchanged; as, Elle s' (dir. obj.) est tuée d'un coup de noisard qu'elle s' (ind. obj.) a tué, *she killed herself by striking herself with a stick.*

## SECTION XXIX.—PARTICIPLES.

The army.  
The cavalry.  
The infantry.  
The artillery.  
The regiment.  
The officer.  
The staff.  
The general.  
The colonel.  
The major.  
The enemy.  
Peace.

the captain.  
the lieutenant.  
the ensign.  
the sergeant.  
the corporal.  
the soldier.  
the sentinel.  
the drummer.  
the fifer.  
the colours.  
the fortress.  
war.

|                    | Gen.   | Pl. |                      | Gen.   | Pl.   |
|--------------------|--------|-----|----------------------|--------|-------|
| die Armee,         | —      | n.  | der Hauptmann,       | es, s. | er.   |
| die Reiteri,       | —      | —   | der Lieutenant,      | s,     | c, s. |
| das Fußvolk,       | es, s. | er. | der Fähnrich,        | s,     | e.    |
| die Artillerie,    | —      | —   | der Feldwebel,       | s,     | —     |
| das Regiment,      | es, s. | er. | der Corporal,        | s,     | a.    |
| der Officier,      | es, s. | a.  | der Soldat,          | en,    | en.   |
| der Generalstab,   | es, s. | a.  | die Schildwache.     | —      | n.    |
| der General,       | es, s. | e.  | der Trommelschläger, | s,     | —     |
| der Oberst,        | en,    | en. | der Pfeifer,         | s,     | —     |
| der Major,         | es, s. | a.  | die Fahne,           | —      | n.    |
| der Feind,         | es,    | e.  | die Festung,         | —      | en.   |
| der Friede, ns, or | —n, s. | —   | der Krieg,           | es, s, | e.    |

To go away.  
To go for a walk.  
To make haste.  
To do (ref. to health), behave.  
To hurt one's self.  
To complain.  
To be mistaken.  
To stop.  
To remember, recollect.  
To take care.  
To let one's self be.

to become.  
to fall.  
to fight.  
to die.  
to hurt, wound.  
to take, lead.  
to confide, trust.  
to stay.  
to forget.  
to know.  
to surprise.

weggehen.  
spazieren gehen.  
sich eilen.  
sich befinden, betragen.  
sich verwunden.  
sich beklagen.  
sich irren.  
sich aufhalten.  
sich erinnern.  
Acht nehmen, geben.  
sich lassen.

werden.  
fallen.  
bekämpfen.  
sterben.  
verwunden.  
führen, leiten.  
anvertrauen.  
bleiben.  
vergessen.  
kennen, wissen.<sup>1</sup>  
überraschen.

## EXERCISE 29.

How are you? I am very well, I thank you. — How has your sister been since I saw her? She was unwell before yesterday, but now she is well enough. — Have your cousins been for a walk? They have not been for a walk. — Who has fallen down? My sisters have fallen down. — What did your aunt do after having received your letter? She went to Paris.

Wie befinden Sie sich? Ich danke Ihnen, ich befinde mich ganz wohl. — Wie hat sich Ihre Schwester befunden, seitdem ich sie nicht gesehen habe? Vorgestern befand sie sich nicht ganz wohl, aber heute befindet sie sich ziemlich wohl. — Sind Ihre Basen (or Cousinsen) spazieren gegangen? Sie sind nicht spazieren gegangen. — Wer ist gefallen? Meine Schwestern

<sup>1</sup> *Können, connaître, conoscere*, are generally used in reference to persons, and *wissen, savoir, sapere*, to things. *Können* is used in reference to the knowledge of a language, *sprechen* being understood; as, *Kann er Englisch?*

## SECTION XXIX.—PARTICIPLES.

l' (une) armée.  
la cavalerie.  
l' (une) infanterie.  
l' (une) artillerie.  
le régiment.  
l' (un) officier.  
l' (un) état-major.  
le général.  
le colonel.  
le major.  
l' (un) ennemi.  
la paix.

le capitaine.  
le lieutenant.  
l' (un) enseigne.  
le sergent-major.  
le caporal.  
le soldat.  
la sentinelle.  
le tambour.  
le fifre.  
le drapeau.  
la forteresse.  
la guerre.

l' (un) esercito.  
la cavalleria.  
la fanteria.  
l' artiglieria (f.).  
il reggimento.  
l' (un) ufficiale.  
lo stato maggiore.  
il generale.  
il colonnello.  
il maggiore.  
il nemico.  
la pace.

il capitano.  
il tenente.  
l' (un) alfiere.  
il sergente.  
il caporale.  
il soldato.  
la sentinella.  
il tamburino.  
il piffero.  
la bandiera.  
la fortezza.  
la guerra.

s'en aller.  
se promener.  
se dépêcher.  
se porter, se comporter.  
se blesser, se faire mal.  
se plaindre.  
se tromper.  
s'arrêter.  
se souvenir, se rappeler.  
prendre garde.  
se laisser.

devenir, se faire.  
tomber.  
combattre.  
mourir.  
blesser.  
conduire, mener.  
confier.  
rester.  
oublier.  
connaître, savoir.  
surprendre.

andarsene.  
passeggiare.  
sbrigarsi.  
stare, comportarsi.  
farsi male.  
lagnarsi.  
ingannarsi.  
fermarsi, arrestarsi.  
ricordarsi, rammentarsi.  
badare.  
lasciarsi.

diventare, diveni  
cadere.  
combattere.  
morire.  
ferire.  
condurre, menare  
affidare, confidare  
restare.  
dimenticare.  
conoscere, sapere  
sorprendere.

### EXERCISE 29.

Comment vous portez-vous ? Je me porte très-bien, je vous remercie. — Comment votre sœur<sup>2</sup> s'est-elle portée depuis que je ne l'ai vue ? Elle ne se portait pas très-bien avant-hier, mais à présent elle se porte assez bien. — Vos cousines se sont-elles promenées ? Elles ne se sont pas promenées. — Qui est tombé ? Mes sœurs sont tombées. — Après avoir reçu votre

Come sta Ella (or come state)? Sto benissimo, grazie (or La ringrazio). — Come è stata la di Lei sorella dacché l'ho vista? Ier l'altro ella non istava bene, ma sta benone a: — Sono andate a passeggiare le di Lei cugine? Non andate a passeggiare. — Chi è caduto? Le sorelle mie cadute. — Dopo aver ricevuto la di Lei lettera che ha fa

<sup>2</sup> See Reflective Verbs. Appendix, page vii.

## EXERCISE 29.

— Why does the general complain of the soldiers? He complains of them because they allowed themselves to be surprised by the enemy. — Did the soldiers repent (*or* grieve at) having been beaten? Yes, they did repent. — Was the captain wounded? He was not wounded. — Did the woman hurt herself? She did hurt herself. — Have you given your sister some pens? I have given her more than four. — Have you heard the new singer, Madame\*\*\*? I have heard her sing at the opera. — Have you heard the new song? I have heard it. — Where did you hear it? I heard it at the theatre. — What is become of the enemies that the soldiers had to fight? They were killed. — Have you remembered what I told you? I have not remembered it. — Did your sisters remember their cousins when they saw them? They did remember them. — Do you know Raphael's works? Yes, I have seen several; they are speaking pictures. — Were not your friends mistaken? They were not mistaken, but your sisters made a mistake because they went to the theatre instead of going to Mrs \*\*\*'s ball. — How did you learn German? I learned it by speaking it. — Have you written the letters which you ought to have written yesterday? Yes, Madam, I wrote them this morning at six o'clock. — Are these children liked (*or* loved) by their friends? Yes, they are greatly (*or* very much) loved, because they are very amiable. — Have you dropped your gloves? No, I have not dropped them. — Have you done? No, I have not done. — Take care! you will lose your purse. Take care you do not fall.

sind gefallen. — Was hat Ihre Tante gethan, nachdem sie Ihren Brief erhalten hatte? Sie ist nach Paris gereist. — Warum beklagt sich der General über die Soldaten? Er beklagt sich über sie, weil sie sich von dem Feinde überraschen lassen haben. — Haben die Soldaten bereut, daß sie geschlagen worden sind? Ja, sie haben es bereut. — Ist der Hauptmann verwundet worden? Er ist nicht verwundet worden. — Hat sich die Frau verwundet? Sie hat sich verwundet. — Haben Sie Ihrer Schwester Federn gegeben? Ich habe ihr deren mehr als vier gegeben. — Haben Sie die neue Sängerin, Madame \*\*\*, singen<sup>1</sup> hören? Ich habe sie in der Oper singen hören. — Haben Sie das neue Lied singen hören? Ich habe es singen hören. — Wo haben Sie es singen hören? Ich habe es im Schauspiele singen hören. — Was ist aus den Feinden geworden, welche die Soldaten zu bekämpfen hatten? Sie sind getödtet worden. — Haben Sie sich an das erinnert, was ich Ihnen gesagt habe? Ich habe mich dessen nicht erinnert. — Haben sich Ihre Schwestern ihrer Basen erinnert, wann sie sie gesehen haben? Sie haben sich ihrer erinnert. — Kennen Sie die Gemälde von Raphael? Ja, ich habe einige gesehen; es sind sprechende Gemälde. — Haben sich Ihre Freunde nicht geirrt? Sie haben sich nicht geirrt, sondern Ihre Schwestern, indem sie ins Theater gingen, anstatt auf den Ball der Frau\*\*\* zu gehen. — Wie haben Sie Deutsch gelernt? Ich habe es gelernt, indem ich sprach. — Haben Sie die Briefe geschrieben, die Sie gestern schreiben sollten? Ja, Madame, ich habe sie heute Morgen um sechs Uhr geschrieben. — Werden diese Kinder von ihren Freunden geliebt? Ja, sie werden von ihnen sehr geliebt, weil sie sehr liebenswürdig sind. — Haben Sie Ihre Handschuhe fallen lassen? Ich habe sie nicht fallen lassen. — Sind Sie fertig? Nein, ich bin nicht fertig. — Geben Sie Acht! Sie werden Ihren Beutel verlieren. Geben Sie Acht nicht zu fallen.

<sup>1</sup> See observation on auxiliary verbs of mood, Appendix, page vi.

## EXERCISE 29.

lettre, votre tante qu'a-t-elle fait? Elle est partie pour Paris. — Pourquoi le général se plaint-il des soldats? Il se plaint d'eux (*or* il s'en plaint), parce qu'ils se sont laissé surprendre par l'ennemi. — Les soldats se sont-ils repentis d'avoir été battus? Oui, ils se sont repentis. — Le capitaine a-t-il été blessé? Il n'a pas été blessé. — La femme s'est-elle blessée? Elle s'est blessée. — Avez-vous donné des plumes à votre sœur? Je lui en ai donné plus de quatre. — Avez-vous entendu chanter la nouvelle cantatrice, Madame \*\*\*? Je l'ai entendue chanter à l'opéra. — Avez-vous entendu chanter la nouvelle chanson? Je l'ai entendu chanter. — Où l'avez-vous entendu chanter? Je l'ai entendu chanter au spectacle. — Que sont devenus les ennemis que les soldats ont eus à combattre? Ils ont été tués. — Vous êtes-vous rappelé ce que je vous ai dit? Je ne me le suis pas rappelé. — Vos sœurs se sont-elles rappelé leurs cousines quand elles les ont vues? Elles se les sont rappelées. — Connaissez-vous les tableaux de Raphael? Oui, j'en ai vu plusieurs; ce sont des tableaux parlants. — Vos amis ne se sont-ils pas trompés? Ils ne se sont pas trompés, mais vos sœurs se sont trompées, parce qu'elles sont allées au spectacle, au lieu d'aller au bal de Madame \*\*\*. — Comment avez-vous appris l'Allemand? Je l'ai appris en<sup>1</sup> le parlant. — Avez-vous écrit les lettres que vous auriez dû écrire hier? Oui, Madame, je les ai écrites aujourd'hui à six heures du matin. — Ces enfants sont-ils aimés de (*or* par) leurs amis? Oui, ils en sont fort aimés, parce qu'ils sont très-aimables. — Avez-vous laissé tomber vos gants? Non, je ne les ai pas laissés tomber. — Avez-vous fini (*or* fait)? Non, je n'ai pas fini. — Prenez garde! vous perdrez (*or* allez perdre) votre bourse. Prenez garde de tomber.

di Lei zia? Ella è partita per Parigi. — Perchè si lagna il generale dei soldati? Egli si lagna di loro, poichè egli non si sono lasciato sorprendere dal nemico. — Si sono pentiti di essersi lasciato battere? Sì, egli non si sono pentiti. — È stato ferito il capitano? Egli non è stato ferito. — Si è fatto male la donna? Ella si è fatto male. — Ha Ella (*or* avete) dato delle penne alla di Lei sorella? Gliene ho dato più di quattro. — Ha Ella inteso cantare la nuova cantatrice, la Signora \*\*\*? L'ho intesa (*or* sentita, *or* udita) cantare all'opera. — Ha Ella (*or* avete) sentito cantare la nuova canzonetta? L'ho inteso cantare. — Dove l'ha Ella inteso cantare? L'ho inteso cantare allo spettacolo (*or* al teatro). — Che sono divenuti i nemici (*or* che n'è stato dei nemici) che hanno avuti da combattere i soldati? Sono stati uccisi. — Si è Ella (*or* vi siete) rammentato di ciò che Le (*or* vi) ho detto? Io non me ne sono ricordato. — Si sono rammentate le di Lei sorelle delle loro cugine quando le hanno vedute? Le hanno rammentate.<sup>2</sup> — Conosce Ella i disegni di Rafaele? Sì, ne ho veduto alcuni, sono veramente figure parlanti. — Non si sono ingannati i di Lei (*or* i vostri) amici? Egli non si sono ingannati, ma si sono ingannate le di Lei sorelle, poichè elleno sono andate allo spettacolo in vece di andare al ballo della Signora \*\*\*. — Come ha Ella imparato il Tedesco? L'ho imparato parlandolo<sup>3</sup> (*or* nel parlare). — Ha Ella scritto le lettere ch' Ella avrebbe dovuto scrivere ieri? Sì, Signora, le ho scritte oggi alle sei della mattina. — Sono questi fanciulli amati dai loro amici? Sì, ne sono molto amati, poichè egli non sono molto amabili. — Ha Ella lasciato cadere i di Lei guanti? Non li ho lasciati cadere. — Ha Ella finito? Non ho finito. — Badi (*or* La badi)! Ella perderà la di Lei borsa. Badi (*or* badate) a non cadere.

<sup>1</sup> When not used reflectively this verb governs the accusative case.    <sup>2</sup> The personal pronouns combine with the present participle. See also Note 4, page 45.



Adverbs are words used to express circumstances, and to modify quality of action in verbs, adjectives, and other adverbs, and may be divided into adverbs of manner, quantity or quality, time and place.

In English most adverbs of manner are derived from adjectives by adding *ly*; as, *brave, brave-ly; quick, quick-ly*; and by previously cutting off the final *e* if the adjective ends in *le*; as, *admirable, admirabl-y*. Some are also formed by the addition of *wise*; as, *otherwise*. Some adjectives ending in *y* preceded by a consonant, change the *y* into *i*; as, *lazy, lazily*.

Take care not to use adjectives as adverbs in English.

Besides the adjectives in the first form, called the adverbial in German (see Declension of Adjectives, page 56), which may be used as adverbs, there are also others formed by adding to adjectives, nouns, and verbs the terminations *lich, weise, and haft*; as, *kürzlich, lately; glücklich, happily; sterblich, mortally; meisterhaft, masterly*.

The position of the adverb in German materially affects the meaning of a sentence. In simple sentences it is placed after the verb. When qualifying an adjective it precedes it; when qualifying a verb it is placed after it, and generally after the object, and followed by the infinitive or past participle. But when the adverb qualifies both verb and object it must precede them.

Adverbs of time, as, *oft, heute, gestern*, are best placed after the verb and before the object, unless it be a pronoun.

The adverb by being moved towards the beginning of the sentence gives emphasis, but it must never be placed between the nominative case and the verb, unless the verb be at the end of the sentence.

#### ADVERBS OF MANNER.

|             |                     |           |                     |
|-------------|---------------------|-----------|---------------------|
| How?        | yes, ay, yea, also. | Wie?      | ja, auch, nebst.    |
| Why?        | { certainly.        | Warum?    | { gewis3, freilich. |
| Thus, so.   | { indeed.           | So.       | { wirklich.         |
| Well.       | { really.           | Gut.      | { in der That.      |
| Ill, badly. | no, nay.            | Schlecht. | nein.               |
| Willingly.  | not.                | Gern.     | nicht.              |
| Together.   | nothing.            | Zusammen. | nichts.             |
| Slowly.     | perhaps.            | Langsam.  | vielleicht.         |
| Quickly.    | as for, even.       | Schnell.  | in Betreff, selbst. |

In French and Italian adverbs perform the same office as in English and German, and may be distributed into the same variety of manner, time, place, quantity, or quality.

In French adverbs are also derived from adjectives, by adding *ment* to the masculine, when the adjective ends with a vowel; as, *poli, poli-ment; facile, facile-ment*. When the adjective ends with a consonant, it is formed by adding *ment* to the feminine; as, *franc, franche-ment*.

A few require an accent (') on the final *e* of the adjective; as, *aveuglément, commodément, communément, diffusément, énormément, expressément, précisément, profondément*. *Impuni* makes *impunément*, *gentil* makes *gentiment*. Those ending in *ant* and *ent* change those terminations into *amment, emment*; as, *constant, constamment; prudent, prudemment*; except *lent* and *présent*, which make *lentement, présentement*.

In French a few adjectives may be used as adverbs, such as *voir clair; coûter cher, &c. &c.*

In French the adverb is placed after the verb in the simple tenses, and between the auxiliary verb and participle in the compound tenses.

Adverbs denoting time in an indeterminate manner are placed after the verb, but adverbs expressing a determinate time may precede or follow the verb.

The adverb is always placed before the adjective which it qualifies.

In Italian adverbs are formed from adjectives, by adding *mente* to the feminine; as, *vana-mente*, vainly; *prudente-mente*, prudently; and by previously cutting off the final *e* of the adjective if it ends in *le* or *re*; as, *mirabile, mirabil-mente*, wonderfully; *particolare, particolar-mente*, particularly. Adjectives are sometimes used as adverbs in Italian; as, *Ho parlato chiaro*, I have spoken clearly.

In Italian the adverb is generally placed after the verb, or between the auxiliary verb and past participle, but for the sake of harmony it may precede the verb, or follow the auxiliary verb and participle.

## ADVERBS OF MANNER.

|             |                 |                |                             |
|-------------|-----------------|----------------|-----------------------------|
| Comment?    | oui, aussi.     | Come?          | sì, anche.                  |
| Pourquoi?   | { certainement. | Perchè?        | { sì fatto.                 |
| Ainsi.      | { en vérité.    | Così.          | { veramente.                |
| Bien.       | { vraiment.     | Bene.          | { in verità.                |
| Mal.        | non.            | Mal.           | no.                         |
| Volontiers. | ne—pas, point.  | Volontieri.    | non.                        |
| Ensemble.   | ne—rien.        | Insieme.       | non—niente, niente.         |
| Doucement.  | peut-être.      | Adagio, piano. | forse.                      |
| Vite.       | quant à, même.  | Presto.        | (in) quanto a, anche, anzi. |

## SECTION XXX.—ADVERBS.

## ADVERBS OF TIME.

When?  
Now.  
Now and then.  
Presently.  
Already.  
Before.  
Formerly.  
Early.  
Late.  
Yesterday.  
To-day.  
To-morrow.  
The day after to-morrow.  
How often?

soon.  
not yet.  
ever.  
never.  
always.  
often, now and then.  
sometimes.  
seldom.  
again, still.  
once.  
twice.  
thrice.  
lately.  
at first, at last.

Wann?  
Jetzt.  
Zuweilen.  
Gleich.  
Schon.  
Zuvor.  
Ehemals.  
Früh.  
Spät.  
Gestern.  
Heute.  
Morgen.  
Uebermorgen.  
Wie viel mal?

bald.  
noch nicht.  
jemals.  
niemals.  
immer.  
oft, von Zeit zu Zeit.  
zuweilen.  
selten.  
noch.  
einmal.  
zweimal.  
dreimal.  
neulich.  
zuerst, endlich.

## ADVERBS OF PLACE.

Where?  
Here.  
There, yonder.  
Above.  
Below.

before.  
behind.  
far.  
near.  
everywhere, nowhere.

Wo?  
Hier.  
Da, dort.  
Oben.  
Unten.

zuvor.  
hinten.  
weit.  
nahe.  
überall, nirgends.

## ADVERBS OF QUANTITY OR DEGREE.

How much? how many?  
Much, many, a great quantity.  
Little, a little.  
But little.  
Too little.

any more, some more.  
much, many more.  
not much, many more.  
a little more.  
but little more.

Wie viel?  
Viel.  
Wenig.  
Nur wenig.  
Zu wenig.

noch.  
noch viel.  
nicht viel mehr.  
noch wenig.  
nur wenig.

## ADVERBS OF TIME.

Quand?  
Maintenant.  
De temps en temps.  
Tout à l'heure.  
Déjà.  
Avant.  
Autrefois.  
De bonne heure.  
Tard.  
Hier.  
Aujourd'hui.  
Demain.  
Après demain.  
Combien de fois?

bientôt.  
pas encore.  
jamais.  
ne—jamais.  
toujours.  
souvent, de temps en temps.  
quelquefois.  
pas souvent.  
encore.  
une fois.  
deux fois.  
trois fois.  
l'autre jour.  
d'abord, enfin.

Quando?  
Adesso.  
Di quando in quando.  
Or', ora.  
Già.  
Avanti.  
Altre volte.  
Per tempo, di buon' ora.  
Tardi.  
Ieri.  
Oggi.  
Domani.  
Posdomani.  
Quante volte?

presto, subito, tosto.  
non—ancora.  
mai.  
non—mai.  
sempre.  
spesso, di quando in quando.  
qualchevolte, talvolta.  
di rado, raro.  
ancora.  
una volta.  
due volte.  
tre volte.  
poco fa.  
primieramente, finalmente.

## ADVERBS OF PLACE.

Où?  
Ici.  
Là, y, là bas.  
En haut.  
En bas.

devant.  
derrière.  
loin.  
près.  
partout, nulle part.

Dove? ove?  
Qui, quà.  
Là.  
In sù.  
In giù.

davanti.  
indietro.  
lontano.  
vicino.  
da per tutto, in nessun luogo

## ADVERBS OF QUANTITY OR DEGREE.

Combien de?  
Beaucoup de.  
Peu, un peu de.  
Guère, que peu de.  
Trop peu de.

encore.  
encore beaucoup.  
ne plus beaucoup.  
encore un peu.  
ne plus guère.

Quando?  
Molto.  
Poco, un poco.  
Quasi, non—che poco.  
Pochissimo, troppo poco.

ancora.  
ancora molto.  
non più molto.  
ancora un poco.  
non più molto.

## SECTION XXX.—ADVERBS.

## ADVERBS OF QUANTITY OR DEGREE—(continued).

Too much, many.  
As — as.  
As much, many as.  
More.  
Less.  
Than.  
Enough.

scarcely, hardly.  
only, but.  
nearly, almost.  
no more.  
very.  
quite as.  
tolerably.

Zu viel.  
So — wie.  
So viel wie.  
Mehr.  
Weniger.  
Ala.  
Genug.

kaum.  
nur, erst.<sup>1</sup>  
beinahe.  
nicht mehr.  
sehr.  
ganz, eben so.  
ziemlich.

*Is it long since . . . ?*  
*How long (ago) is it ?*  
*Long ago, two years ago.*  
*Is it far ?*  
*It is far.*  
*How far is it ?*  
*Until when ?*  
*Until now.*  
*Since when, or how long ?*  
*These four days.*  
*Whence ? where from ?*  
*How far (where to) ?*

**To manage, to set about.**  
**To pay ready money.**  
**To be in trouble about.**  
**To be the matter.**  
**To long to.**  
**In vain.**

*Ist es schon lange (dass) . . . nicht ?*  
*Wie lange ist es ?*  
*Vor langer Zeit, vor zwei Jahren.*  
*Ist es weit ?*  
*Es ist weit.*  
*Wie weit ist es ?*  
*Bis wann ?*  
*Bis jetzt.*  
*Seit wann ?*  
*Seit vier Tagen.*  
*Woher ?*  
*Bis wohin ?*

**Anfangen, machen.**  
**Barres Geld bezahlen.**  
**Sich bekümmern über.**  
**Sich handeln um.**  
**Sich sehnen nach.**  
**Vergebens, so viel — auch.**

*A mile.*  
*A league.*

the beginning.  
the end.

eine Meile,  
die Stunde,

Gen. Pl.  
— n.  
— n.

der Anfang,  
das Ende,

Gen. Pl.  
s, " e.  
s, n.

<sup>1</sup> *Erst* is used in reference to time ; as, *Es ist erst zwei Uhr*, it is *only* two o'clock.

## SECTION XXX.—ADVERBS.

### ADVERBS OF QUANTITY OR DEGREE—(continued).

|              |                          |
|--------------|--------------------------|
| Trop de.     | à peine.                 |
| Aussi — que. | ne — que, seulement.     |
| Autant que.  | presque, environ.        |
| Plus.        | ne plus.                 |
| Moins.       | très, fort.              |
| Que.         | tout-à-fait, tout aussi. |
| Assez.       | passablement.            |

|                                 |                            |
|---------------------------------|----------------------------|
| Troppo.                         | appena.                    |
| Così — come, tanto — quanto.    | non — che, soltanto.       |
| Tanto, or altrettanto — quanto. | quasi, circa, incirca.     |
| Più.                            | non più.                   |
| Meno.                           | molto, assai.              |
| Che, di.                        | altrettanto.               |
| Abbastanza.                     | tollerabilmente, così così |

*Y a-t-il longtemps (que)... (ne)?*  
*Combien (de temps) y a-t-il?*  
*Il y a longtemps, il y a deux ans.*  
*Y a-t-il loin?*  
*Il y a loin.*  
*Quelle distance? or combien y a-t-il?*  
*Jusqu'à quand?*  
*Jusqu'à présent.*  
*Depuis quand?*  
*Il y a (or depuis) quatre jours.*  
*D'où?*  
*Jusqu'où?*

**S'y prendre.**  
**Payer argent comptant.**  
**Être en peine de, s'inquiéter de.**  
**S'agir de.**  
**Tarder de (used impersonally).**  
**Avoir beau, en vain.**

|            |                  |
|------------|------------------|
| un mille.  | le commencement. |
| une lieue. | la fin.          |

*È lungo tempo (che) (non)...?*  
*Quanto tempo (c') è?*  
*È lungo tempo, or un pezzo, (ci) sono due anni.*  
*C'è molta distanza, or lontano?*  
*C'è molta distanza, or lungi.*  
*Quanta distanza c'è?*  
*Fino a quando?*  
*Fino adesso.*  
*Da quando in quà?*  
*Da quattro, or ci sono quattro giorni.*  
*Da dove? d'onde?*  
*Fin dove?*

**Prendersi.**  
**Pagare contanti.**  
**Inquietarsi.**  
**Trattarsi di.**  
**Esser impaziente di, tardar di (used imp)**  
**Aver bel, in vano.**

|                    |                  |
|--------------------|------------------|
| un miglio (pl. a). | il principio.    |
| una lega.          | il (or la) fine. |

## EXERCISE 30.

Where are you living now (*or at present*)? I am living in \*\*\*-street, number \*\*\*.—How long have you lived there? I have lived there a long time; for ten years.—Is it far from here? No, it is not far.—How far is it? About a mile.—Till when did you stay in Paris? I staid there until the beginning of the winter.—Where did you go afterwards? I came to England.—Since when have you been in London? I have been here these five days.—Where do you come from now? I am come from Florence.—When do you return (thither)? I shall return (thither) at the end of the summer.—Whither are you going now? I have a mind to go as far as the bridge.—How do you manage always to pay ready money? I manage in this way (*or thus, or so, or I do so*).—You do very cleverly. You manage remarkably well.—What's the matter? What are you in trouble about? We are talking about my brother, who is unwell; we are very much in trouble, and I long to see the doctor.—You may long for him in vain; he will not come to-day, for he is gone to see Mr.\*\*\*, who is very ill, and lives ten leagues off.—Where are you? I am upstairs. Come up here! Come down here!—Where is your friend? He is below.—Have you heard Miss \*\*\* sing? I have heard her sing; she sings very well, but her brother sings very badly.

The emperor.  
The king, the queen.  
The prince.  
The duke.  
The marquis.  
The earl (count).

the Pope.  
the cardinal.  
the archbishop.  
the bishop.  
the dean.  
the canon.

Wo wohnen Sie jetzt? Ich wohne (in der) \*\*\*-Strasse, Nummer \*\*\*.—Wie lange ist es, daß Sie da wohnen? Es ist lange, daß ich da wohne; es sind zehn Jahre.—Ist es weit von hier? Nein, es ist nicht weit.—Wie weit ist es? Es ist nahe eine Meile (*or ungefähr eine Meile*).—Bis wann sind Sie in Paris geblieben? Ich bin bis zu dem (*or zum*) Anfang des Winters da geblieben.—Wohin sind Sie alsdann gegangen? Ich bin nach England gekommen.—Seit wann sind Sie in London? Seit fünf Tagen (*or Es sind fünf Tage, daß ich hier bin*).—Woher kommen Sie jetzt? Ich komme von Florenz.—Wann werden Sie dahin zurückkehren? Ich werde am Ende des Sommers dahin zurückkehren.—Wohin gehen Sie jetzt? Ich habe Lust, bis an die Brücke zu gehen.—Wie fangen Sie es an (*or wie machen Sie es*), um bares Geld immer zu bezahlen? Ich mache es so (*or auf diese Weise*).—Sie machen es klug. Sie fangen es sehr gut an.—Um was handelt es sich? Worüber bekümmern Sie sich? Es handelt sich um meinen Bruder, der krank ist, was uns sehr bekümmert, und ich sehne mich, den Arzt zu sehen.—Sie wünschen vergebens (*or umsonst*) ihn zu sehen; er wird heute nicht kommen, denn er ist den Herrn\*\*\* besuchen gegangen, der sehr krank ist, und zehn Meilen von hier wohnt.—Wo sind Sie? Ich bin oben. Kommen Sie herauf! Kommen Sie herunter!—Wo ist Ihr Freund? Er ist unten.—Haben Sie Fräulein\*\*\* singen<sup>1</sup> hören? Ich habe sie singen hören; sie singt sehr gut, aber ihr Bruder singt sehr schlecht.

|                                | Gen.         | Pl.  |                 | Gen.   | Pl.  |
|--------------------------------|--------------|------|-----------------|--------|------|
| der Kaiser,                    | s,           | —    | der Papst,      | es,    | “ a. |
| der König <sup>2</sup> , s, e; | die Königin- | nen. | der Cardinal,   | es, s, | “ e. |
| der Prinz,                     | en,          | en.  | der Erzbischof, | s,     | “ e. |
| der Herzog,                    | es, s,       | e.   | der Bischof,    | s,     | “ e. |
| der Marquis,                   | ses,         | se.  | der Decan,      | es, s, | e.   |
| der Graf,                      | en,          | en.  | der Canonicus,  | —      | ci.  |

<sup>1</sup> The adverbs *her* and *hin* are often combined with prepositions: *her* denotes motion towards the person who speaks, *hin* denotes motion in the opposite direction. <sup>2</sup> See observation on formation of feminine gender, page 22.

## EXERCISE 30.

Où demeurez-vous à présent? Je demeure dans la rue \* \* \*, (au) numéro \* \* \*. — Combien (de temps) y a-t-il que vous y demeurez? Il y a longtemps que j'y demeure; il y a dix ans. — Est-ce loin d'ici? Non, ce n'est pas loin. — Combien y a-t-il? Environ un mille. — Jusqu'à quand êtes-vous resté à Paris? J'y suis resté jusqu'au commencement de l'hiver. — Où êtes-vous allé ensuite? Je suis venu en Angleterre. — Depuis quand êtes-vous à Londres? Depuis cinq jours (or il y a cinq jours que j'y suis). — D'où arrivez-vous à présent? J'arrive de Florence. — Quand y retournerez-vous? J'y retournerai à la fin de l'été. — Où voulez-vous aller à présent? J'ai envie d'aller jusqu'au pont. — Comment vous y prenez-vous pour payer toujours argent comptant? Je m'y prends ainsi (or de cette manière). — Vous vous y prenez prudemment. Vous vous y prenez très-bien. — De quoi s'agit-il? De quoi vous inquiétez-vous (or de quoi êtes-vous en peine)? Il s'agit de mon frère, qui ne se porte pas bien, cela nous inquiète beaucoup, et il me tarde de voir le médecin. — Vous avez beau désirer le voir (or attendre); il ne viendra pas aujourd'hui, parce qu'il est allé voir M. \* \* \*, qui est très-malade et qui demeure à dix lieues d'ici. — Où êtes-vous? Je suis en haut. Montez! Descendez! — Où est votre ami? Il est en bas. — Avez-vous entendu chanter Mademoiselle \* \* \*? Je l'ai entendue chanter; elle chante très-bien, mais son frère chante très-mal.

l' (un) empereur.  
le roi, la reine.  
le prince.  
le duc.  
le marquis.  
le comte.

le pape.  
le cardinal.  
l' (un) archevêque.  
l' (un) évêque.  
le doyen.  
le chanoine.

Dove dimora Ella (or sta Ella di casa) adesso? Alloggio nella strada (or via) \* \* \*, numero \* \* \*. — Quanto tempo è (or è un pezzo) che Ella ci sta? È lungo tempo (or un pezzo) che io ci sto; sono dieci anni. — È lontano da qui? Non v'è lontano. — Quanta distanza v'è? È un miglio incirca. — Fin quando è Ella rimasta in Parigi? Ci sono restato fino al principio dell'inverno. — E poi dove è Ella stata? Son venuto in Inghilterra. — Da quando in quà sta Ella (or siete) in Londra? Ci sono da cinque giorni. — Da dove viene Ella adesso? Vengo da Firenze. — Quando ci ritornerà Ella? Ci ritornerò alla fine dell'estate. — Dove vuol Ella andare adesso? Ho desiderio d'andare fino al ponte. — Come si prende Ella per pagar sempre contanti? Io mi vi prendo così. — Ella vi si prende prudentemente. Ella vi si prende benissimo (or a maraviglia). — Di che si tratta? Di che v' inquietatevi (or s' inquieta Ella, or s' inquietano Elleno)? Si tratta di mio fratello, chi non ista bene (or è ammalato), questo c' inquieta molto, e sono impaziente (or mi tarda) di vedere il medico. In vano lo desidera Ella (or Ella ha bel aspettare); egli non verrà oggi, poichè egli è andato a vedere il Signore \* \* \*, che dimora a dieci leghe da qui, ed egli sta molto ammalato. — Dove siete (or sta Ella)? Sto in sù. Venite sù! Venite giù! — Dov' è il di Lei amico? È in giù. — Ha Ella (or avete) inteso (or udito, or sentito) cantare la Signorina \* \* \*? L' ho intesa cantare; ella canta benissimo, ma canta malissimo il fratello suo.

l' (un) imperatore.  
il re, la regina.  
il principe.  
il duca.  
il marchese.  
il conte.

il papa.  
il cardinale.  
l' (un) arcivescovo.  
il vescovo.  
il decano.  
il canonico.



Prepositions are words used to express relation between two or more objects. In English prepositions may be said always to govern the accusative or direct objective case, making in their combinations with nouns or pronouns indirect objective cases, corresponding with the dative and ablative cases of other languages, and are generally placed before the words to which they relate. Prepositions are sometimes subjoined to verbs in the sense of an adverb, they are also occasionally separated from, and placed after, the relative or interrogative pronouns which they govern. (See Sections XIX. XXI., pages 112, 124.)

|                |             |
|----------------|-------------|
| About.         | beneath.    |
| Above.         | beside.     |
| According to.  | besides.    |
| Across.        | between.    |
| Adown.         | betwixt.    |
| After.         | beyond.     |
| Against.       | by.         |
| Along.         |             |
| Amid.          | concerning. |
| Amidst.        |             |
| Around, round. | down.       |
| At.            | during.     |
| Athwart.       |             |
|                | except.     |
| Before.        | excepting.  |
| Behind         |             |
| Below.         | for.        |

In German prepositions govern different cases; some govern the genitive only, some the genitive and dative, and some the dative only; others govern the accusative only, or the dative and accusative. These latter are the only ones that present any difficulty; the student must carefully notice whether they indicate motion within a place or motion from one place to another, as will be seen in the following list. The preposition is generally prefixed to its case.

## GENITIVE.

|                                              |                             |
|----------------------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| Anstatt, statt,                              | instead of.                 |
| Diesseit, jenseit (Lat. <i>cis, citra</i> ), | on this, that side of.      |
| Halb, halben, halber ( <i>placed</i>         |                             |
| <i>after its case</i> ),                     |                             |
| Wegen (Lat. <i>propter</i> ; <i>placed</i>   | on account of.              |
| <i>before or after its case</i> ),           |                             |
| Ausserhalb (Lat. <i>extra</i> ),             | out of.                     |
| Innerhalb (Lat. <i>intra</i> ),              | within, inside.             |
| Oberhalb (Lat. <i>supra</i> ),               | above (the upper side).     |
| Unterhalb (Lat. <i>infra</i> ),              | below (the lower side).     |
| Kraft, vermöge,                              | by virtue of, according to. |
| Laut,                                        | according to.               |
| Mittels, vermittelt,                         | by means of.                |
| Um — willen,                                 | for the sake of.            |
| Ungeachtet,                                  | notwithstanding.            |
| Umweit, unfern,                              | not far from.               |
| Während,                                     | during.                     |

## SECTION XXXI.—PREPOSITIONS.

In French prepositions perform the same functions as in German, English, and Italian. *De* corresponds with the genitive when it means *of*, and with the ablative when meaning *from*. The preposition *à* corresponds with the dative or indirect objective case. The following prepositions immediately precede the noun or pronoun which they govern :—

|             |              |             |                          |
|-------------|--------------|-------------|--------------------------|
| A,          | to, at.      | Excepté,    | } <i>except.</i>         |
| Après,      | after.       | Hormis,     |                          |
| Attendu,    | considering. | Hors,       |                          |
| Avant,      | before.      | Malgré,     | <i>in spite of.</i>      |
| Avec,       | with.        | Moyennant,  | <i>for, by means of.</i> |
| Chez,       | at, with.    | Nonobstant, | <i>notwithstanding.</i>  |
| Concernant, | concerning.  | Outre,      | <i>besides.</i>          |
| Contre,     | against.     | Par,        | <i>by.</i>               |
| Dans,       | in.          | Parmi,      | <i>among.</i>            |
| De,         | of, from.    | Pendant,    | <i>during.</i>           |
| Depuis,     | since.       | Pour,       | <i>for.</i>              |
| Derrière,   | behind.      | Sans,       | <i>without.</i>          |
| Dès,        | from.        | Sauf,       | <i>save, except.</i>     |
| Devant,     | before.      | Selon,      | <i>according to.</i>     |
| Durant,     | during.      | Sous,       | <i>under.</i>            |
| En,         | in.          | Suivant,    | <i>according to.</i>     |
| Entre,      | between.     | Sur,        | <i>on, upon.</i>         |
| Envers,     | towards.     | Touchant,   | <i>touching.</i>         |
|             |              | Vers,       | <i>towards.</i>          |
|             |              | Vu,         | <i>seeing.</i>           |

When used in reference to countries, *en* denotes an indefinite idea, and *dans* a definite idea; as, *Il voyage* (or *il demeure*) *en France*; *il demeure dans le midi de la France*.

In Italian *di* corresponds with the genitive, *a* before a vowel with the dative, and *da* with the ablative.

In Italian, as in German, prepositions govern different cases, some one, some two, and some even three. They are commonly placed before the verb they govern.

### GENITIVE.

|                    |                              |
|--------------------|------------------------------|
| Appiè,             | <i>at the foot of.</i>       |
| Allato, a lato,    | <i>by the side of, near.</i> |
| A ragione,         | <i>on account of.</i>        |
| Col, or per mezzo, | <i>by means of, through.</i> |
| Fuori, fuor,       | <i>outside, out of.</i>      |
| In vece,           | <i>instead of.</i>           |
| Prima,             | <i>before.</i>               |

### DATIVE, OR INDIRECT OBJECTIVE.

|                        |                               |
|------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Accanto, a canto,      | <i>by the side of, near.</i>  |
| Dirimpetto, in faccia, | <i>in front of, opposite.</i> |
| Di sopra,              | <i>above, over.</i>           |
| Di sotto,              | <i>beneath, under.</i>        |
| Fino,                  | <i>until, till.</i>           |
| Per rispetto,          | <i>with respect to.</i>       |

### ACCUSATIVE, OR DIRECT OBJECTIVE.

|                             |                               |
|-----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Eccetto, eccettuato, salvo, | <i>except.</i>                |
| Lungo,                      | <i>by the side of, along.</i> |
| In,                         | <i>in.</i>                    |
| Per,                        | <i>for.</i>                   |
| Secondo,                    | <i>according to.</i>          |

|                  |              |
|------------------|--------------|
| From.            | respecting.  |
| In.              | round.       |
| Into.            | since.       |
| Inside.          | save.        |
| Instead of.      | through.     |
| Notwithstanding. | throughout.  |
| Near.            | till, until. |
| Nigh.            | to, unto.    |
| Of.              | touching.    |
| Off.             | towards.     |
| On, upon.        | under.       |
| Over.            | underneath.  |
| Out.             | until.       |
| Out of.          | unto.        |
| Outside.         | up.          |
| Past.            | upwards.     |
| Regarding.       | with.        |
|                  | without.     |
|                  | within.      |

In English and German, when a preposition is required to connect a verb with another in the infinitive mood, *to* and *zu* are used, which are translated into French by *de*, *à*, *pour*, and into Italian by *di*, *a*, *da*, *per*. Attentive reading only can familiarise the student with their respective use. The following verbs are combined with the next verb in the infinitive mood, without any preposition:—

## FRENCH.

|                 |                               |                                   |
|-----------------|-------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Aller.          | Faire.                        | Pouvoir.                          |
| Compter.        | Falloir.                      | Savoir.                           |
| Devoir.         | Laisser.                      | Sembler.                          |
| Daigner.        | Nier.                         | Souhaiter (or de).                |
| Entendre.       | Oser.                         | Venir. [takes <i>de</i> ]. [adv.] |
| Envoyer.        | Paraître (after an adjective) | Venir de (means <i>just</i> ).    |
| Espérer.        | Passer (or à).                | Voir.                             |
| Fallir (or de). | Prétendre.                    | Vouloir.                          |

## ITALIAN.

|            |           |         |
|------------|-----------|---------|
| Bisognare. | Lasciare. | Salire. |
| Convenire. | Pensare.  | Udire.  |
| Dovere.    | Potere.   | Vedere. |
| Fare.      | Sapere.   | Volare. |
| Intendere. | Sentire.  |         |

## GENITIVE AND DATIVE.

|          |          |          |               |                                                                                                           |
|----------|----------|----------|---------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Längs,   | } along. | Trotz,   | in spite of.  | [ Precedes the gen. and follows the dat.: personal pronouns always precede it; as, <i>Ichne zufolge</i> . |
| Entlang. |          | Zufolge, | according to. |                                                                                                           |

## DATIVE.

|                    |                            |
|--------------------|----------------------------|
| Aus,               | out of.                    |
| Außer,             | out of, besides.           |
| Bei,               | near, at, by.              |
| Binnen,            | during (interval of time). |
| Entgegen,          | towards.                   |
| Gegenüber,         | opposite.                  |
| Mit, nebst, sammt, | with, together with.       |
| Nach,              | after.                     |
| Nächst,            | next to.                   |
| Von, von auf,      | from, of from.             |
| Zu,                | to, at, in.                |

## ACCUSATIVE.

|                 |                  |                      |                         |
|-----------------|------------------|----------------------|-------------------------|
| Durch,          | through.         | Ohne (poet. sonder), | without.                |
| Für,            | for, instead of. | Um,                  | round, to, in order to. |
| Gegen,          | } towards.       | Wider,               | against.                |
| Gegen, (antiq.) |                  |                      |                         |

## ACCUSATIVE AND DATIVE.

*Acc.* as in Latin, when implying motion from one place to another.

*Dat.* corresponding with Latin *abl.*, implying repose or motion within a place.

|         |               |           |                   |
|---------|---------------|-----------|-------------------|
| An,     | to, on, near. | Ueber,    | over, beyond, at. |
| Auf,    | up, upon, on. | Unter,    | under, among.     |
| Hinter, | behind.       | Vor,      | before.           |
| In,     | in, into.     | Zwischen, | between.          |
| Neben,  | near.         |           |                   |

## SECTION XXXI.—PREPOSITIONS.

The following prepositions require the preposition *de, du, or des* immediately after them, when this preposition combines with the definite article:—

|                |                           |                |                              |
|----------------|---------------------------|----------------|------------------------------|
| Auprès,        | <i>near, by.</i>          | A l'exclusion, | <i>except.</i>               |
| Autour,        | <i>round.</i>             | A la faveur,   | <i>by favour of.</i>         |
| Faute,         | <i>for want of.</i>       | A l'insu,      | <i>unknown to.</i>           |
| Hors,          | <i>out of.</i>            | Au lieu,       | <i>instead of.</i>           |
| Loin,          | <i>far from.</i>          | A la mode,     | <i>after the fashion of.</i> |
| Près,          | <i>near.</i>              | A l'opposite,  | <i>opposite to.</i>          |
| Proche,        | <i>near.</i>              | Au milieu,     | <i>in the middle of.</i>     |
| A cause,       | <i>on account of.</i>     | A moins,       | <i>for less, under.</i>      |
| A côté,        | <i>by the side of.</i>    | Au moyen,      | <i>by means of.</i>          |
| A couvert,     | <i>sheltered from.</i>    | Au niveau,     | <i>level with.</i>           |
| Au deçà,       | <i>on this side.</i>      | Au péril,      | <i>at the peril of.</i>      |
| Au delà,       | <i>beyond.</i>            | Au prix,       | <i>at the cost of.</i>       |
| Au dedans,     | <i>inside.</i>            | Au regret,     | <i>to the regret of.</i>     |
| Au dehors,     | <i>outside.</i>           | A raison,      | <i>at the rate of.</i>       |
| Au devant,     | <i>in front, before.</i>  | A rez,         | <i>level with.</i>           |
| Au derrière,   | <i>behind.</i>            | Au risque,     | <i>at the risk of.</i>       |
| Aux dépens,    | <i>at the expense of.</i> | Au travers,    | <i>through.</i>              |
| Aux environs,  | <i>near.</i>              | En dépit,      | <i>in spite of.</i>          |
| A force,       | <i>by dint of.</i>        | En face,       | <i>in the front of.</i>      |
| A l'abri,      | <i>secure from.</i>       | Le long,       | <i>along.</i>                |
| A l'égard,     | <i>as to.</i>             | Pour l'amour,  | <i>for the sake of.</i>      |
| A l'entour,    | <i>round about.</i>       | Vis-à-vis,     | <i>opposite.</i>             |
| A l'exception, | <i>except.</i>            |                |                              |

The three following prepositions are followed by *à*:—

|              |                              |
|--------------|------------------------------|
| Jusque,      | <i>as far as, so far as.</i> |
| Par rapport, | <i>on account of.</i>        |
| Quant,       | <i>as to.</i>                |

### ABLATIVE, OR INDIRECT OBJECTIVE.

|                           |                              |
|---------------------------|------------------------------|
| Di là,                    | <i>beyond, on that side.</i> |
| Di quà,                   | <i>on this side.</i>         |
| Distante, lontano, lungi, | <i>far, distant from.</i>    |

### GENITIVE OR DATIVE.

|                   |                          |
|-------------------|--------------------------|
| Incontro,         | <i>against, towards.</i> |
| In mezzo,         | <i>in the middle of.</i> |
| Intorno, attorno, | <i>around, round.</i>    |
| Vicino,           | <i>near.</i>             |

### GENITIVE OR ACCUSATIVE.

|             |                         |
|-------------|-------------------------|
| Dopo,       | <i>after.</i>           |
| Fra or tra, | <i>among, between.</i>  |
| Malgrado,   | <i>notwithstanding.</i> |
| Senza,      | <i>without.</i>         |
| Verso,      | <i>towards.</i>         |

### DATIVE OR ACCUSATIVE.

|                 |                       |
|-----------------|-----------------------|
| Avanti, inanzi, | <i>before.</i>        |
| Circa, incirca, | <i>about.</i>         |
| Dietro, sotto,  | <i>behind, under.</i> |
| Oltre,          | <i>besides.</i>       |

### GENITIVE, DATIVE, OR ACCUSATIVE.

|                   |                    |
|-------------------|--------------------|
| Appresso, presso, | <i>near.</i>       |
| Contro,           | <i>against.</i>    |
| Dentro,           | <i>in, inside.</i> |
| Sopra,            | <i>on, upon.</i>   |

(On) this side. (On) that (or yonder) side, or beyond.

Diesseits.

Jenseits.

## EXERCISE 31.

Will you take a glass of wine? With great pleasure. Waiter! bring us some wine-glasses.<sup>1</sup>—Will you have a bottle of wine? Yes; bring us one.—Has the servant seen my night-cap? Yes, Sir, she has seen it, and I think she has put it on the kitchen table.—I wish to write a letter to Mr. \*\*\*; have you any writing-paper? Yes, Sir (we have).—Bring me a little, and also some pens and ink.—Did Miss\*\*\* come (or get here) before me? Yes, she came before you.—Why do you stand before me? I beg pardon, Sir, I did not see you.—Do these children behave well towards their friends? They do not behave themselves well towards them, that is why they are not liked.—At what time will you come and see me? I will come and see you at about half-past ten in the morning.—Where is your brother? He is in Paris.—Where is your sister? She is now in France, but she intends to start soon for Italy.—Will you sit near the table? I cannot, because I want a chair.—Where is my book? It is on the chair.—Will you have the kindness to put it on the table? Certainly, Sir, I will not fail (to do so).—Where are you? I am behind the door.—Where is the waiter gone? He is gone behind the door.—Where is your brother? He is at school.—At what time did he go to school? He went there at seven o'clock in the morning.—Where is your uncle walking? He is walking in your garden, and he put your letter in his pocket after having read it.—Where was *the prince standing?* He was standing near the queen.—

Wollen Sie ein Glas<sup>1</sup> Wein nehmen? Sehr gern. Kellner! bringen Sie uns Weingläser.<sup>1</sup>—Wünschen Sie eine Flasche Wein? Ja; bringen Sie uns eine.—Hat die Magd meine Schlafmütze gesehen? Ja, mein Herr, sie hat sie gesehen, und ich glaube, daß sie dieselbe auf den Küchentisch gelegt hat.—Ich habe Lust, an den Herrn \*\*\* zu schreiben; haben Sie Briefpapier? Ja, mein Herr.—Bringen Sie mir welches, nebst einige Federn und Dinte.—Ist Fräulein \*\*\* vor mir angekommen? Ja, sie ist vor Ihnen angekommen.—Warum stellen Sie sich vor mich? Verzeihen Sie mir, mein Herr, ich hatte Sie nicht gesehen.—Betragen sich diese Kinder gut gegen ihre Freunde? Sie betragen sich nicht gut gegen sie, darum werden sie nicht geliebt.—Um wie viel Uhr werden Sie mich besuchen? Ich werde Sie gegen halb elf Uhr des Morgens besuchen.—Wo ist Ihr Bruder? Er ist in Paris.—Wo ist Ihre Schwester? So eben ist sie in Frankreich, aber sie gedenkt bald nach Italien zu reisen.—Wollen Sie sich an den Tisch setzen? Ich kann nicht, weil mir ein Stuhl fehlt.—Wo ist mein Buch? Es liegt auf dem Stuhle.—Wollen Sie die Güte haben, es auf den Tisch zu legen? Gewis, mein Herr, ich werde es nicht verfehlen.—Wo stehen Sie? Ich stehe hinter der Thüre.—Wohin ging der Kellner? Er ging hinter die Thüre.—Wo ist Ihr Bruder? Er ist in der Schule.—Um wie viel Uhr ging er in die Schule? Er ging um sieben Uhr des Morgens dahin.—Wo geht Ihr Oheim spazieren? Er geht in Ihrem Garten spa-

<sup>1</sup> In English and German the use of a thing is denoted by a compound noun.<sup>2</sup> In such phrases as these, of is omitted in German.

## SECTION XXXI.—PREPOSITIONS.

207

De ce côté-ci. En deçà.

De ce côté-là. Au delà.

Di quà.

Di là.

## EXERCISE 31.

Voulez-vous prendre un verre de vin ? Très-volontiers. Garçon ! apportez-nous des verres à <sup>3</sup> vin. — Désirez-vous une bouteille de vin ? Oui, apportez-nous en une. — La servante a-t-elle vu mon bonnet de <sup>3</sup> nuit ? Oui, Monsieur, elle l'a vu, et je crois qu'elle l'a mis sur la table de cuisine. — J'ai envie d'écrire une lettre à M. \* \* \* ; avez-vous du papier à lettre ? Oui, Monsieur. — Apportez-m'en un peu, et aussi quelques plumes et de l'encre. — Mademoiselle \* \* \* est-elle arrivée avant moi ? Oui, elle est arrivée avant vous. — Pourquoi vous mettez-vous devant moi ? Pardon, Monsieur, je ne vous avais pas vu. — Ces enfants se comportent-ils bien envers leurs amis ? Ils ne se comportent pas bien envers eux, voilà pourquoi ils ne sont pas aimés. — A quelle heure viendrez-vous me voir ? Je viendrai vous voir vers dix heures et demie du matin. — Où est votre frère ? Il est à Paris. — Où est votre sœur ? A présent elle est en France, mais elle compte bientôt partir pour l'Italie. — Voulez-vous vous asseoir près de la table ? Je ne peux pas, parce qu'il me manque une chaise. — Où est mon livre ? Il est sur la chaise. — Voulez-vous avoir la bonté de le mettre sur la table ? Certainement, Monsieur, je n'y manquerai pas. — Où êtes-vous ? Je suis derrière la porte. — Le garçon où est-il allé ? Il est allé derrière la porte. — Où est votre frère ? Il est à l'école. — A quelle heure est-il allé à l'école ? Il y est allé à sept heures du matin. — Où votre oncle se promène-t-il ? Il se promène

Vuol Ella prendere un bicchier di vino ? Con molto piacere. Cameriere ! portateci dei bicchieri da <sup>3</sup> vino. — Desidera Ella un fiasco (or una bottiglia) di vino ? Sì ; portatecene una. — Ha veduta la mia berretta da <sup>3</sup> notte la cameriera ? Sì, Signore, ella l'ha veduta, e credo ch'ella l'ha posta (or messa) sulla tavola da cucina. — Ho voglia di scrivere una lettera al Signore \* \* \* ; avete carta da scrivere ? Sì, Signore. — Portateme una poco ed anche delle penne e dell' inchiostro. — È giunta (or arrivata) prima di me la Signorina \* \* \* ? Ella è giunta prima di Lei. — Perchè si mette Ella davanti me ? Perdonatemi (or mi scusi), Signore, io non L'aveva veduto. — Si comportano bene questi fanciulli verso i loro amici ? Eglino non si comportano bene verso loro, ecco perchè eglino non sono amati. — A che ora verrà Ella (or verrete) a vedermi ? Io verrò a vederla (or Le farò una visita) alle undici e mezzo della mattina. — Dov' è il di Lei fratello ? Egli è (or sta) in Parigi. — Dov' è la di Lei sorella ? Ella sta adesso in Francia, ma ella intende subito partire per l'Italia. — Vuol Ella sedersi presso la tavola ? Non posso, poichè mi manca una seggiola. — Dov' è il mio libro ? È sulla (or sopra la) sedia. — Vuol Ella (or volete) aver la bontà di metterlo sulla tavola ? Certo, Signore, io non mancherò. — Dove sta Ella ? Sto dietro alla porta. — Dov' è andato il cameriere ? Egli è andato dietro la porta. — Dove sta il di Lei (or vostro) fratello ? Egli è in <sup>4</sup> scuola. — A che ora è egli andato alla

<sup>3</sup> In French the use of a thing is generally denoted by the preposition *à*, and occasionally by *de*. In Italian it is denoted by the preposition *da*. See Note 2, page 58. <sup>4</sup> See Note 6, page 137.

## EXERCISE 31.

Where did he seat himself? He seated himself near the princess.  
 — Where is the clock? It is over the door. — Your uncle loves you as a father, why do you not like him? I do not like him, because he is too avaricious. — They say your father has been killed. Where was he killed? He was killed at the battle of Inkermann, and he was buried in the Crimea. — Your house is forty feet high, is your neighbour's as high? Yes, it is much higher, because it is fifty feet high. — Where does your aunt live? She lives in the village beyond the wood, and my brother lives on this side. — Have you done (or are you ready)? Yes, I have done. — Does your sister speak Italian? She speaks Italian and French; but she does not speak well, and I have told her that she will not (be able to) speak well without study.

zieren, und nachdem er Ihren Brief gelesen hatte, steckte er denselben in seine Tasche. — Wo stand der Prinz? Er stand neben der Königin. — Wo setzte er sich hin? Er setzte sich neben die Prinzessin. — Wo ist die Uhr? Sie ist über der Thüre. — Ihr Oheim liebt Sie wie ein Vater, warum lieben Sie ihn nicht? Ich liebe ihn nicht, weil er zu geizig ist. — Man sagt, daß Ihr Vater getödtet worden ist. Wo wurde er getödtet? Er wurde in der Schlacht bei<sup>1</sup> Inkermann getödtet, und in der Krimm begraben. — Ihr Haus ist vierzig Fuß hoch, ist das Ihres Nachbarn eben so hoch? Ja, es ist höher, denn es ist fünfzig Fuß hoch. — Wo wohnt Ihre Tante? Sie wohnt in dem Dorfe jenseit<sup>2</sup> des Waldes, und mein Bruder wohnt diesseits.<sup>3</sup> — Sind Sie fertig? Ja, ich bin fertig. — Spricht Ihre Schwester Italienisch? Sie spricht Italienisch und Französisch; aber sie spricht nicht gut, und ich habe ihr gesagt, daß sie nicht gut sprechen wird, ohne zu studiren.

|               |                   |
|---------------|-------------------|
| The viscount. | the priest.       |
| The baron.    | the chaplain.     |
| The knight.   | the clergyman.    |
| The nobleman. | the magistrate.   |
| The kingdom.  | the territory.    |
| The state.    | the duchy.        |
| The empire.   | the principality. |
| The republic. | the county.       |

|                  | Gen.   | Pl. |                      | Gen.   | Pl. |
|------------------|--------|-----|----------------------|--------|-----|
| der Vicomte,     | s,     | s.  | der Priester,        | s,     | —   |
| der Freiherr,    | en,    | en. | der Capellan,        | es, s, | e.  |
| der Ritter,      | s,     | —   | der Geistliche,      | n,     | n.  |
| der Edelmann,    | es, s, | 3   | der Friedensrichter, | s,     | —   |
| das Königreich,  | es, s, | e.  | das Gebiet,          | es, s, | e.  |
| der Staat,       | es, s, | en. | das Herzogthum,      | es, s, | er. |
| das Kaiserreich, | es, s, | e.  | das Fürstenthum,     | es, s, | er. |
| der Freistaat,   | es, s, | e.  | die Grafschaft,      | —      | en. |

<sup>1</sup> The preposition of is expressed by *bei*, to denote locality, in such phrases as these. When denoting the material of which anything is made, when corresponding with the prepositions concerning, among, or after numerals, of is translated by *von*. <sup>2</sup> Take care not to confound the prepositions *diesseits*, *jenseit* with the adverbs *diesseits*, *jenseits*, which are not used before nouns. <sup>3</sup> Compound nouns in *mann* make their plural in *leute* instead of *männer*.

## EXERCISE 31.

dans votre jardin, et il a mis votre lettre dans sa poche après l'avoir lue. — Le prince où était-il (placé)? Il était (placé) près de la reine. — Où s'est-il assis? Il s'est assis près de la princesse. — Où est l'horloge? Elle est au-dessus de la porte. — Votre oncle vous aime en<sup>4</sup> père, pourquoi ne l'aimez vous pas? Je ne l'aime pas, parce qu'il est trop avare. — On dit que votre père a été tué. Où a-t-il été tué? Il a été tué à la bataille d'Inkermann et enterré dans la Crimée. — Votre maison a quarante pieds de haut, celle de votre voisin est-elle aussi haute? Oui, elle est beaucoup plus haute, car elle a cinquante pieds de hauteur (or de haut). — Votre tante où demeure-t-elle? Elle demeure dans le village de l'autre côté du bois, et mon frère demeure en deçà. — Avez-vous fini (or fait)? Oui, j'ai fini. — Votre sœur parle-t-elle Italien? Elle parle (l') Italien et (le) Français; mais elle ne parle pas bien, et je lui ai dit qu'elle ne parlera pas bien sans (or à moins d') étudier.

le vicomte.  
le baron.  
le chevalier.  
le gentilhomme.  
le royaume.  
l' (un) état.  
l' (un) empire.  
la république.

le prêtre.  
le chapelain, aumônier.  
l' (un) ecclésiastique.  
le magistrat.  
le territoire.  
le duché.  
la principauté.  
le comté.

scuola? Egli ci è andato alle sette della mattina. — Dove va a passeggiare il di Lei (or vostro) zio? Egli passeggia nel di Lei giardino, ed egli si è messo in tasca la di Lei lettera dopo averla letta. — Dov' era (posto) il principe? Egli era posto accanto alla regina. — Dove si è egli seduto? Egli si è seduto allato della principessa. — Dov' è (or sta) l' orologio? Sta di sopra alla porta. — Il di Lei zio l' (or vi) ama da<sup>4</sup> padre, perchè non l' amate (or non lo ama 'Ella)? Io non l' amo, poichè egli è troppo avaro. — Mi vien, or mi è stato detto (or si dice), che il di Lei padre è stato ucciso. Dov' è egli stato ucciso? Egli è stato ucciso nella battaglia d' Inkermann, ed egli fu sepolto nella Crimea. — La di Lei casa è alta quaranta piedi, è così alta quella del di Lei vicino? Sì, ella è assai (or molto più) alta, poichè ella è alta cinquanta piedi. — Dove alloggia la di Lei zia? Ella dimora nel villaggio di là dal bosco, ed il fratello mio dimora di quà. — Ha Ella (or avete) finito? Sì, ho finito. — Parla la di Lei sorella Italiano? Ella parla (il) Francese e (l') Italiano; ma non parla bene, e le ho detto che non parlerà bene senza studiare.

il viconte.  
il barone.  
il cavaliere.  
il gentiluomo, nobile.  
il regno.  
lo stato.  
l' impero.  
la repubblica.

il prete, sacerdote.  
il capellano.  
l' ecclesiastico.  
il podestà, magistrato.  
il territorio.  
il ducato.  
il principato.  
la contea.

unless distinction of gender is required.  
translated by the prepositions *en, de*.

<sup>4</sup> In such phrases as these, the English and German idioms correspond, but in French and Italian the adverb *as* is



A conjunction is a part of speech used to connect words and sentences while joining or separating ideas, and may be classed as follows:—

- |                 |                               |
|-----------------|-------------------------------|
| 1. Conjunctive, | <i>and, that.</i>             |
| 2. Disjunctive, | <i>but, nevertheless.</i>     |
| 3. Causal,      | <i>for, because.</i>          |
| 4. Conditional, | <i>if, provided.</i>          |
| 5. Exceptive,   | <i>unless, except.</i>        |
| 6. Suspensive,  | <i>now if, whether.</i>       |
| 7. Concessive,  | <i>though, although; yet.</i> |
| 8. Conclusive,  | <i>therefore, then.</i>       |

Some conjunctions have their corresponding conjunctions, that is, they go in pairs answering to each other in the construction of a sentence; as,

|           |   |                 |                                                                              |
|-----------|---|-----------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Though,   | } | { yet.          | <i>Though he has studied, yet he is ignorant.</i>                            |
| Although, |   |                 |                                                                              |
| Either,   | } | { nevertheless. | <i>Whether you think it right or wrong, you must do either this or that.</i> |
| Whether,  |   |                 |                                                                              |
| Neither   | — | nor.            | <i>Neither the one nor the other will do.</i>                                |
| So        | — | that.           | <i>So that you finish in time, he will be satisfied.</i>                     |

The conjunctions *if, though, unless, whether, except*, generally require the verb in the subjunctive mood, but when no doubt is implied the verb may be put in the indicative; as,

*Though he fall (subj.), he shall not be cast down.*  
*Though you are (ind.) taught, you will not learn.*

Conjunctions perform the same office in German as in English; they do not affect the mood of the verb, but they influence its position in the sentence.

The following conjunctions do not remove the finite verb to the end of the sentence:—

|                                                       |                            |                   |
|-------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------|-------------------|
| Aber, allein, <i>but.</i>                             | Denn, <i>for, because.</i> |                   |
| Sondern, <i>but, on the contrary.</i>                 | Und, oder, <i>and, or.</i> |                   |
| Entweder — oder, <i>either — or.</i>                  | Sowohl als,                | } <i>as well.</i> |
| Weder — noch, <i>neither — nor.</i>                   | Sowohl als auch,           |                   |
| Nicht nur — sondern auch, <i>not only — but also.</i> |                            |                   |

The following conjunctions remove the verb from the nominative to the end of the sentence:—

|              |                           |                |          |                         |                  |
|--------------|---------------------------|----------------|----------|-------------------------|------------------|
| Als,         | <i>since, when.</i>       | Seit,          | }        | <i>since.</i>           |                  |
| Ausger wenn, | <i>except.</i>            | Seitdem,       |          |                         |                  |
| Bevor,       | <i>before.</i>            | So,            |          | <i>if.</i>              |                  |
| Bis,         | <i>till, until.</i>       | So das,        |          | <i>so as.</i>           |                  |
| Da,          | <i>since, as.</i>         | So bald (als), |          | <i>as soon as.</i>      |                  |
| Dafern,      | <i>in case (that).</i>    | So fern (als), |          | <i>as far as.</i>       |                  |
| Damit,       | } <i>in order that.</i>   | So lang (als), |          | <i>as long as.</i>      |                  |
| Das, an, or  |                           | So weit (als), |          | <i>as far as.</i>       |                  |
| auf das,     |                           | Ungeachtet,    |          | <i>notwithstanding.</i> |                  |
| Ehe,         | <i>before.</i>            | Während,       |          | <i>whilst.</i>          |                  |
| Falls,       | <i>in case (that).</i>    | Weil,          |          | <i>because, since.</i>  |                  |
| Gleichwie,   | <i>as.</i>                | Wenn auch,     | }        | <i>although.</i>        |                  |
| Indem,       | <i>whilst, since, as.</i> | Wenn gleich,   |          |                         | <i>though.</i>   |
| Je nachdem,  | <i>accordingly.</i>       | Wenn schon,    |          |                         |                  |
| Nachdem,     | <i>after (that).</i>      | Wie,           |          | <i>as.</i>              |                  |
| Ob,          | <i>whether.</i>           | Wie auch,      |          | <i>although.</i>        |                  |
| Ob auch,     | }                         | Wiefern,       |          | <i>as far as.</i>       |                  |
| Obgleich,    |                           |                | Wiewohl, |                         | <i>although.</i> |
| Obschon,     |                           |                | Wo,      |                         |                  |
| Obwohl,      |                           | Wofern,        | }        | <i>in case (that).</i>  |                  |
| Ohne das,    | <i>without</i>            | Wenn,          |          |                         | <i>if, when.</i> |

In French conjunctions perform the same office as in English, and influence the mood of the verb.

The following conjunctions require the verb in the subjunctive mood :—

|                                       |                                    |                         |
|---------------------------------------|------------------------------------|-------------------------|
| Afin que, <i>que*</i> , <i>that</i> . | Malgré que,                        | } <i>for all that</i> . |
| A moins que*, <i>unless</i> .         | Nonobstant que,                    |                         |
| Avant que, <i>before</i> .            | Non que,                           | } <i>not that</i> .     |
| Bien que, <i>though</i> .             | Non pas que,                       |                         |
| De crainte que*, <i>for fear</i> .    | Pour que, <i>that</i> .            |                         |
| De peur que*, <i>lest</i> .           | Pourvu que, <i>provided that</i> . |                         |
| En cas que, <i>if</i> .               | Quoique, <i>though</i> .           |                         |
| Encore que, <i>although</i> .         | Sans que, <i>without</i> .         |                         |
| Jusqu'à ce que, <i>till</i> .         | Soit que, <i>whether</i> .         |                         |
| Loin que, <i>far from</i> .           | Supposé que, <i>suppose that</i> . |                         |

The subjunctive mood is almost always preceded by *que*; in fact, the conjunction *que\** makes all the words with which it is combined conjunctive expressions or compound conjunctions.

When doubt, fear, suspicion, desire, command, or prohibition is implied by the first verb, the next verb requires to be put in the subjunctive mood; as,

I desire that she may do it, *je désire qu'elle le fasse*.

The verbs, *assurer, avouer, conclure, croire, déclarer, dire, espérer, juger, oublier, penser, prédire, prévoir, promettre, soutenir, savoir, supposer, voir*, govern the subjunctive mood when used interrogatively, negatively, or conditionally, but they acquire the indicative when used affirmatively; as,

Do you think she will come? *croyez-vous qu'elle vienne?*

The impersonal verbs, *il faut, il importe, il est*

In Italian conjunctions very much resemble those of the French language in the manner in which they influence the mood of the verb.

The following conjunctions govern the subjunctive mood :—

|                                             |                                     |
|---------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| Abbenchè, <i>although</i> .                 | Dato che, <i>suppose (that)</i> .   |
| Affinchè, - }                               | Innanzi che, <i>before</i> .        |
| Acciocchè, - }                              | Per quanto che, } <i>notwith-</i>   |
| Ancorchè, <i>though</i> .                   | Nonostante che, } <i>standing</i> . |
| Anzi che, - }                               | Posto che, <i>suppose (that)</i> .  |
| Avanti che, - }                             | Prima che, <i>before</i> .          |
| Avvegnachè, <i>though</i> .                 | Purchè, <i>provided (that)</i> .    |
| Ben che, <i>although</i> .                  | Quando anche, <i>although</i> .     |
| Caso che, <i>in case (that)</i> .           | Quasi, <i>as if</i> .               |
| Come se, <i>as if</i> .                     | Quantunque, <i>though</i> .         |
| Come che, <i>although</i> .                 | Sebbene, <i>although</i> .          |
| Con patto che, <i>on condition (that)</i> . | Senza che, <i>without</i> .         |
|                                             | Supposto che, <i>suppose that</i> . |

The conjunction *che* combined with others makes them conjunctive expressions governing the subjunctive mood when certainty is not implied.

As in French, verbs expressing doubt, fear, permission, command, &c., when followed by *che*, require the next verb to be put in the subjunctive mood; as,

I desire that she may do it, *desidero ch' ella lo faccia*.

When no uncertainty is expressed *che* does not require the subjunctive mood; as,

I say that she is wrong, *dico ch' ella ha torto*.

When two verbs are combined and the first is

Conjunctions of a positive and absolute nature require the verb in the indicative mood in all four languages.

In German the subjunctive mood is required after the relative pronouns and the conjunctions *dasz*, *damit*, *auf dasz*, *bis dasz*, *ohne dasz*, *ob*, *obgleich*, *obschon*, *wenn*, *als wenn*; with verbs denoting a wish, doubt, hope, exhortation, advice, purpose, supposition, such as, *wünschen*, *zweifeln*, *hoffen*, *ermahnen*, *bitten*, *glauben*, *meinen*, and also when relating or quoting anything indirectly.

However, howsoever.

Whatever, whatsoever.

Whoever, whosoever.  
Whatever, whatsoever.

|                 |                  |
|-----------------|------------------|
| The navy.       | the oar.         |
| The fleet.      | the light-house. |
| The vessel.     | the harbour.     |
| The man-of-war. | the shipwreck.   |
| The frigate.    | the crew.        |
| The deck.       | the admiral.     |
| The mast.       | the captain.     |
| The sail.       | the lieutenant.  |
| The flag.       | the midshipman.  |
| The rigging.    | the sailor.      |
| The rudder.     | the cabin-boy.   |
| the rope.       | the pilot.       |
| the cabin.      | the pirate.      |

The following conjunctions require the nominative case to be placed after the verb:—

|              |                   |           |                        |
|--------------|-------------------|-----------|------------------------|
| Außerdem,    | <i>besides.</i>   | hingegen, | <i>on the contrary</i> |
| Daher,       | <i>thence.</i>    | sonst,    | <i>otherwise.</i>      |
| Dann,        | <i>then.</i>      | jedoch,   | <i>yet.</i>            |
| Darum,       | <i>therefore.</i> | noch,     | <i>still.</i>          |
| Dennoch,     | <i>yet.</i>       | vielmehr, | <i>rather.</i>         |
| Desgleichen, | <i>likewise.</i>  | zudem,    | <i>moreover.</i>       |
| Endlich,     | <i>lastly.</i>    | überdies, | <i>besides.</i>        |
| Erstens,     | <i>at first.</i>  |           |                        |

So — auch, wenn — auch,

noch so —, so auch.

{ So viel — auch,

was für ein — auch immer.

{ So — auch,

was für — auch immer.

{ Was — auch,

welches — auch immer.

Wer immer,

wer es auch sei.

Was immer,

was es auch sei.

|                   | Gen.   | Pl. |                   | Gen.   | Pl. |
|-------------------|--------|-----|-------------------|--------|-----|
| die Marine,       | —      | —   | das Ruder,        | s,     | —   |
| die Flotte,       | —      | n.  | der Leuchthurm,   | es, s, | —   |
| das Schiff,       | es, s, | e.  | der Hafen,        | s,     | —   |
| das Kriegsschiff, | es, s, | e.  | der Schiffbruch,  | es, s, | —   |
| die Fregatte,     | —      | n.  | das Schiffsvolk,  | es, s, | —   |
| das Verdeck,      | es, s, | e.  | der Admiral,      | es, s, | —   |
| der Mast,         | es,    | en. | der Capitän,      | s,     | —   |
| das Segel,        | s,     | —   | der Lieutenant,   | s,     | e.  |
| die Flagge,       | —      | n.  | der Seecadet,     | en,    | —   |
| das Tauwerk,      | es, s, | e.  | der Matrose,      | n,     | —   |
| das Steuerruder,  | s,     | —   | der Schiffsjunge, | n,     | —   |
| das Tau,          | es, s, | e.  | der Lootse,       | n,     | —   |
| der Anker,        | s,     | —   | der Seeräuber,    | s,     | —   |
| das Boot,         | es, s, | e.  | die Kajüte        | —      | —   |

## SECTION XXXII.—CONJUNCTIONS.

*fâcheux, il est juste, il est injuste*, followed by *que*, govern the next verb in the subjunctive mood ; as,

I must do it, *il faut que je le fasse.*

*Que* implying certainty does not require the subjunctive ; as,

I say that he is wrong, *je dis qu'il a tort.*

The subjunctive mood is also governed by the following expressions :—

### IN FRENCH.

Quelque (*adj.*) que,

Quelques (*noun*) que, }  
 Quel que, quelle que, }  
 Quels que, quelles que, }  
 Qui que ce soit qui, que,  
 Quelque chose que,  
 Quoi que ce soit,

la marine.  
 la flotte.  
 le bâtiment.  
 le vaisseau de guerre.  
 la frégate.  
 le pont.  
 le mât.  
 la voile.  
 le pavillon.  
 les cordages (*m. pl.*).  
 le gouvernail.  
 la corde.  
 l' (une) ancre.

### IN ITALIAN.

{ Per quanto (*invariable*), *adj.*  
 { Per — *che*.  
 { Per quanto (*variable*, to agree  
 { in gender).  
 { Qualunque.  
 { Chiunque, chicchessia.  
 { Checchessia.

la rame.  
 le phare.  
 le port.  
 le naufrage.  
 l' (un) équipage.  
 l' (un) amiral.  
 le capitaine.  
 le lieutenant.  
 l' (un) aspirant.  
 le matelot.  
 le mousse.  
 le pilote.  
 le pirate.

preceded by *non*, and the second by *che*, the latter must be put in the subjunctive mood ; as,

I do not think he is coming, *non penso che venga* (subj.).

The conditional conjunction *se*, if, governs the next verb in the imperfect of the subjunctive mood, whether it be expressed or understood ; as,

If I were rich, I should have *se io fossi ricco, avrei molti*  
 many friends, *amici.*

When *se* is not conditional, *i. e.*, doubtful, it requires the indicative mood ; as,

If I have money, it is not mine, *se ho danaro, non è mio.*

When futurity is expressed by *se*, the future must be used ; as,

The doctor will see you to-morrow, if he has time, *La verrà domani il medico, se avrà tempo.*

la marina.  
 la flotta.  
 il bastimento.  
 la nave da guerra.  
 la fregata.  
 il ponte.  
 l' albero.  
 la vela.  
 la bandiera.  
 le sarte (*f. pl.*).  
 il timone.  
 la fune.

il remo.  
 il faro.  
 il porto.  
 il naufragio.  
 l' equipaggio.  
 l' ammiraglio.  
 il capitano.  
 il tenente.  
 l' (un) ...

## EXERCISE 32.

Do you wish him to come (*or* do you wish that he may come)? I wish him to come (*or* I desire that he may come). — Must he come? Yes, he must come, when he has finished his letter. — Are you not afraid of his letter being too late for the post? No, I think it will be in time, although you believe it will be too late. — Since you are in London, you are no longer afraid of your children being ill? No, because there are clever doctors to attend them. — If there were no good ones, what would you do? I should go where there are some good ones. — When you buy anything, do you always pay ready money? No, Sir, for I must receive my own money before I can pay ready money. — Are you not afraid of the tradespeople overcharging? No, Sir, because they are honest folks, they never deceive anybody, therefore I trust them. — Do you think your brother will come? I believe he will not come, because he must go to London to see his friends. — When is he to go? He must go to-morrow. — If you had been here sooner, you would have seen the king and the queen. If you had studied well, you would speak English, French, German and Italian. If I had some wine, I would drink some, but as I have not got any, I cannot drink any. — When you were in Italy, at what o'clock did you get up? I generally got up early, but I went to bed very late. — Whatever you may do you will never speak English, unless you study a great deal, and whoever told you that you would succeed in learning it was wrong. However ingenious you may be, you

Wünschen Sie das<sup>1</sup> er komme? Ich wünsche das<sup>1</sup> er komme. — Mus<sup>2</sup> er kommen? Ja, er mus<sup>2</sup> kommen, wenn er seinen Brief fertig hat. <sup>1</sup> — Fürchten Sie nicht das<sup>1</sup> sein Brief zu spät für die Post ist? Nein, ich glaube, das<sup>1</sup> er in Zeit sein wird, ob-  
schon Sie glauben, das<sup>1</sup> er zu spät sein wird. — Seitdem Sie in London sind, fürchten Sie nicht mehr das<sup>1</sup> Ihre Kinder krank se-  
len? Nein, weil man da gute Aerzte findet, um sie zu behan-  
deln. — Was würden Sie thun, wenn keine gute dort wären? Ich würde dahin gehen, wo es gute gäbe. — Wenn Sie Etwas kaufen, bezahlen Sie immer baares Geld? Nein, mein Herr, denn ehe ich baares Geld bezahle, mus<sup>2</sup> ich mein Geld erhalten. — Fürchten Sie nicht, das<sup>1</sup> die Kaufleute Sie überfordern? Nein, mein Herr, denn es sind gute Leute, sie betrügen Niemand, darum traue ich ihnen. — Glauben Sie, das<sup>1</sup> Ihr Bruder kommt? Ich glaube nicht, das<sup>1</sup> er kommen wird, denn er mus<sup>2</sup> nach London reisen, um seine Freunde zu sehen. — Wann mus<sup>2</sup> er dahin reisen? Er mus<sup>2</sup> morgen dahin reisen. — Wenn Sie früher gekommen wären, so hätten Sie den König und die Königin gesehen. Wenn Sie gut studirt hätten, so sprachen Sie Englisch, Französisch, Deutsch und Italienisch. Wenn ich Wein hätte, würde ich welchen trinken; da ich aber<sup>2</sup> keinen habe, kann ich keinen trinken. — Um wie viel Uhr standen Sie des Morgens auf, als Sie in Italien waren? Ich stand gewöhnlich früh auf, aber ich ging spät zu Bette. — Wenn Sie nicht viel studiren, so können Sie thun was Sie wollen, Sie werden nie Englisch sprechen, und

<sup>1</sup> Notice the conjunctions that influence the position of the verb in German.<sup>2</sup> Aber and auch may occupy any position in the sentence.

## EXERCISE 32.

Désirez-vous qu'il vienne? Je désire qu'il vienne.\* — Faut-il qu'il vienne? Oui, il faut qu'il vienne quand il aura fini sa lettre. — Ne craignez-vous pas que sa lettre ne soit trop tard pour la poste? Non, je crois qu'elle arrivera à temps, quoique vous pensiez qu'elle arrivera trop tard. — Depuis que vous êtes à Londres, vous ne craignez plus que vos enfants soient malades? Non, parce qu'on y trouve de bons médecins pour les traiter. — Supposez qu'il n'y en eût pas de bons, que feriez-vous? J'irais où il y en a de bons. — Quand vous achetez quelque chose, payez-vous toujours argent comptant? Non, Monsieur, car avant de pouvoir payer argent comptant il faut que je reçoive mon argent. — Ne craignez-vous pas que les marchands ne surchargent? Non, Monsieur, parce que ce sont de bonnes gens et ils ne trompent personne, voilà pourquoi je me fie à eux. — Croyez-vous que votre frère vienne? Je crois qu'il ne viendra pas, parce qu'il doit aller à Londres pour voir ses amis. — Quand faut-il qu'il y aille? Il faut qu'il y aille demain. — Si vous étiez venu plus tôt, vous auriez vu le roi et la reine. Si vous aviez bien étudié, vous parleriez Anglais, Français, Allemand et Italien. Si j'avais du vin, j'en boirais, mais puisque je n'en ai pas, je ne peux pas en boire. — Quand vous étiez en Italie, à quelle heure vous leviez-vous? Je me levais ordinairement de bonne heure, mais je me couchais fort tard. — Quelque chose que vous fassiez, si vous n'étudiez pas beaucoup vous ne parlerez jamais Anglais, et qui que ce soit qui vous ait dit que vous

Desidera Ella ch' egli venga? \* Io desidero ch' egli venga. — Bisogna (or è d' uopo) ch' egli venga? Sì, bisogna ch' egli venga quando avrà finito la sua lettera. — Non teme Ella che arrivi troppo tardi alla posta la sua lettera? No, credo che arriverà per tempo, quantunque Ella creda che arriverà troppo tardi. — Da che siete in Londra, non temete più che siano ammalati i vostri fanciulli, non è vero? No, perchè ci sono eccellenti medici per curarli. — Supposto che non ve ne fossero di buoni, che fareste? Andrei là dove se ne trovano di buoni. — Quando comprate qualche cosa, pagate sempre contanti? No, Signore, perchè prima di poter pagare contanti bisogna ch' io riceva il mio danaro. — Non tema Ella che domandino troppo i mercanti? No, Signore, perchè sono probi, e non ingannano mai nessuno, ecco perchè mi fido a loro. — Pensa Ella che venga il di Lei fratello? Credo che non verrà, perchè deve andare a Londra per vedere i suoi amici. — Quando bisogna che ci vada? Bisogna che ci vada domani. — Se foste venuto piuttosto, avreste veduto il re e la regina. Se Ella avesse molto studiato, Ella parlerebbe l' Inglese, il Francese, il Tedesco, e l' Italiano. Se io avessi vino, ne berei, ma poichè non ne ho, non posso beverne. — Quando Ella era in Italia, a che ora si levava Ella? Io mi levava generalmente di buon' ora, ma io mi coricava molto tardi. — Checchessia ch' Ella faccia, se Ella non istudia molto, Ella non parlerà mai l' Inglese, e chicchessia che Le abbia detto ch' Ella riuscirà ad impararlo ha avuto torto. Per quanto ingegnoso

\* Take care to notice the conjunctions that govern the subjunctive mood in French and Italian.

## EXERCISE 32.

will not succeed. However ingenious they may be, they will not succeed. Whatever obstacles people meet with, they must be overcome. Whatever your intentions may be, and whatever your application may be, you must always talk if you do not wish to waste your time.—What must I do? You must go and see your aunt, because she wishes to make you a present, with which you will be very much pleased.—What is it? She wishes to give you some money: shall you not be very much pleased? for you will then be able to pay all your creditors.—What will your brother do when he has learned French? He will learn German and Italian.—What would you do if your brother were ill? I should send for the doctor.—What would you have done if I had not arrived? I should have started without you.—What book was your father reading when I came in? He was reading an English book.—At what o'clock did you dine when you lived in Paris? I dined when my uncle dined.—What did you do after having (or when you had) dined? I went to the play (or theatre).

wer es auch sei, der Ihnen gesagt hat, daß Sie es lernen würden, hatte Unrecht. So klug Sie auch sind, so werden Sie auch nicht gelingen. So sinnreich sie auch sein mögen, so werden sie nicht gelingen. Welche Hindernisse es auch seien, die man begegne, man muß sie überwinden. Welche Absichten und welchen Fleiß Sie auch haben, so müssen Sie doch immer sprechen, sonst verlieren Sie Ihre Zeit.—Was muß ich thun? Sie müssen zu Ihrer Tante gehen, und sie wird Ihnen ein Geschenk machen, mit dem Sie sehr zufrieden sein werden.—Was für ein Geschenk ist es? Sie will Ihnen Geld geben: werden Sie dann nicht zufrieden sein? denn Sie werden alsdann fähig sein, Ihre Schuldner zu bezahlen.—Was wird Ihr Bruder thun, wenn er Französisch gelernt hat? Er wird Deutsch und Italienisch lernen.—Was würden Sie thun, wenn Ihr Bruder krank wäre? Ich würde den Arzt holen lassen.—Was würden Sie gethan haben, wenn ich nicht gekommen wäre? Ich würde ohne Sie abgereist sein.—Was für ein Buch las Ihr Vater, als ich eintrat? Er las so eben ein englisches Buch.—Um wie viel Uhr aßen Sie zu Mittag als Sie in Paris wohnten? Ich speiste (or aß zu Mittag) als mein Onkel speiste.—Was thaten Sie nachdem Sie gespeist hatten? Nachdem ich gespeist hatte, ging ich ins Schauspiel.

|                          |                   |
|--------------------------|-------------------|
| (The <sup>1</sup> ) art. | (the) science.    |
| (The) painting.          | (the) philosophy. |
| (The) poetry.            | (the) astronomy.  |
| (The) music.             | (the) geometry.   |
| (The) history.           | (the) arithmetic. |
| (The) geography.         | (the) botany.     |

|                 | Gen. | Pl. |                      | Gen. | Pl.  |
|-----------------|------|-----|----------------------|------|------|
| die Kunst,      | —    | e.  | die Kunst, Kenntniß, | —    | sse. |
| die Malerei,    | —    | en. | die Philosophie,     | —    | —    |
| die Poesie,     | —    | n.  | die Astronomie,      | —    | —    |
| die Musik,      | —    | —   | die Geometrie,       | —    | —    |
| die Geschichte, | —    | n.  | die Rechenkunst,     | —    | —    |
| die Geographie, | —    | —   | die Botanik,         | —    | —    |

<sup>1</sup> In German, French and Italian the article accompanies all common nouns conveying a general idea, although it is omitted in English.

## EXERCISE 32.

réussirez à l'apprendre a eu tort. Quelque ingénieux que vous soyez, vous ne réussirez pas. Quelque ingénieux qu'ils soient, ils ne réussiront pas. Quelques obstacles (*or* quels que soient les obstacles) qu'on rencontre, il faut les surmonter. Quelles que soient vos intentions, quelle que soit votre application, il vous faudra toujours parler, à moins que vous ne désiriez perdre le temps.—Que faut-il que je fasse (*or* que me faut-il faire)? Il faut que vous alliez voir votre tante (*or* il vous faut aller voir votre tante), parce qu'elle a envie de vous faire un cadeau dont vous serez très-content.—Qu'est-ce que c'est? C'est de l'argent qu'elle veut vous donner: ne serez-vous pas très-content? car vous pourrez alors payer tous vos créanciers. — Votre frère que fera-t-il quand il aura appris le Français? Il apprendra l'Allemand et l'Italien.—Que feriez-vous si votre frère était malade? J'envverrais chercher le médecin.—Qu'auriez-vous fait si je n'étais pas venu? Je serais parti sans vous.—Quel livre votre père lisait-il lorsque je suis entré? Il lisait un livre anglais.—A quelle heure diniez-vous lorsque vous demeuriez à Paris? Je dinais lorsque mon oncle dînait. — Que faisiez-vous après avoir dîné? Après avoir dîné j'allais au spectacle.

l' (un) art.  
la peinture.  
la poésie.  
la musique.  
l' (une) histoire.  
la géographie.

la science.  
la philosophie.  
l'astronomie (*f.*).  
la géométrie.  
l'arithmétique (*f.*).  
la botanique.

siate, non riuscirete. Per quanto ingegnosi eglino siano, non riusciranno. Per quanti ostacoli si trovino, bisogna superarli. Per quante siano le vostre intenzioni, per quanta sia la vostra industria, bisognerà sempre parlare, se non desiderate di perdere il tempo.—Che bisogna che io faccia (*or* che mi bisogna fare)? Bisogna che andiate a vedere (*or* vi bisogna andare a vedere) vostra zia, perchè ella ha desiderio di farvi un regalo che vi piacerà molto.—Cosa è? Credo che vuol darvi danaro: sarete contentissimo, non è vero? perchè potrete pagare tutti i vostri creditori.—Che farà il di Lei fratello quando egli avrà imparato il Francese? Egli imparerà il Tedesco e l' Italiano.—Che fareste (*or* farebbe Ella) se fosse malato vostro (*or* il di Lei) fratello? Manderei à chiamare il medico. — Che avrebbe Ella fatto se non fossi venuto? Io sarei partito senza Lei (*or* di Lei). —Che (*or* qual) libro leggeva (*or* stava leggendo) il di Lei padre quand sono entrato? Egli leggeva un libro inglese. — A che ora pranzava Ella quando Ella dimorava in Parigi? Io pranzava quando pranzava mio zio. — Che faceva Ella dopo aver pranzato? Io andava allo spettacolo.

l' arte (*f.*).  
la pittura.  
la poesia.  
la musica.  
la storia.  
la geografia.

la scienza.  
la filosofia.  
l' astronomia (*f.*).  
la geometria.  
l' aritmetica (*f.*).  
la botanica.



All words, sounds, or sudden exclamations used to express the emotions of the mind are classed as interjections; they are unlike other parts of speech, having no influence over any part of a sentence, and may be thrown in wherever we wish to express them; as,

To call a person. **I say! stop! hem! hem!**  
 Contempt, &c. **Nonsense! fudge! pugh! He, for shame!**  
 Pain, &c. **Oh! ah! eh!**  
 Joy, &c. **Hey! ha! hurrah!**  
 Silence, &c. **Hush! mum!**  
 Surprise, &c. **Oh! indeed!**

To shuffle, to cut, to deal, to cheat, to play.

|                    |                   |
|--------------------|-------------------|
| A game.            | the chess-board.  |
| The counter.       | the man.          |
| The card.          | the square.       |
| The pack of cards. | the king.         |
| Hearts.            | the queen.        |
| Diamonds.          | the castle, rook. |
| Clubs.             | the bishop.       |
| Spades.            | the knight.       |
| The ace.           | the pawn.         |
| The king.          | billiards.        |
| The queen.         | the cue.          |
| The knave.         | the ball.         |
| The deuce.         | the pocket.       |
| The trump.         | the cushion.      |
| The trick.         | the cannon.       |

**Holla! he! pet!**  
**Pfui! uh! a, pfi!**  
**O weh! leider! ach!**  
**Haha! heisa wohl! ha! hei! juchel!**  
**St! hseht! still! ruhig!**  
**O! oh! ei! wirklich!**

Mischen, abheben, geben, betrügen, spielen.

|                            | Gen.    | Pl. |                   | Gen.   | Pl.  |
|----------------------------|---------|-----|-------------------|--------|------|
| eine Partie,               | —       | n.  | das Schachbrett,  | es, s. | er.  |
| die Spielmarke,            | —       | n.  | der Stein,        | es, s. | e.   |
| die Karte,                 | —       | n.  | das Feld,         | es, s. | er.  |
| das Spiel (Karten),        | es, s.  | e.  | der König,        | es, s. | e.   |
| (das) Herz,                | es, en. |     | die Königin,      | —      | nen. |
| (das) Carreau or Eckstein, | s.      |     | der Thurm,        | es, s. | “e.  |
| (das) Kreuz,               | es, e.  |     | der Läufer,       | s,     | —    |
| (die) Schuppe,             | —       | n.  | der Springer,     | s,     | —    |
| das As,                    | es, se. |     | der Bauer,        | s,     | n.   |
| der König,                 | es, s.  | e.  | das Billard,      | s,     | e.   |
| die Dame,                  | —       | n.  | die Quene,        | —      | s.   |
| der Bube,                  | n,      | n.  | der Ball,         | es, s. | “e.  |
| die Zwei.                  | —       |     | das Loch,         | es, s. | “er. |
| der Trumpf,                | es, s.  | “e. | die Bande,        | —      | n.   |
| der Stich,                 | es, s.  | e.  | das Caramboliren, | s.     |      |

### EXERCISE 33.

Good morning!—Eh! I say, Sir. What! are you still asleep?  
 Fic, for shame! Why don't you get up? Oh! I am so ill.  
*Pray send for the doctor.*—What is the matter with you?  
*Dear me! I don't know.*—*But hush!* Here is the doctor.—

Guten Morgen!—Holla! was giebt's, mein Herr? Wie! Sie sind noch zu Bette! Pfui! die Schande! Warum stehen Sie nicht auf? Ach! ich bin so unwohl. Bitte, lassen Sie den Arzt holen.—Was fehlt Ihnen? Mein Gott! ich weiß es selbst

In French and Italian, as in English and German, all sudden exclamations, words, or sounds used to express the feelings and emotions of the mind are called interjections, and perform the same office in a sentence ; as,

**Hé, dites donc ! holà ! hem ! hem ! hé !**  
**Fi ! fi donc !**  
**Mélas ! mon Dieu !**  
**Ah ! bon, bon ! bravo !**  
**Chut ! paix ! st !**  
**Oh ! eh ! vraiment !**

**Mêler, battre, couper, donner, tricher, jouer.**

|                   |                    |
|-------------------|--------------------|
| une partie.       | l' (un) échiquier. |
| le jeton.         | la pièce.          |
| la carte.         | la case.           |
| le jeu de cartes. | le roi.            |
| du cœur.          | la dame.           |
| du carreau.       | le roc.            |
| du trèfle.        | le fou.            |
| du pique.         | le cavalier.       |
| l' (un) as.       | le pion.           |
| le roi.           | le billard.        |
| la dame.          | la queue.          |
| le valet.         | la bille.          |
| le deux.          | la blouse.         |
| l' (un) atout.    | la bande.          |
| la levée.         | le carambolage.    |

**Ei ! olà ! piano ! pst !**  
**Fi ! puh ! uh !**  
**Ah ! ah ! oimè, misero me !**  
**Su ! bravo ! ah ! oh ! eh !**  
**Zitto !**  
**Oh ! oh bella ! davvero !**

**Mescolare, alzare, dare, rubare, giuocare.**

|                    |                       |
|--------------------|-----------------------|
| una partita.       | lo scacchiere.        |
| il marchio.        | il pezzo.             |
| la carta.          | lo scacco.            |
| il mazzo di carte. | il re.                |
| cuori (m.).        | la dama.              |
| quadri (m.).       | il rocco.             |
| fiori (m.).        | l' alfiere (m.).      |
| picchi (m.).       | il cavaliere.         |
| l' asso.           | la pedina.            |
| il re.             | il bigliardo, trucco. |
| la dama.           | la stecca.            |
| il fante.          | la palla.             |
| il due.            | il buco.              |
| il trionfo.        | la sponda.            |
| la base.           | il carambolaggio.     |

## EXERCISE 33.

Bon jour!—Hé! dites donc, Monsieur. Comment! êtes-vous encore au lit? Fi donc!—Pourquoi ne vous levez-vous pas? Oh! je suis si souffrant. Envoyez chercher le médecin, je vous en prie.—Qu'avez-vous donc? Mon Dieu! je n'en sais rien.

Buon giorno!—Olà! pst! Come! sta Ella ancora in letto? Oibo! via, via! perchè non si leva Ella? O, caro mio! sto malissimo. Di grazia fate chiamare il medico. — Che cosa avete? Oimè! misero me! non so.—Zitto, zitto! Ecco qui il medico

## SECTION XXXIII.—INTERJECTIONS.

## EXERCISE 33.

Pray, doctor, tell me what is the matter with me? Why, nothing; it is only a cold. — Is that all? Nothing more. — What! is it you, John? Is it possible? It is incredible! You were reported to have been killed in the last battle. Thank God! then it is not true. What a pity you did not write to say you were coming; your friend \*\*\* only left the day before yesterday. — Well, what shall we do to pass away time? Will you play (or have a game) at billiards? No, I prefer playing at cards. — Very well! but I am no great player. Let us have a game at whist. — Where are the cards? Here they are. Have the kindness to cut. — Who is to deal? 'Tis my deal. 'Tis your turn to cut. Shuffle the cards well. — How much shall we play for? Let us play for two francs a game, just to amuse ourselves. — What's trumps? Spades; play away! What! you have trumped my queen! We have lost. — Who has the trick? How many tricks have you? We have the trick. — Who has the honours? We have two honours. — Mark (or score), if you please. Deal again. No; that is enough (or we must give over). — Good night! I must go home. Remember me to your wife, if you please. Good bye!

## PASSIONS AND MENTAL FACULTIES, ETC.

|             |            |
|-------------|------------|
| Ambition.   | Wisdom.    |
| Reason.     | Knowledge. |
| Rage.       | Ignorance. |
| Reflection. | Folly.     |
| Imprudence. | Temerity.  |
| Prudence.   | Courage.   |

nicht. — St! Hier ist der Doctor. — Ach, mein Herr! sagen Sie mir doch was mir fehlt? Oh, gar Nichts, Sie haben sich nur erkältet. — Ist das Alles? Weiter Nichts. — He! sind Sie es, Johann? Ist es möglich! Es ist unglaublich! Man hat gesagt, daß Sie in der letzten Schlacht getödtet worden sind. So ist es denn nicht wahr, Gott sei dank! Schade daß Sie nicht geschrieben haben, um Ihre Ankunft zu melden; Ihr Freund \*\*\* ist erst vorgestern abgereist. — Nun, was werden wir thun, um die Zeit zu vertreiben? Wollen Sie Billard spielen? Nein, es gefällt mir besser das Kartenspiel. — Recht gern! aber ich bin kein großer Spieler. Machen wir eine Partie Whist. — Wo sind die Karten? Hier sind sie. Heben Sie gefälligst ab. — Wer muß geben? Es ist an mir zu geben. Sie müssen abheben. Mischen Sie die Karten gut. — Um wie viel werden wir die Partie spielen? Spielen wir um zwei Franken zur Unterhaltung. — Was ist Trumpf? Schüppen; spielen Sie aus! Oh! ei! Sie haben meine Dame gestochen! Wir haben verloren. — Wer macht den Stich? Wie viel Stiche haben Sie? Wir machen den Stich. — Wer hat die Ehren? Wir haben zwei Ehren. — Legen Sie gefälligst an. Geben Sie noch einmal die Karten. Nein; das ist genug. — Gute Nacht! Ich muß nach Hause gehen. Empfehlen Sie mich gefälligst Ihrer Frau Gemahlin. Leben Sie wohl!

## LEIDENSCHAFTEN UND SEELENKRÄFTE, U. S. W.

|                       | Gen.   | Pl. |                   | Gen.   | Pl. |
|-----------------------|--------|-----|-------------------|--------|-----|
| der Ehrgeiz,          | es.    |     | die Weisheit,     | —      |     |
| der Verstand,         | es, s. |     | die Kenntniß,     | —      | ss. |
| die Wuth,             | —      |     | die Unwissenheit, | —      |     |
| das Nachdenken,       | s.     |     | die Thorheit,     | —      | en. |
| die Unbedachtsamkeit, | —      |     | die Kühnheit,     | —      |     |
| die Klugheit,         | —      |     | der Muth,         | es, s. |     |

## EXERCISE 33.

Chut! Voilà le médecin. — Ah, Monsieur! dites-moi donc qu'est-ce que c'est que me prend? Oh, mais ce n'est rien; ce n'est qu'un froid. — Rien que ça? Ma foi! oui. — Quoi! est-ce vous, Jean? Est-ce bien possible? C'est incroyable! On a dit que vous aviez été tué dans la dernière bataille. Ce n'est donc pas vrai, Dieu merci! Quel dommage que vous n'ayez pas écrit pour annoncer votre arrivée; votre ami \*\*\* n'est parti qu'avant hier. — Eh bien, que ferons-nous pour passer le temps? Voulez-vous faire une partie de billards? Non, j'aime mieux faire une partie de cartes. — Volontiers! mais je ne suis pas un grand joueur. Allons, faisons une partie de whist. — Où sont les cartes? Les voici. Coupez, s'il vous plaît. — A qui est-ce à faire (or à donner)? C'est à moi à donner. C'est à vous à couper. Mêlez bien les cartes. — Combien jouerons-nous la partie? Jouons deux francs pour nous amuser. — Quel est l'atout? Du pique; jouez! Oh, oh! vous avez coupé ma dame! Nous avons perdu. — Qui fait la levée? Combien de levées avez-vous? Nous avons la levée. — Qui a les honneurs? Nous avons deux honneurs. — Marquez, s'il vous plaît. Refaites! Non, c'est assez. — Bon soir! Il me faut aller à la maison. Faites mes compliments à (or rappelez-moi au souvenir de) Madame votre épouse. Adieu!

Di grazia, Signore, mi dica ciò che mi viene? Non c'è nulla; Ella è stata presa dal freddo. — Non c'è altra cosa? Veramente. — Dio buono! Giovanni? È possibile? Non è credibile! È stato detto che foste ucciso nell'ultima battaglia. È dunque una favola (or bugia), Dio sia benedetto! Che peccato che non abbiate scritto per farci sapere il vostro ritorno; è solamente partito l'altro ieri l'amico \*\*\*. — Ebbene, che faremo per passare il tempo? Vuol Ella fare una partita di bigliardo? No, mi piace più (or meglio), giocare alle carte. — Volontieri! ma non sono un gran giocatore. Via! facciamo una partita di whist. — Dove sono le carte? Eccole quà. Favorite di levare (or levi, or levate, di grazia). — A chi tocca a distribuire le carte? Tocca a me a darle. Sta a Lei di levare. Mescoli (or mescolate) bene le carte. — Quanto giuocheremo la partita? Giuochiamo due franchi per divertirvi. — Qual è il trionfo? Picchi; giuocate! Oh! eh! Ella ha levata la mia dama! Abbiamo perduto. — Chi fa la base? Quanti basi avete? Noi abbiamo la base. — Chi ha gli onori? Abbiamo due onori. — Favorite di marcare. Ricominciate. No; ciò basta, è finito! — Buona notte! Debbo andare a casa mia. Mille saluti da parte mia alla di Lei Signora moglie (or sposa). Addio!

## LES PASSIONS ET LES FACULTÉS DE L'ÂME, ETC.

|                      |                     |
|----------------------|---------------------|
| l' (une) ambition.   | la sagesse.         |
| la raison.           | la connaissance.    |
| la rage.             | l' (une) ignorance. |
| la réflexion.        | la folie.           |
| l' (une) imprudence. | la témérité.        |
| la prudence.         | le courage.         |

## AFFEZIONI E FACOLTÀ DELL' ANIMA, ETC.

|                     |                        |
|---------------------|------------------------|
| l' ambizione (f.).  | la saviezza, sapienza. |
| la ragione.         | la conoscenza (f.).    |
| la furia.           | l' ignoranza (f.).     |
| la riflessione.     | la follia, stoltezza.  |
| l' imprudence (f.). | la temerità.           |
| la prudenza.        | il coraggio.           |

|                |                    |                      |          |                     |           |
|----------------|--------------------|----------------------|----------|---------------------|-----------|
| Fear.          | Cruelty.           | die Furcht,          | Gen. Pl. | die Grausamkeit,    | Gen. Pl.  |
| Timidity.      | Kindness.          | die Schüchternheit,  | —        | die Güte,           | —         |
| Truth.         | Contempt.          | die Wahrheit,        | — en.    | die Verachtung,     | —         |
| Falsehood.     | Esteem.            | die Unwahrheit,      | — en.    | die Achtung,        | —         |
| Flattery.      | Jealousy.          | die Schmeichelei,    | — en.    | die Eifersucht,     | —         |
| Sincerity.     | Envy.              | die Aufrichtigkeit,  | —        | der Neid,           | es, s.    |
| Perfidy.       | Gratitude.         | die List,            | —        | die Dankbarkeit,    | —         |
| Deceit.        | Ingratitude.       | der Betrug,          | es, s.   | die Undankbarkeit,  | —         |
| Justice.       | Hatred.            | die Gerechtigkeit,   | —        | der Haß,            | es.       |
| Injustice.     | Revenge.           | die Ungerechtigkeit, | —        | die Rache,          | —         |
| Honour.        | Anger.             | die Ehre,            | — n.     | der Zorn,           | en, s.    |
| Dishonour.     | Love.              | die Unehre,          | — n.     | die Liebe,          | —         |
| Crime.         | Pity.              | das Verbrechen,      | s, —     | das Erbarmen,       | s.        |
| Conscience.    | Mercy.             | das Gewissen,        | s.       | die Barmherzigkeit, | —         |
| Memory.        | Friendship.        | das Gedächtniß,      | ases.    | die Freundschaft,   | —         |
| Forgetfulness. | Joy.               | die Vergessenheit,   | —        | die Freude,         | —         |
| Avarice.       | Happiness.         | der Geiz,            | es.      | das Glück,          | es, s.    |
| Generosity.    | Affliction.        | der Großmuth,        | es, s.   | der Kummer,         | s.        |
| Economy.       | Sorrow.            | die Sparsamkeit,     | —        | die Betrübniß,      | — sec.    |
| Prodigality.   | Grief, misfortune. | die Verschwendung,   | —        | der Kummer,         | s.        |
| Intemperance.  | Pleasure.          | die Unmäßigkeit,     | —        | das Vergnügen,      | s.        |
| Sobriety.      | Pain.              | die Mäßigkeit,       | —        | der Schmerz,        | es, en.   |
| Pride.         | Repentance.        | der Stolz,           | es.      | der Reue,           | —         |
| Patience.      | Melancholy.        | die Geduld,          | —        | die Melancholie,    | —         |
| Impatience.    | Despair.           | die Ungeduld,        | —        | die Verzweiflung,   | —         |
| Humility.      | Hope.              | die Demuth,          | —        | die Hoffnung,       | —         |
| Vanity.        | Piety.             | die Eitelkeit,       | —        | die Frömmigkeit,    | —         |
| Modesty.       | Impiety.           | die Bescheidenheit,  | —        | die Gottlosigkeit.  | —         |
| Chastity.      | Politeness.        | die Keuschheit,      | —        | die Höflichkeit.    | —         |
| Constancy.     | Beauty.            | die Beständigkeit,   | —        | die Schönheit,      | — en.     |
| Inconstancy.   | Ugliness.          | die Unbeständigkeit, | —        | die Häßlichkeit,    | —         |
| Industry.      | Life.              | der Fleiß,           | es.      | das Leben,          | s.        |
| Idleness.      | Sleep.             | die Faulheit,        | —        | das Schlaf,         | es, s.    |
| Humanity.      | Death.             | die Menschlichkeit,  | —        | der Tod,            | es, s.    |
|                | Prayer.            |                      | —        | das Gebet,          | es, s. c. |

## SECTION XXXIII.

la crainte, peur.  
la timidité.  
la vérité.  
le mensonge.  
la flatterie.  
la sincérité.  
la perfidie.  
la tromperie.  
la justice.  
l' (une) injustice.  
l' (un) honneur.  
le deshonneur.  
le crime.  
la conscience.  
la mémoire.  
l' (un) oubli.  
l' (une) avarice.  
la générosité.  
l' (une) économie.  
la prodigalité.  
l' (une) intempérance.  
la sobriété.  
l' (un) orgueil.  
la patience.  
l' (une) impatience.  
l' (une) humilité.  
la vanité.  
la modestie.  
la chasteté.  
la constance.  
l' (une) inconstance.  
l' (une) industrie, application.  
l' (une) oisiveté.  
l' (une) humanité.

la cruauté.  
la bonté.  
le mépris.  
l' (une) estime.  
la jalousie.  
l' (une) envie.  
la reconnaissance.  
l' (une) ingratitude.  
la haine.  
la vengeance.  
la colère.  
l' (un) amour.  
la pitié.  
la miséricorde.  
l' (une) amitié.  
la joie.  
le bonheur.  
l' (une) affliction.  
le chagrin.  
le malheur.  
le plaisir.  
la douleur.  
le repentir.  
la mélancolie.  
le désespoir.  
l' (une) espérance.  
la piété.  
l' (une) impiété.  
la politesse.  
la beauté.  
la laideur.  
la vie.  
le sommeil.  
la mort.  
la prière.

il timore, la paura.  
la timidità (f.).  
la verità.  
la menzogna.  
l' adulazione (f.).  
la sincerità.  
la perfidia.  
l' inganno.  
la giustizia.  
l' ingiustizia (f.).  
l' onore (m.).  
il disonore.  
il delitto.  
la coscienza.  
la memoria.  
la dimenticanza.  
l' avarizia (f.).  
la generosità.  
l' economia (f.).  
la prodigalità.  
l' intemperanza (f.).  
la sobrietà.  
l' orgoglio (m.).  
la pazienza.  
l' impazienza (f.).  
l' umiltà (f.).  
la vanità.  
la modestia.  
la castità.  
la costanza.  
l' incostanza (f.).  
l' industria (f.).  
  
l' ozio.  
l' umanità (f.).

la barbarie, crudeltà.  
la bontà.  
il disprezzo.  
la stima.  
la gelosia.  
l' invidia (f.).  
la riconoscenza.  
l' ingratitudine (f.).  
l' odio (m.).  
la vendetta.  
la collera, ira.  
l' amore (m.).  
la compassione.  
la misericordia.  
l' amicizia (f.).  
la gioia.  
la felicità.  
l' afflizione (f.).  
il dolore.  
la disgrazia.  
il piacere.  
la pena.  
il pentimento.  
la melanconia.  
la disperazione.  
la speme.  
la pietà.  
l' empietà (f.).  
la politezza, urbanità.  
la beltà.  
la bruttezza.  
la vita.  
il sonno.  
la morte.  
la preghiera.



## APPENDIX OF REGULAR AND IRREGULAR VERBS.

---

|                                                                                                                   | PAGE            |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------|
| Auxiliary verbs— <i>To be, sein, être, essere</i>                                                                 | ii—iii.         |
| "    " <i>To have, haben, avoir, avere</i>                                                                        | iv—v.           |
| German auxiliary <i>werden</i> , to become; passive verbs; auxiliary verbs of mood, <i>dürfen, können</i> , &c. ; |                 |
| reflective verbs ; impersonal verbs                                                                               | vi—vii.         |
| Terminations of English verbs. — List of irregular and defective verbs                                            | viii—x.         |
| Terminations of German verbs                                                                                      | xi.             |
| List of German irregular verbs                                                                                    | xii—xviii.      |
| Terminations of French verbs                                                                                      | xix—xxii.       |
| Table of French irregular and defective verbs                                                                     | xxiii—xxix.     |
| Terminations of Italian verbs                                                                                     | xxx.            |
| Italian irregular verbs in <i>are, ere, rre, ire</i>                                                              | xxxi—xxxvi.     |
| Verbs in <i>ire</i> making <i>isco</i>                                                                            | xxxvii—xxxviii. |
| Additional irregular terminations of verbs in <i>are, ere, rre, ire</i>                                           | xxxix.          |
| Defective verbs                                                                                                   | xl.             |
| Table showing the value of French money, from a <i>napoléon</i> to a <i>sou</i> . — French weights and measures   | xli.            |
| Tables showing the weight and British value of foreign coins                                                      | xlii—xliii.     |
| List of commercial terms                                                                                          | xliv—xlv.       |
| Bills, receipts, drafts, &c.                                                                                      |                 |
| Mercantile correspondence                                                                                         |                 |



# CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERBS "TO BE," "ÊTRE."

|                         |              | <i>Inf.</i><br><b>To be,</b> | <i>Pres. part.</i><br><b>being,</b> | <i>Past part.</i><br><b>been.</b> |              |  |
|-------------------------|--------------|------------------------------|-------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|--------------|--|
| Singular.               |              |                              |                                     |                                   | Plural.      |  |
| <i>I</i>                | <i>Thou</i>  | <i>He, she, it</i>           | <i>We</i>                           | <i>You</i>                        | <i>They</i>  |  |
| 1. am,                  | art,         | is,                          | are,                                | are,                              | are.         |  |
| 2. was,                 | wast,        | was,                         | were,                               | were,                             | were.        |  |
| 3. have been,           | hast been,   | has been,                    | have been,                          | have been,                        | have been.   |  |
| 4. had been,            | hadst been,  | had been,                    | had been,                           | had been,                         | had been.    |  |
| 5. shall be,            | shalt be,    | shall be,                    | shall be,                           | shall be,                         | shall be.    |  |
| 6. should be,           | shouldst be, | should be,                   | should be,                          | should be,                        | should be.   |  |
| 7. may be,              | mayst be,    | may be,                      | may be,                             | may be,                           | may be.      |  |
| 8. might be,            | mightst be,  | might be,                    | might be,                           | mightst be,                       | might be.    |  |
| 9. (See Note 1, p. iv.) | Be thou,     | Let him, her, it be,         | Let us be,                          | Be ye, you,                       | Let them be. |  |

## CONJUGATION OF ÊTRE.

|                         |           | <i>Inf.</i><br><b>Être,</b> | <i>Pres. part.</i><br><b>étant,</b> | <i>Past part.</i><br><b>été.</b> |                       |  |
|-------------------------|-----------|-----------------------------|-------------------------------------|----------------------------------|-----------------------|--|
| Singular.               |           |                             |                                     |                                  | Plural.               |  |
| <i>Je, j'</i>           | <i>Tu</i> | <i>Il, elle</i>             | <i>Nous</i>                         | <i>Vous</i>                      | <i>Ils, elles</i>     |  |
| A. suis,                | es,       | est,                        | sommes,                             | êtes,                            | sont.                 |  |
| B. étais,               | étais,    | était,                      | étions,                             | étiez,                           | étaient.              |  |
| C. fus,                 | fus,      | fut,                        | fûmes,                              | fûtes,                           | furent.               |  |
| D. serai,               | seras,    | sera,                       | serons,                             | seres,                           | seront.               |  |
| E. serais,              | serais,   | serait,                     | serions,                            | seriez,                          | seraient.             |  |
| F. Que je sois,         | sois,     | soit,                       | soyons,                             | soyez,                           | soient.               |  |
| G. Que je fusse,        | fusses,   | fût,                        | fussions,                           | fussiez,                         | fussent.              |  |
| H. (See Note 1, p. iv.) | Sois,     | Qu'il soit,                 | Soyons,                             | Soyez,                           | Qu'ils, elles soient. |  |

## COMPOUND TENSES.

In English and French the compound tenses of the verbs *to be* and *être* are formed by adding the past participle of these verbs to the simple tenses of the verbs *to have* and *avoir*.

The past participles *been*, *gewesen*, *été* are invariable, and not subject to the rules of concord.

# CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERBS "SEIN," "ESSERE."

iii

| Inf.                              |                |                                                                  | Pres. part.                  | Past part.                   |                                                              |
|-----------------------------------|----------------|------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------|------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------|
| sein,                             |                |                                                                  | seind,                       | gewesen.                     |                                                              |
| Singular.                         |                |                                                                  | Plural.                      |                              |                                                              |
| Ich                               | Du             | Er, sie, es                                                      | Wir                          | Ihr                          | Sie                                                          |
| 1. bin,                           | bist,          | ist,                                                             | sind,                        | seid,                        | sind.                                                        |
| 2. war,                           | warst,         | war,                                                             | waren,                       | waret,                       | waren.                                                       |
| 3. bin gewesen,                   | bist gewesen,  | ist gewesen,                                                     | sind gewesen,                | seid gewesen,                | sind gewesen.                                                |
| 4. war gewesen,                   | warst gewesen, | war gewesen,                                                     | waren gewesen,               | waret gewesen,               | waren gewesen.                                               |
| 5. werde sein,                    | wirst sein,    | wird sein,                                                       | werden sein,                 | werdet sein,                 | werden sein.                                                 |
| 6. würde sein,                    | würdest sein,  | würde sein,                                                      | würden sein,                 | würdet sein,                 | würden sein.                                                 |
| 7. sei,                           | seiest,        | sei,                                                             | seien,                       | seiet,                       | seien.                                                       |
| 8. wäre,                          | wärest,        | wäre,                                                            | wären,                       | wäret,                       | wären.                                                       |
| 9. (See Note 1, p. iv.) Sei (du), |                | Er, sie, es soll sein,<br>or the 3rd pers.<br>of the pres. subj. | Lasset or laszt uns<br>sein, | { Seid (ihr),<br>{ Sein Sie, | Sie sollen sein, or<br>the 3rd pers. of<br>the present subj. |

## CONJUGATION OF *Essere*.

| Inf.                    |             |                   | Pres. part. or Gerund. | Past part. |                      |
|-------------------------|-------------|-------------------|------------------------|------------|----------------------|
| Essere,                 |             |                   | essendo,               | stato.     |                      |
| Singular.               |             |                   |                        | Plural.    |                      |
| <i>Io</i>               | <i>Tu</i>   | <i>Egli, ella</i> | <i>Noi</i>             | <i>Voi</i> | <i>Eglio, elleno</i> |
| A. sónno,               | séi,        | è,                | siámo,                 | siéte,     | sónno.               |
| B. éra,                 | éri,        | éra,              | eravámo,               | eraváte,   | érano.               |
| C. fúi,                 | fósti,      | fu,               | fúmmo,                 | fóste,     | fúrono.              |
| D. sarò,                | sarái,      | sará,             | sarémo,                | saréte,    | saránno.             |
| E. saréi,               | sarésti,    | sarébbe,          | sarémmo,               | saréste,   | sarébbéro.           |
| F. Che io sía,          | síi or sía, | sía,              | siámo,                 | siáte,     | siáno or siéno.      |
| G. Che io fóssi,        | fóssi,      | fósse,            | fóssimo,               | fóste,     | fósséro.             |
| H. (See Note 1, p. iv.) | Sii or sía, | Sia,              | Siámo,                 | Siáte,     | Siáno or siéno.      |

## COMPOUND TENSES.

In Italian and German the compound tenses of *sein* and *essere* are formed by adding the past participle of these verbs to the simple tenses of the verbs *sein* and *essere*, instead of the auxiliary *to have* as in English and French.

The past participle of the Italian verb *essere* is subject to the rules of concord, making *stato* (m.), *stata* (f.), *stati* (m. pl.), *stati* (f. pl.).

# CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERBS "TO HAVE," "AVOIR."

|                 |                | <i>Inf.</i><br><b>To have,</b> | <i>Pres. part.</i><br><b>having,</b> | <i>Past part.</i><br><b>had,</b> |                |  |
|-----------------|----------------|--------------------------------|--------------------------------------|----------------------------------|----------------|--|
|                 |                | <i>Singular.</i>               |                                      |                                  | <i>Plural.</i> |  |
| <i>I</i>        | <i>Thou</i>    | <i>He, she, it</i>             | <i>We</i>                            | <i>You</i>                       | <i>They</i>    |  |
| 1. have,        | hast,          | has,                           | have,                                | have,                            | have.          |  |
| 2. had,         | hadst,         | had,                           | had,                                 | had,                             | had.           |  |
| 3. have had,    | hast had,      | has had,                       | have had,                            | have had,                        | have had.      |  |
| 4. had had,     | hadst had,     | had had,                       | had had,                             | had had,                         | had had.       |  |
| 5. shall have,  | shalt have,    | shall have,                    | shall have,                          | shall have,                      | shall have.    |  |
| 6. should have, | shouldst have, | should have,                   | should have,                         | should have,                     | should have.   |  |
| 7. may have,    | mayst have,    | may have,                      | may have,                            | may have,                        | may have.      |  |
| 8. might have,  | mightst have,  | might have,                    | might have,                          | might have,                      | might have.    |  |
| 9. <sup>1</sup> | Have (thou),   | Let him, her, it<br>have.      | Let us have                          | Have.                            | Let them have. |  |

## CONJUGATION OF *Avoir*.

|                 |           | <i>Inf.</i><br><b>Avoir,</b> | <i>Pres. part.</i><br><b>ayant,</b> | <i>Past part.</i><br><b>eu.</b> |                   |  |
|-----------------|-----------|------------------------------|-------------------------------------|---------------------------------|-------------------|--|
|                 |           | <i>Singular.</i>             |                                     |                                 | <i>Plural.</i>    |  |
| <i>Je, j'</i>   | <i>Tu</i> | <i>Il, elle</i>              | <i>Nous</i>                         | <i>Vous</i>                     | <i>Ils, elles</i> |  |
| A. ai           | as,       | a,                           | avons,                              | avez,                           | ont.              |  |
| B. avais        | avais,    | avait,                       | avions,                             | aviez,                          | avaient.          |  |
| C. eus          | eus,      | eut,                         | eûmes,                              | eûtes,                          | eurent.           |  |
| D. aurai        | auras,    | aura,                        | aurons,                             | aurez,                          | auront.           |  |
| E. aurais       | aurais,   | aurait,                      | aurions,                            | auriez,                         | auraient.         |  |
| F. Que j'aie    | aies,     | ait,                         | ayons,                              | ayez,                           | aient.            |  |
| G. Que j'eusse  | eusses,   | eût,                         | eussions,                           | eussiez,                        | eussent.          |  |
| H. <sup>1</sup> | Aie,      | Qu'il ait,                   | Ayons,                              | Ayez,                           | Qu'ils aient.     |  |

The compound tenses are formed by adding the past participle to the simple tenses. The participle *eu* is subject to concord.

<sup>1</sup> The *present*, the *imperfect*, or *past tense*, the *perfect*, or compound of the *present*, the *pluperfect*, or compound of the *imperfect*, the *future*, the *conditional*, the *subjunctive present* and *imperfect*, and the *imperative*, correspond with each other in English and German and are distinguished by the figures 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9. In French and Italian the tenses also correspond with each other; they are the *present*, the *imperfect*, the *preterit*, the *future*, the *conditional*, the *subjunctive present* and *imperfect*, the *imperative*, and are distinguished by the letters A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H. The compound of the *present* in French and

## CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERBS "HABEN," "AVÉRE."

|                  |                 |                                                                   | <i>Inf.</i><br><b>Haben,</b> | <i>Pres. part.</i><br><b>habend,</b> | <i>Past part.</i><br><b>gehabt.</b> |                               |                                                           |  |
|------------------|-----------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------|--------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|--|
|                  |                 |                                                                   | <i>Singular.</i>             |                                      |                                     | <i>Plural.</i>                |                                                           |  |
| <i>Ich</i>       | <i>Du</i>       | <i>Er, sie, es</i>                                                |                              |                                      | <i>Wir</i>                          | <i>Ihr</i>                    | <i>Sie</i>                                                |  |
| 1. habe,         | hast,           | hat,                                                              |                              |                                      | haben,                              | habt,                         | haben.                                                    |  |
| 2. hatte,        | hattest,        | hatte,                                                            |                              |                                      | hatten,                             | hattet,                       | hatten.                                                   |  |
| 3. habe gehabt,  | hast gehabt,    | hat gehabt,                                                       |                              |                                      | haben gehabt,                       | habt gehabt,                  | haben gehabt.                                             |  |
| 4. hatte gehabt, | hattest gehabt, | hatte gehabt,                                                     |                              |                                      | hatten gehabt,                      | hattet gehabt,                | hatten gehabt.                                            |  |
| 5. werde haben,  | wirst haben,    | wird haben,                                                       |                              |                                      | werden haben,                       | werdet haben,                 | werden haben.                                             |  |
| 6. würde haben,  | würdest haben,  | würde haben,                                                      |                              |                                      | würden haben,                       | würdet haben,                 | würden haben.                                             |  |
| 7. habe,         | habest,         | habe,                                                             |                              |                                      | haben,                              | habet,                        | haben.                                                    |  |
| 8. hätte,        | hättest,        | hätte,                                                            |                              |                                      | hätten,                             | hättet,                       | hätten.                                                   |  |
| 9. <sup>1</sup>  | Habe (du),      | Er, sie, es soll haben,<br>or 3rd person of<br>pres. subjunctive. |                              |                                      | Lasset or laszt uns<br>haben.       | { Habt (ihr),<br>Haben (Sie), | Sie sollen haben, or<br>3rd person of pr.<br>subjunctive. |  |

### CONJUGATION OF **Avéro.**

|                       |                |                   | <i>Inf.</i><br><b>Avéro,</b> | <i>Pres. part. or Gerund.</i><br><b>avéndo,</b> | <i>Past part.</i><br><b>aváto.</b> |               |                      |  |
|-----------------------|----------------|-------------------|------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------|---------------|----------------------|--|
|                       |                |                   | <i>Singular.</i>             |                                                 |                                    | <i>Plural</i> |                      |  |
| <i>Io</i>             | <i>Tu</i>      | <i>Egli, ella</i> |                              |                                                 | <i>Noi</i>                         | <i>Voi</i>    | <i>Eglio, elleno</i> |  |
| A. ho                 | hái,           | ha,               |                              |                                                 | abbiamo,                           | avéte,        | hánno.               |  |
| B. { avéva<br>or avéa | avévi,         | avéva,            |                              |                                                 | avevamo,                           | aveváte,      | avévano.             |  |
| C. ébbi               | avésti,        | ébbe,             |                              |                                                 | avémmo,                            | avéste,       | ébbéro.              |  |
| D. avrò               | avrái,         | avrà,             |                              |                                                 | avrémo,                            | avréte,       | avránno.             |  |
| E. avréi,             | avrésti,       | avrébbe,          |                              |                                                 | avrémmo,                           | avréste,      | avrébbéro.           |  |
| F. Che io ábbia       | ábbi or ábbia, | ábbia,            |                              |                                                 | abbiamo,                           | abbiate,      | ábbiano.             |  |
| G. Che io avéssi      | avéssi,        | avésse,           |                              |                                                 | avéssimo,                          | avéste,       | avésséro.            |  |
| H. <sup>1</sup>       | Ábbi,          | Ábbia,            |                              |                                                 | Abbiamo,                           | Abbiate,      | Ábbiano.             |  |

In German the compound future tense is formed as in English: *I shall have had, ich werde gehabt haben*, but the infinitive is placed after the past participle. The compound conditional is formed in the same manner. The participle *avuto* is subject to concord.

Italian corresponds with the *perfect* in English and German. The *preterit* of the French and Italian corresponds with the *imperfect* or *past tense* of the English and German, particularly when describing actions or events long past, and may properly be called the historical tense. The *pluperfect* corresponds in all four languages, as it is nothing more than the compound of the *imperfect*. See also Grammatical Definitions, pages 4, 5, 6, 7.

# CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB "WERDEN," "TO BECOME."

| Inf.<br>Werden,                     |                      |                                                           | Pres. part.<br>werdend,        | Past part.<br>geworden (worden).   |                                                              |  |
|-------------------------------------|----------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------|------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------|--|
| <i>Ich</i>                          | <i>Du</i>            | <i>Er, sie, es</i>                                        | <i>Wir</i>                     | <i>Ihr</i>                         | <i>Sie</i>                                                   |  |
| 1. werde,                           | wirst,               | wird,                                                     | werden,                        | werdet,                            | werden.                                                      |  |
| 2. wurde,                           | wurdest,             | wurde,                                                    | wurden,                        | wurdet,                            | wurden.                                                      |  |
| 3. bin geworden,                    | bist geworden,       | ist geworden,                                             | sind geworden,                 | seid geworden,                     | sind geworden.                                               |  |
| worden,                             | worden,              | worden,                                                   | worden,                        | worden,                            | worden.                                                      |  |
| 4. war geworden,                    | warst geworden,      | war geworden,                                             | waren geworden,                | waret geworden,                    | waren geworden.                                              |  |
| worden,                             | worden,              | worden,                                                   | worden,                        | worden,                            | worden.                                                      |  |
| 5. werde werden,                    | wirst werden,        | wird werden,                                              | werden werden,                 | werdet werden,                     | werden werden.                                               |  |
| werde geworden sein <sup>1</sup> ,  | wirst geworden sein, | wird geworden sein,                                       | werden geworden sein,          | werdet geworden sein,              | werden geworden sein.                                        |  |
| 7. werde,                           | werdest,             | werde,                                                    | werden,                        | werdet,                            | werden.                                                      |  |
| 6, 8. würde <sup>2</sup> ,          | würdest,             | würde,                                                    | würden,                        | würdet,                            | würden.                                                      |  |
| 9. (See Note 1, p. iv.) Werde (du), |                      | Er soll werden, or<br>3rd person of pres.<br>subjunctive, | Lasset or laszt uns<br>werden, | { Werdet (ihr),<br>{ Werden (Sie), | Sie sollen werden, or<br>3rd person of pres.<br>subjunctive. |  |

## PASSIVE VERBS.

Passive verbs are formed by adding the past participle of active verbs to the variations of the verb *to be*, *être*, *essere*; but in German the verb *werden* is used instead of *sein*, and its past participle is then *worden* instead of *geworden*.

|                    |                           |                |                      |
|--------------------|---------------------------|----------------|----------------------|
| I am loved,        | Ich werde geliebt,        | Je suis aimé,  | Io sono amato.       |
| I was loved,       | Ich wurde geliebt,        | J'étais aimé,  | Io era amato.        |
| I shall be loved,  | Ich werde geliebt werden, | Je serai aimé, | Io sarò amato.       |
| I have been loved, | Ich bin geliebt worden,   | J'ai été aimé, | Io sono stato amato. |
| &c., &c.           | &c., &c.                  | &c., &c.       | &c., &c.             |

The verb *werden* is used to express any state advancing towards completion; as, *Die Kirche wird gebauet*, the church is being built.

The verb *sein* is used to express the completion of any state; as, *Die Kirche ist gebauet*, the church is built.

The verb *werden* is used to form the future and conditional tenses of active verbs.

See the conjugation of *dürfen*, *können*, *lassen*, *mögen*, *müssen*, *sollen*, *wollen*, auxiliary verbs of mood, in the List of Irregular German Verbs. When these verbs are combined with another verb in the infinitive mood, the present of the infinitive is used instead of the past participle. See also Section XXIII., page 144, and Note 2, page 134. The verbs *heissen*, to bid, *helfen*, *hören*, and *sehen*, are subject to the same rule.

<sup>1</sup> This is the compound of the future, *I shall have become*. See observation on the preceding page.

<sup>2</sup> This tense also forms the conditional, as, *I might, could, or should become*.

## REFLECTIVE OR PRONOMINAL VERBS.—IMPERSONAL VERBS.

vii

### REFLECTIVE OR PRONOMINAL VERBS.

*Ind. pres.*  
I dress myself,  
Thou dressest thyself,  
He dresses himself,  
We dress ourselves

You dress yourselves,

They dress themselves,  
&c., &c.

*Ind. pres.*  
Ich kleide mich an,  
du kleidest dich an,  
er kleidet sich an,  
wir kleiden uns an,

{ ihr kleidet euch an,  
Sie kleiden sich an,

sie kleiden sich an,  
&c., &c.

*Ind. pres.*  
Je m'habille,  
tu t'habilles,  
il s'habille,  
nous nous habillons,

vous vous habillez,

ils s'habillent,  
&c., &c.

*Ind. pres.*  
Io mi vesto.  
tu ti vesti.  
egli si veste.  
noi ci vestiamo.  
Ella si veste.  
voi vi vestite.  
Elleno si vestono.  
eglino si vestono.  
&c., &c.

These verbs are called reflexive because the action falls back on the subject. They have two pronouns, and follow the conjugation of the active verbs from which they are formed.

In English and German the compound tenses of these verbs are formed with the auxiliary *to have, haben*; but in French and Italian the verb *être, essere* is employed.

I have dressed myself,

&c., &c.

Ich habe mich angekleidet,

&c., &c.

Je me suis habillé (*f. —ée*),  
(*pl. habillés, f. —ées*),  
&c., &c.

Mi sono vestito (*f. —a*),  
(*pl. —i, f. —e*),  
&c., &c.

Reflective verbs govern their pronoun in the accusative or direct objective case; but some German verbs require it to be in the dative or indirect objective case; as, *Ich bilde mir ein*, I imagine.

### IMPERSONAL VERBS.

Impersonal verbs are those which are only used in the third person singular; as,

It rains,  
It will rain,  
It did rain, or It has rained  
&c., &c.

es regnet,  
es wird regnen,  
es hat geregnet,  
&c., &c.

il pleut,  
il pleuvra,  
il a plu,  
&c., &c.

piove.  
piovera.  
è (or ha) piovuto.  
&c., &c.

In German and French some verbs are reflexive and impersonal at the same time; as, *Es hungert mich*, I am hungry; *Il se boit de bon vin en France*, there is good wine in France.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See also Preliminary Philological and Grammatical Definitions, pages, 4, 5, 6, 7, on Moods and Tenses.

# viii TERMINATIONS OF ENGLISH VERBS.—IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS.

## TERMINATIONS OF ENGLISH VERBS.

|                | <i>Present.</i> | <i>Past or Imperfect.</i> |                                                     |
|----------------|-----------------|---------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------|
| 1. I           | —               | —ed, —d.                  |                                                     |
| 2. Thou        | —est, —st.      | —edst, —dst.              | <i>Past part.</i> —ed, —d.                          |
| 3. He, she, it | —es, —s.        | —ed, —d.                  | <i>Part. pres.</i> —ing.                            |
|                |                 |                           | <i>Imperative</i> —                                 |
| 1. We          | —               | —ed, —d.                  | The other tenses are formed by the auxiliary verbs. |
| 2. You         | —               | —ed, —d.                  |                                                     |
| 3. They        | —               | —ed, —d.                  |                                                     |

Verbs ending in *e* take *st, s*; as, love, lovest, loves.

|                                           |                             |                                                                                               |
|-------------------------------------------|-----------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Verbs ending with <i>w</i> or a consonant | } take <i>est, s</i> ; as,  | { mow, mowest, mows;<br>lend, lendest, lends.                                                 |
| Verbs ending in <i>ch</i>                 |                             | { teach, teachest, teaches;<br>push, pushest, pushes;                                         |
| " "                                       | } take <i>est, es</i> ; as, | { pass, passest, passes;<br>fix, fixest, fixes;<br>buzz, buzzest, buzzes;<br>go, goest, goes. |
| " "                                       |                             |                                                                                               |
| " "                                       |                             |                                                                                               |
| " "                                       |                             |                                                                                               |

Verbs ending in *y* preceded by a vowel . . } take *est, s*; as, say, sayest, says.

Verbs ending in *y* preceded by a consonant change *y* into *i*, and } take *est, es*; as, cry, criest, cries.

The adjoining terminations are to be added to the infinitive of the verb, dropping the *e* in words that end in *e*.

The present participle is formed by dropping the *e* in verbs that end in *e*, except those ending in *ge* soft; as, love, loving; singe, singeing (to scorch); swinge, swingeing (to lash), to be distinguished from singing and swinging; but the *e* is omitted in cringing and twinging.

2. By doubling the last consonant, if the verb ends with a single consonant preceded by a single vowel bearing the accent; as, commit, committing; but not in limit, offer, &c., &c.

3. Words of one syllable double the consonant; as, beg, begging, begged.

4. In verbs ending in *y*, *ing* is simply added; as, fly, flying.

The doubling of the consonant also takes place under similar circumstances in the 2nd pers. sing.; as, forget, forgettest; and before *-eth*.

## LIST OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS.

The Tenses with the asterisk (\*) have a regular formation, though less used.

| <i>Pres.</i> | <i>Past.</i> | <i>Past Part.</i>            | <i>Pres.</i> | <i>Past.</i> | <i>Past Part.</i> | <i>Pres.</i> | <i>Past.</i>         | <i>Past Part.</i>    |
|--------------|--------------|------------------------------|--------------|--------------|-------------------|--------------|----------------------|----------------------|
| I abide,     | I abode,     | abode.                       | I become,    | I became,    | become.           | I bestride,  | I bestrode,          | bestriden.           |
| am,          | was,         | been.                        | it befalls,  | it befell,   | befallen.         | bid,         | bade, bid,           | bidden, bid.         |
| arise,       | arose,       | arisen.                      | I beget,     | I begot,     | begotten.         | bind,        | bound,               | bound.               |
| awake,       | awoke,*      | awaked.                      | begin,       | began,       | begun.            | bite,        | bit,                 | bitten, bit.         |
| bear,        | bare, bore,  | { act. borne.<br>pass. born. | behold,      | beheld,      | beheld.           | bleed,       | bled,                | bled.                |
| bear,        | bare,        | borne.                       | bend,        | bent,*       | bent.*            | blend,       | { blended,<br>blent, | { blended,<br>blent. |
| beat,        | beat,        | beaten.                      | beseech,     | besought,    | besought.         | blow,        | blew,                | blown.               |

# ENGLISH IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS.

13

| <i>Pres.</i> | <i>Past.</i>    | <i>Past Part.</i> | <i>Pres.</i> | <i>Past.</i> | <i>Past Part.</i> | <i>Pres.</i> | <i>Past.</i>  | <i>Past Part.</i> |
|--------------|-----------------|-------------------|--------------|--------------|-------------------|--------------|---------------|-------------------|
| I break,     | I broke,        | broken.           | I eat,       | I eat, ate,  | eaten.            | I keep,      | I kept,       | kept.             |
| breed,       | bred,           | bred.             | fall,        | fell,        | fallen.           | kneel,       | kneelt,*      | kneelt.*          |
| bring,       | brought,        | brought.          | feed,        | fed,         | fed.              | knit,        | knit,*        | knit.*            |
| build,       | built,*         | built.*           | feel,        | felt,        | felt.             | know,        | knew,         | known.            |
| burn,        | burnt,*         | burnt.*           | fight,       | fought,      | fought.           | lade,        | laded,        | laden.*           |
| burst,       | burst,          | burst.            | find,        | found,       | found.            | lay,         | laid,         | laid.             |
| buy,         | bought,         | bought.           | flee,        | fled,        | fled.             | lead,        | led,          | led.              |
| can,         | could,          | —                 | fling,       | flung,       | flung.            | lean,        | { leaned,     | { leaned,         |
| cast,        | cast,           | cast.*            | fly,         | flew,        | flown.            | leave,       | { leant,      | { leant.          |
| catch,       | caught,*        | caught.*          | forbear,     | forbore,     | forborn.          | lend,        | left,         | left.             |
| chide,       | chid,           | chidden, chid.    | forbid,      | forbade,     | forbidden.        | let,         | lent,         | lent.             |
| choose,      | chose,          | chosen.           | forget,      | forgot,      | forgotten.        | let,         | let,          | let.              |
| cleave (to   | } clove, cleft, | cloven,           | forgive,     | forgave,     | forgiven.         | lie,         | lay,          | lain.             |
| split),      |                 | cleft.            | forgo,       | —            | forgone.          | light,       | lighted, lit, | lighted, lit.     |
| climb,       | climbed,        | climbed.          | forsake,     | forsook,     | forsaken.         | load,        | loaded,       | { loaded,         |
| cling,       | clung,          | clung.            | freeze,      | froze,       | frozen.           | lose,        | lost,         | laden.            |
| clothe,      | { clothed,      | { clothed,        | freight,     | fraught,     | fraught.          | make,        | made,         | lost.             |
| come,        | { clad,         | { clad.           | get,         | got,         | got.              | may,         | might,        | made.             |
| cost,        | came,           | cost.             | gild,        | gilt,*       | gilt.*            | mean,        | meant,*       | meant.*           |
| creep,       | cost,           | crept.*           | gird,        | gird,*       | girt.*            | meet,        | met,          | met.              |
| crow,        | crept,*         | crept.*           | give,        | gave,        | given.            | melt,        | melted,       | { melted,         |
| cut,         | crew,*          | crowed.           | go,          | went,        | gone.             | mistake,     | mistook,      | { molten.         |
| dare (to     | } durst,*       | cut.              | grave,       | graved,      | graved, graven.   | mow,         | mistaken,     | mistaken.         |
| venture),    |                 | dared.            | grind,       | ground,      | ground.           | must,        | mowed,        | mown.*            |
| deal,        | dealt,*         | dealt.*           | grow,        | grew,        | grown.            | ought,       | —             | —                 |
| die,         | died,           | died, dead.       | hang,        | hung,*       | hung.*            | overtake,    | overtook,     | overtaken.        |
| dig,         | dug,*           | dug.*             | have,        | had,         | had.              | partake,     | partook,      | partaken.         |
| dip,         | dipt,           | dipt.             | hear,        | heard,       | heard.            | pay,         | paid,         | paid.             |
| do,          | did,            | done.             | heave,       | hove,*       | hoven.*           | pen (to in-  | } pent,       | pent.             |
| draw,        | drew,           | drawn.            | help,        | helped,      | helped.           | close),      |               | —                 |
| dream,       | dreamt,*        | dreamt.*          | hew,         | hewed,       | hewn.*            | put,         | put,          | put.              |
| drink,       | drank,          | drunk.            | hide,        | hid,         | hidden, hid.      | quit,        | quitted, quit | quitted, qui      |
| drive,       | drove,          | driven.           | hit,         | hit,         | hit.              | —            | quoth,        | —                 |
| dwell,       | dwelt,*         | dwelt.*           | hold,        | held,        | held.             |              |               |                   |
|              |                 |                   | hurt,        | hurt,        | hurt.             |              |               |                   |



## ENGLISH IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS.

| <i>Pres.</i> | <i>Past.</i>     | <i>Past Part.</i> | <i>Pres.</i> | <i>Past.</i>  | <i>Past Part.</i> | <i>Pres.</i>                      | <i>Past.</i>                     | <i>Past Part.</i> |
|--------------|------------------|-------------------|--------------|---------------|-------------------|-----------------------------------|----------------------------------|-------------------|
| I read,      | I read,          | read.             | I sink,      | I sank, sunk, | sunk.             | I strow,* } I strowed, } strown.* | I strowed, } strowed, } strown.* | strown.*          |
| reave        | reft,            | reft.             | sit          | sat, sate,    | sat.              | strew,                            | strewed,                         | strown.*          |
| rend,        | rent,            | rent.             | slay,        | slaw,         | alain.            | swear,                            | swore,                           | sworn.            |
| rid,         | rid,             | rid.              | asleep,      | aslept,       | aslept.*          | sweat,                            | sweat,*                          | sweat.*           |
| ride,        | rode,            | { ridden,         | slide,       | slid,         | alidden, alid.    | sweep,                            | swept,                           | swept.            |
| ring,        | rang, rung,      | { rode.           | sling,       | slung,        | alung.            | swell,                            | swelled,                         | swollen.*         |
| rise,        | rose,            | rung.             | slink,       | slunk,        | alunk.            | swim,                             | swam, swum, swum.                | swollen.*         |
| rive,        | rove,            | risen.            | slit,        | alit,         | alit.             | swing,                            | swang,                           | swung.            |
| run,         | ran,             | riven.            | smell,       | smelt,*       | smelt.*           | take,                             | took,                            | taken.            |
| saw,         | sawed,           | run.              | smite,       | amote,        | { smitten,        | teach,                            | taught,                          | taught.           |
| see,         | saw,             | sawn.*            | sow,         | sowed,        | { smit.           | tear,                             | tore,                            | torn.             |
| say,         | said,            | seen.             | speak,       | soked,        | snown.*           | tell,                             | told,                            | told.             |
| seek,        | sought,          | said.             | speed,       | spoke,        | spoken.           | think,                            | thought,                         | thought.          |
| seethe,      | { seethed,       | sought.           | spell,       | sped,         | sped.             | thrive,                           | throve,*                         | thriven.*         |
| sell,        | { sod,           | { seethed,        | spend,       | spelt,*       | spelt.*           | throw,                            | threw,                           | thrown.           |
| send,        | sold,            | { sodden.         | spill,       | spent,        | spent.            | thrust,                           | thrust,                          | thrust.           |
| set,         | sent,            | sold.             | spilt,*      | spilt,*       | spilt.*           | tread,                            | trod,                            | { trodden,        |
| shake,       | set,             | sent.             | spun,        | spit,         | spit.             | undertake,                        | undertook,                       | trod.             |
| shall,       | shook,           | shaken.           | spit, spat,  | split,        | split.            | undo,                             | undid,                           | undertaker        |
| shape,       | should,          | —                 | spread,      | split,        | spread.           | wake,                             | undone.                          | waked.            |
| shave,       | shaped,          | shaped.           | spring,      | spread,       | spread.           | wax,                              | woke,*                           | waxed.*           |
| shear,       | shaved,          | { shaved,         | stand,       | { sprang,     | sprung.           | wear,                             | waxed,*                          | waxen.*           |
| shed,        | sheared, shore,* | { shaven.         | staid,       | { sprung,     | stood.            | weave,                            | wore,                            | worn.             |
| show,        | shed,            | shown.            | steal,       | stood,        | stood.            | weep,                             | wove,                            | woven.            |
| shine,       | showed,          | shorn.*           | stole,       | staid,        | staid.            | wet,                              | wept,                            | wept.             |
| shoe,        | shone,*          | shone.*           | stuck,       | stole,        | stolen.           | wet,*                             | wet,*                            | wet.*             |
| shoot,       | shod,            | shod.             | stung,       | stuck,        | stuck.            | whip,                             | whipt,*                          | whipt.*           |
| shred,       | shone,*          | shod.             | stunk,       | stung,        | stung.            | will,                             | whipt,*                          | —                 |
| shrink,      | shot,            | shot.             | stride,      | stank,        | stunk.            | wind,                             | would,                           | would.            |
| shrive,      | shred,           | shred.            | strike,      | { strode,     | stridden.         | win,                              | won,                             | won.              |
| shut,        | shrunk,          | shrunk.           | string,      | { strid,      | strid.            | wind,                             | wound,                           | wound.            |
| sing,        | shrove,          | shriven.          | strip,       | struck,       | struck.           | work,                             | wont,                            | { wonted,         |
|              | shut,            | shut.             | strive,      | strung,*      | strung.*          | wring,                            | { worked,                        | { worked,         |
|              | sang, sung,      | sung.             |              | stript,*      | stript.*          | wrote,                            | { wrought,                       | { wrought,        |
|              |                  |                   |              | { striven.    | { striven.        |                                   | wrung,                           | wrung.            |
|              |                  |                   |              | { strove.     | { strove.         |                                   | wrote,                           | written.          |

## TERMINATIONS OF GERMAN VERBS.

|       |                | INDICATIVE.    |                           | SUBJUNCTIVE.   |                        | IMPERAT. | INFINITIVE.                       |
|-------|----------------|----------------|---------------------------|----------------|------------------------|----------|-----------------------------------|
|       |                | Present Tense. | Imperfect, or Past Tense. | Present Tense. | Past, or Conditional.  |          |                                   |
| Sing. | 1, Ich         | —e             | —ete, —te                 | —e             | <sup>1</sup> —ete, —te |          | <i>Present.</i> —en.              |
|       | 2, du          | —est, —st      | —etest, —test             | —est           | —etest, —test          | —e       | <i>Pres. Part.</i> —end.          |
|       | 3, er, sie, es | —et, —t        | —ete, —te                 | —e             | —ete, —te              |          | <i>Past Part.</i> ge—et, —t.      |
| Plur. | 1, wir         | —en, —n        | —eten, —ten               | —en            | —eten, —ten            |          | " " ge—en. (See Irregular Verbs.) |
|       | 2, ihr         | —et, —t        | —etet, —tet               | —et            | —etet, —tet            | —et, —t  |                                   |
|       | 3, sie         | —en, —n        | —eten, —ten               | —en            | —eten, —ten            |          |                                   |

In German, as in English, there is but one conjugation, as all verbs end in *en* or *n*.

The tenses above mentioned are the only ones that are conjugated by inflections; all other tenses are conjugated by means of the auxiliary verbs, as in English. Compound verbs are conjugated like those from which they are derived.

The terminations given above must be added to the root of the verb.

In the indicative mood drop the *e* of the imperfect tense if the word can be pronounced without it; as, *ich lobte*, instead of *ich lobete*.

The past participle is formed by adding *ge* to the 2nd person plural of the indicative present; as, *ihr lobt*, past participle *gelobt*.

The augment *ge* is never added to verbs beginning with the inseparable particles *be*, *emp*, *ent*, *er*, *ge*, *ver*, *zer*, nor to verbs of foreign origin ending in *iren*, or *ieren*; as *studiren studirt*; *spazieren, spaziert*.

Verbs ending in *eln*, *ern*, as *handeln*, *wandern*, generally drop the first *e* in the 1st person of the indicative present and in all the persons of the subjunctive present and imperative; as, *ich handle*, instead of *ich handele*. In the other persons of the indicative present, and in the imperfect and past participle, the last *e* is dropped and the first retained; as, *gehandelt* instead of *gehandelet*.

<sup>1</sup> When the past tense of the indicative does not end in *e* the vowels *a*, *o*, *u* are generally changed into *ä*, *ö*, *ü*, and a final *e* is added to form the conditional; as, *ich nahm*, *ich nähme*; *ich bog*, *ich böge*; *ich dung*, *ich dünge*. See List of Irregular Verbs for examples and exceptions.

## LIST OF GERMAN IRREGULAR VERBS.

*Verbs pended by the \* are conjugated regularly, when they have an active signification. The persons and tenses not given in this list are regular.*

| INFINITIVE.                      | PART. PAST. | PRESENT INDICATIVE.             | IMP. IND.             | IMP. SUBJ.         | IMPERATIVE.      |
|----------------------------------|-------------|---------------------------------|-----------------------|--------------------|------------------|
| Backen, to bake, to be baking    | gebacken    | du bäckst, er bäckt*            | ich buk* <sup>1</sup> | büke.*             | befiehl.         |
| Befehlen, to command *           | befohlen    | du befiehlst, er befiehlt       | ich befahl            | befähle, beföhle   |                  |
| Sich befeiszen, to apply oneself | beßissen    | —                               | ich befiß mich        | beßieße.           |                  |
| Beginnen, to begin               | begonnen    | —                               | ich begann            | begänne, begönne.  | birg.<br>birst.* |
| Beiszen, to bite                 | gebissen    | —                               | ich biß               | bisse.             |                  |
| Bergen, to conceal               | geborgen    | du birgst, er birgt             | ich barg              | bürge              |                  |
| Bersten, to burst                | geborsten*  | du birstest, er birst*          | ich borst, barst*     | bürste, börste*    | reg., or beut.   |
| Sich besinnen, to recollect      | besonnen    | —                               | ich besann mich       | besänne, besönne.  |                  |
| Bewegen, to move, to induce      | bewogen*    | —                               | ich bewog*            | bewöge.*           |                  |
| Biegen, to bend                  | gebogen     | —                               | ich bog               | böge.              | reg., or beut.   |
| Bieten, to bid, to offer         | geboten     | reg., or du beutst, er beut     | ich bot               | böte               |                  |
| Binden, to bind                  | gebunden    | —                               | ich band              | bände.             |                  |
| Bitten, to beg                   | gebeten     | —                               | ich bat               | bäte.              | brich.           |
| Blasen, to blow                  | geblasen    | du bläsest, er bläset, or bläst | ich blies             | bliese.            |                  |
| Bleiben, to remain               | geblieben   | —                               | ich blieb             | bliebe.            |                  |
| Bleichen, to turn pale *         | geblichen   | —                               | ich blich             | bliche.            | drisch.          |
| Braten, to roast                 | gebraten    | du brätst, er brät*             | ich briet*            | briete.*           |                  |
| Brechen, to break                | gebrochen   | du brichst, er bricht           | ich brach             | bräche             |                  |
| Brennen, to burn                 | gebrannt*   | —                               | ich brannte*          | brennete.          | drisch.          |
| Bringen, to bring                | gebracht    | —                               | ich brachte           | brächte.           |                  |
| Denken, to think                 | gedacht     | —                               | ich dachte            | dächte.            |                  |
| Dingen, to bargain, to hire      | gedungen*   | —                               | ich dung*             | dünge.*            | none.            |
| Dreschen, to thrash              | gedroschen* | du drischest, er drischt        | ich drosch, drasch*   | drösche.           |                  |
| Dringen, to press                | gedrungen   | —                               | ich drang             | dränge.            |                  |
| Dürfen, to dare                  | gedurft     | ich darf, du darfst, er darf    | ich durfte            | dürfte             | empfiehl.        |
| Empfangen, to receive            | empfangen   | du empfängst, er empfängt       | ich empfieng          | empfinde.          |                  |
| Empfehlen, to recommend          | empfohlen   | du empfiehlst, er empfiehlt     | ich empfahl           | empfähle, empfähle |                  |
| Empfinden, to feel               | empunden    | —                               | ich empfand           | empfände.          |                  |
| Erblicken, to turn pale          | erblichen   | —                               | ich erblich           | erbliche.          |                  |

<sup>1</sup> The second person singular is formed by adding *st*; the first and third plural, by adding *en* or *n*; the second plural, by adding *t* or *et*; the third singular is the same as the first. <sup>2</sup> *Fehlen* and *verfehlen*, to fail, are regular. <sup>3</sup> *Bleichen*, to bleach, is regular.

# GERMAN IRREGULAR VERBS.

xiii

| INFINITIVE.                                 | PART. PAST. | PRESENT INDICATIVE.              | IMP. IND.     | IMP. SUBJ.   | IMPERATIVE.      |
|---------------------------------------------|-------------|----------------------------------|---------------|--------------|------------------|
| Erküren, to select                          | erkoren     | (a verb seldom used.)            | ich erkor     | erköre.      |                  |
| Erlöschen (of fire), to go out <sup>1</sup> | erloschen   | du erlischest, er erlischt       | ich erlosch   | erlösche     | erlisch.         |
| Erschallen, to resound                      | erschollen  | —                                | ich erscholl* | erschölle.*  |                  |
| Erschrecken, to be frightened               | erschrocken | du erschrickst, er erschrickt*   | ich erschrak* | erschreke*   | erschrick.*      |
| Erwägen, to consider                        | erwogen     | —                                | ich erwog     | erwöge.      |                  |
| Essen, to eat                               | gegessen    | du issest, er isset or iszt      | ich aß        | äße          | isß.             |
| Fahren, to drive <sup>2</sup>               | gefahren    | du fährst, er fährt              | ich fuhr      | führe.       |                  |
| Fallen, to fall <sup>3</sup>                | gefallen    | du fällst, er fällt              | ich fiel      | fielen.      |                  |
| Fangen, to catch                            | gefangen    | du fängst, er fängt              | ich fing      | finge.       |                  |
| Fechten, to fight                           | gefochten   | du fichtst, er ficht*            | ich focht     | föchte       | ficht.*          |
| Finden, to find                             | gefunden    | —                                | ich fand      | fände.       |                  |
| Flechten, to plait                          | geflochten  | du flichtst, er flicht*          | ich flocht    | flöchte      | reg., or flicht. |
| Fliegen, to fly                             | geflogen    | reg., or du fleugst, er fliegt   | ich flog      | flöge        | reg., or flug    |
| Fliehen, to flee, to run away               | geflohen    | reg., or du fleuchst, er fleucht | ich floh      | flöhe        | reg., or fleuch  |
| Flieszen, to flow                           | geflossen   | —                                | ich flosß     | flösse.      |                  |
| Fressen, to eat, to devour                  | gefressen   | du frissest, er frisst           | ich fraß      | fräße        | frisß.           |
| Frieren, to freeze, to be cold              | gefroren    | —                                | ich fror      | fröre.       |                  |
| Gähren, to ferment                          | gegohren    | —                                | ich gohr*     | göhre.*      |                  |
| Gebären, to bring forth                     | geboren     | du gebierst, er gebiert*         | ich gebar     | gebäre.      |                  |
| Geben, to give                              | gegeben     | du gibst, er gibt                | ich gab       | gäbe         | gib.             |
| Gebieten, to order                          | geboden     | reg., or du gebeutst, er gebeut  | ich gebot     | geböte       | reg., or gebeut. |
| Gedeihen, to prosper                        | gediehen    | —                                | ich gedieh    | gediehe.     |                  |
| Gehen, to go                                | gegangen    | —                                | ich ging      | ginge.       |                  |
| Gelingen, to succeed                        | gelingen    | es gelingt                       | es gelang     | es gelänge.  |                  |
| Gelten, to be worth                         | gelolten    | du gilst, er gilt                | ich galt      | gälte, gölte | gilt.            |
| Genesen, to recover (from illness)          | genesen     | —                                | ich genas     | genäse.      |                  |
| Genieszen, to enjoy                         | genossen    | —                                | ich genosß    | genösse.     |                  |
| Geschehen, to happen                        | geschehen   | es geschieht                     | es geschah    | geschehe.    |                  |
| Gewinnen, to win                            | gewonnen    | —                                | ich gewann    | gewänne.     |                  |
| Gieszen, to pour                            | gegossen    | reg., or du gussest, er gusst    | ich goß       | gösse        | reg., or goss    |

<sup>1</sup> Löschen and auslöschen, as active verbs, are regular.

<sup>2</sup> Gefallen, to please, has the same irregularities as fallen.

<sup>3</sup> The derivatives from fahren have the same irregularities, except mitfahren, which is regular.

## GERMAN IRREGULAR VERBS.

| INFINITIVE.                                           | PART. PAST. | PRESENT INDICATIVE.             | IMP. IND.        | IMP. SUBJ.      | IMPERATIVE. |
|-------------------------------------------------------|-------------|---------------------------------|------------------|-----------------|-------------|
| Gleichen, <i>to resemble</i> <sup>1</sup>             | geglichen   | —                               | ich glich        | gliche.         |             |
| Gleiten, <i>to glide</i>                              | geglichen   | —                               | ich glitt        | glitte.         |             |
| Glimmen, <i>to glimmer</i>                            | geglommen   | —                               | ich glomm        | glömme.         |             |
| Graben, <i>to dig</i>                                 | gegraben    | du gräbst, er gräbt             | ich grub         | grübe.          |             |
| Greifen, <i>to gripe, to grasp</i>                    | gegriffen   | —                               | ich griff        | griffe.         |             |
| Haben, <i>to have</i> (See conj. of verb, page v.)    | page v.)    |                                 |                  |                 |             |
| Halten, <i>to hold</i>                                | gehalten    | du hältst, er hält              | ich hielt        | hielte.         |             |
| Hangen, <i>to hang (to be suspended)</i> <sup>2</sup> | gehangen    | du hängst, er hängt             | ich hing         | hinge.          |             |
| Hauen, <i>to hew</i>                                  | gehauen     | —                               | ich hieb*        | hiebe.*         |             |
| Heben, <i>to heave</i>                                | gehoben     | —                               | ich hob          | höbe, hübe.     |             |
| Heißen, <i>to be named, to bid</i>                    | geheißen    | —                               | ich hieß         | hiesje.         |             |
| Helfen, <i>to help</i>                                | geholfen    | du hilfst, er hilft             | ich half         | hälfe, or hülf  | hilf.       |
| Keifen, <i>to chide</i>                               | gekiffen*   | —                               | ich kiff*        | kiffe.*         |             |
| Kennen, <i>to know</i>                                | gekant      | —                               | ich kannte       | kennete.        |             |
| Klimmen, <i>to climb</i>                              | geklommen   | —                               | ich klomm*       | klömme.*        |             |
| Klingen, <i>to sound</i>                              | geklungen   | —                               | ich klang        | klänge.         |             |
| Kneifen, <i>to pinch</i>                              | gekniffen   | —                               | ich kniff*       | kniffe.*        |             |
| Kneipen, <i>to pinch</i>                              | geknippen   | —                               | ich knipp*       | knippe.*        |             |
| Kommen, <i>to come</i>                                | gekommen    | —                               | ich kam          | käme.           |             |
| Können, <i>to be able</i>                             | gekonnt     | ich kann, du kannst, er kann    | ich konnte       | könnte          | neme.       |
| Kriechen, <i>to creep</i>                             | gekrochen   | —                               | ich kroch        | kröche.         |             |
| Küren, or kühren, <i>to choose</i>                    | gekoren     | (a verb seldom used.)           | ich kor, or kohr | köre, or köhre. |             |
| Laden, <i>to load</i>                                 | geladen     | —                               | ich lud*         | lüde.*          |             |
| Lassen, <i>to let</i>                                 | gelassen    | du lässest, er lasset or läßt   | ich lies         | liesje.         |             |
| Laufen, <i>to run</i>                                 | gelaufen    | du läufst, er läuft             | ich lief         | liese.          |             |
| Leiden, <i>to suffer</i>                              | gelitten    | —                               | ich litt         | litte.          |             |
| Leihen, <i>to lend</i>                                | geliehen    | —                               | ich lieh         | liehe.          |             |
| Lesen, <i>to read</i>                                 | gelesen     | du liesest, er lieset or lies't | ich las          | läse.           | lies.       |
| Liegen, <i>to lie down</i> <sup>3</sup>               | gelegen     | —                               | ich lag          | läge.           |             |
| Lügen, <i>to lie</i>                                  | gelogen     | —                               | ich log          | löge.           |             |

<sup>1</sup> *Gleichen*, meaning to make equal, is regular.<sup>2</sup> *Liegen*, to place, or put, is an active and regular verb.<sup>3</sup> This verb must not be mistaken for *hängen*, which is an active and regular verb.

# GERMAN IRREGULAR VERBS.

x

| INFINITIVE.                                         | PART. PAST. | PRESENT INDICATIVE.            | IMP. IND.  | IMP. SUBJ.        | IMPERATIVE. |
|-----------------------------------------------------|-------------|--------------------------------|------------|-------------------|-------------|
| Mahlen, <i>to grind (corn)</i>                      | gemahlen    | —                              | —          | —                 |             |
| Meiden, <i>to shun</i>                              | gemieden    | —                              | ich mied   | miede.            |             |
| Melken, <i>to milk</i>                              | gemolken    | —                              | ich molk*  | mölke.*           |             |
| Messen, <i>to measure</i>                           | gemessen    | du missest, er misset or miszt | ich masz   | mäsze             | misz.       |
| Mögen, <i>to like</i>                               | gemocht     | ich mag, du magst, er mag      | ich mochte | möchte.           |             |
| Müssen, <i>must, to be obliged</i>                  | gemuszt     | ich musz, du muszt, er musz    | ich muszte | müszte.           | none.       |
| Nehmen, <i>to take</i>                              | genommen    | du nimmst, er nimmst           | ich nahm   | nähme             | nimm.       |
| Nennen, <i>to name</i>                              | genannt     | —                              | ich nannte | nennete.          |             |
| Pfeifen, <i>to whistle</i>                          | gepiffen    | —                              | ich piff   | pfiffe.           |             |
| Pflegen, <i>to cherish</i> <sup>1</sup>             | gepflogen   | —                              | ich pflog  | pflöge.           |             |
| Preisen, <i>to praise</i>                           | gepriesen   | —                              | ich pries* | priese.*          |             |
| Quellen, <i>to swell, to gush</i>                   | gequollen   | du quillst, er (es) quillt     | ich quoll  | quölle            | quill.      |
| Rathen, <i>to advise</i>                            | gerathen    | du räthst, er räth             | ich rieth  | riethe.           |             |
| Reiben, <i>to rub</i>                               | gerieben    | —                              | ich rieb   | riebe.            |             |
| Reiszen, <i>to tear</i>                             | gerissen    | —                              | ich risz   | risse.            |             |
| Reiten, <i>to ride</i>                              | geritten    | —                              | ich ritt   | ritte.            |             |
| Rennen, <i>to run</i>                               | gerannt     | —                              | ich rannte | rennete.          |             |
| Riechen, <i>to smell</i>                            | gerochen    | —                              | ich roch   | röche.            |             |
| Ringen, <i>to wrestle</i>                           | gerungen    | —                              | ich rang   | ränge.            |             |
| Rinnen, <i>to run (of fluids)</i>                   | geronnen    | —                              | ich rann   | rönne, ränne.     |             |
| Rufen, <i>to call</i>                               | gerufen     | —                              | ich rief   | riefe.            |             |
| Salzen, <i>to salt</i>                              | gesalzen    | —                              | —          | —                 |             |
| Saufen, <i>to drink</i>                             | gesoffen    | du säufst, er säuft            | ich soff   | söffe.            |             |
| Saugen, <i>to suck</i> <sup>2</sup>                 | gesogen     | —                              | ich sog    | söge.             |             |
| Schaffen, <i>to produce, to create</i> <sup>3</sup> | geschaffen  | —                              | ich schuf  | schüfe.           |             |
| Scheiden, <i>to part</i> <sup>4</sup>               | geschieden  | —                              | ich schied | schiede.          |             |
| Scheinen, <i>to appear; shine</i>                   | geschienen  | —                              | ich schien | schiene.          |             |
| Schelten, <i>to scold</i>                           | gescholten  | du schiltst, er schilt         | ich schalt | schälte, schölte. | schilt.     |
| Scheren, <i>to shear</i>                            | geschoren   | —                              | ich schor  | schöre.           |             |
| Schieben, <i>to shove</i>                           | geschoben   | —                              | ich schob  | schöbe.           |             |

<sup>1</sup> *Pflegen*, meaning custom or habit of doing anything, is regular.

<sup>3</sup> *Schaffen*, meaning to work or procure, is regular.

<sup>2</sup> *Saugen*, to suckle, is regular.

<sup>4</sup> *Scheiden*, when denoting chemical separation, is regular.

## GERMAN IRREGULAR VERBS.

| INFINITIVE.                                         | PART. PAST. | PRESENT INDICATIVE.                   | IMP. IND.          | IMP. SUBJ.        | IMPERATIVE.           |
|-----------------------------------------------------|-------------|---------------------------------------|--------------------|-------------------|-----------------------|
| Schieszen, <i>to shoot</i>                          | geschossen  | —                                     | ich schoß          | schösse.          | reg. or schleus.      |
| Schinden, <i>to flay</i>                            | geschunden  | —                                     | ich schund         | schünde.          |                       |
| Schlafen, <i>to sleep</i>                           | geschlafen  | du schläfst, er schläft               | ich schlief        | schliefe.         |                       |
| Schlagen, <i>to strike</i>                          | geschlagen  | du schlägst, er schlägt               | ich schlug         | schlüge.          |                       |
| Schleichen, <i>to sneak</i>                         | geschlichen | —                                     | ich schlich        | schliche.         |                       |
| Schleifen, <i>to sharpen</i> <sup>1</sup>           | geschliffen | —                                     | ich schliff        | schliffe.         |                       |
| Schleiszen, <i>to slit</i>                          | geschlissen | —                                     | ich schliß         | schliesse.        |                       |
| Schlieszen, <i>to shut</i>                          | geschlossen | reg., or du schleussest, er schleuszt | ich schloß         | schlösse          |                       |
| Schlingen, <i>to entwine, to devour</i>             | geschlungen | —                                     | ich schlang        | schlänge.         | schmilz.<br>schnieße. |
| Schmeiszen, <i>to fling</i>                         | geschmissen | —                                     | ich schmiß         | schmisse.         |                       |
| Schmelzen, <i>to smelt, to melt</i> <sup>2</sup>    | geschmolzen | du schmilzest, er schmilzt            | ich schmolz        | schmölze          |                       |
| Schnauben, <i>to snub, to huff</i>                  | geschnoben* | —                                     | ich schnob*        | schnöbe*          |                       |
| Schneiden, <i>to cut</i>                            | geschnitten | —                                     | ich schnitt        | schnitt.          |                       |
| Schrauben, <i>to screw</i>                          | geschroben* | —                                     | ich schrob*        | schröbe.*         |                       |
| Schreiben, <i>to write</i>                          | geschrieben | —                                     | ich schrieb        | schriebe.         |                       |
| Schreien, <i>to scream</i>                          | geschrieen  | —                                     | ich schrie         | schrie.           |                       |
| Schreiten, <i>to stride</i>                         | geschritten | —                                     | ich schritt        | schritte.         | schwill.              |
| Schwären, <i>to suppurate</i>                       | geschworen  | —                                     | ich schwor         | schwöre.          |                       |
| Schweigen, <i>to be silent</i>                      | geschwiegen | —                                     | ich schwieg        | schwiege.         |                       |
| Schwellen, <i>to swell</i> <sup>3</sup>             | geschwollen | du schwillst, er schwillt             | ich schwoll        | schwölle          |                       |
| Schwimmen, <i>to swim</i>                           | geschwommen | —                                     | ich schwamm        | schwämme.         |                       |
| Schwunden, <i>to vanish</i>                         | geschwunden | —                                     | ich schwand        | schwände.         |                       |
| Schwingen, <i>to wing</i>                           | geschwungen | —                                     | ich schwang        | schwänge.         |                       |
| Schwören, <i>to swear</i>                           | geschworen  | —                                     | ich schwor, schwur | schwöre, schwüre. |                       |
| Sehen, <i>to see</i>                                | gesehen     | du siehst, er sieht                   | ich sah            | sähe              | reg. or sieh.         |
| Sein, <i>to be</i> (See conjug. of verb, page iii.) |             |                                       |                    |                   |                       |
| Senden, <i>to send</i>                              | gesandt     | —                                     | ich sandte         | sendete.          |                       |
| Sieden, <i>to boil</i>                              | gesotten    | —                                     | ich sott           | sötte.            |                       |
| Singen, <i>to sing</i>                              | gesungen    | —                                     | ich sang           | sänge.            |                       |

<sup>1</sup> When this verb denotes the trying of a musical note, or the destroying of a fortification, it is regular.<sup>2</sup> When taken in an active signification, this verb is regular.<sup>3</sup> Schwellen, with an active signification, is regular.

# GERMAN IRREGULAR VERBS.

xvii

| INFINITIVE.                             | PART. PAST. | PRESENT INDICATIVE.            | IMP. IND.            | IMP. SUBJ.      | IMPERATIVE. |
|-----------------------------------------|-------------|--------------------------------|----------------------|-----------------|-------------|
| Sinken, <i>to sink</i>                  | gesunken    | —                              | ich sank             | sänke.          |             |
| Sinnen, <i>to meditate</i>              | gesonnen    | —                              | ich sann             | sänne.          |             |
| Sitzen, <i>to be seated, to sit</i>     | gesessen    | —                              | ich saß              | säße.           |             |
| Sollen, <i>shall</i>                    | gesollt     | ich soll, du sollst, er soll   | ich sollte           | sollte.         | none.       |
| Spalten, <i>to split</i> <sup>1</sup>   | gespalten   | —                              | ich spaltete         | spaltete.       |             |
| Speien, <i>to spit</i>                  | gespieen    | —                              | ich spie             | spiee.          |             |
| Spinnen, <i>to spin</i>                 | gesponnen   | —                              | ich spann            | spänne.         |             |
| Spleisjen, <i>to split</i>              | gesplissen  | —                              | ich spließ           | splisse.        |             |
| Sprechen, <i>to speak</i>               | gesprochen  | du sprichst, er spricht        | ich sprach           | spräche         | sprich.     |
| Spriesjen, <i>to sprout</i>             | gesprossen  | —                              | ich sproß            | sprösse.        |             |
| Springen, <i>to spring, to leap</i>     | gesprungen  | —                              | ich sprang           | spränge.        |             |
| Stechen, <i>to sting</i>                | gestochen   | du stich'st, er sticht         | ich stach            | stäche          | stich.      |
| Stecken, <i>to stick</i> <sup>2</sup>   | gesteckt    | —                              | ich stak             | stäke.          |             |
| Stehen, <i>to stand</i>                 | gestanden   | —                              | ich stand            | stände, stünde. |             |
| Stehlen, <i>to steal</i>                | gestohlen   | du stiehst, er stiehlt         | ich stahl            | stehl           | stiehl.     |
| Steigen, <i>to mount</i>                | gestiegen   | —                              | ich stieg            | stiege.         |             |
| Sterben, <i>to die</i>                  | gestorben   | du stirbst, er stirbt          | ich starb, s. stürbe | störbe          | stirb.      |
| Stieben, <i>to scatter</i>              | gestoben    | —                              | ich stob             | staubte.        |             |
| Stinken, <i>to stink</i>                | gestunken   | —                              | ich stank            | stänke.         |             |
| Stosjen, <i>to push</i>                 | gestosjen   | du stößest, er stößt           | ich sties            | stiesje.        |             |
| Streichen, <i>to stroke</i>             | gestrichen  | —                              | ich strich           | striche.        |             |
| Streiten, <i>to strive, quarrel</i>     | gestritten  | —                              | ich stritt           | stritte.        |             |
| Thun, <i>to do</i>                      | gethan      | ich thue, du thu(e)st, er thut | ich that             | thäte           | thue.       |
| Tragen, <i>to carry</i>                 | getragen    | du trägst, er trägt            | ich trug             | trüge.          |             |
| Treffen, <i>to hit</i>                  | getroffen   | du triffst, er trifft          | ich traf             | träfe           | triff.      |
| Treiben, <i>to drive</i>                | getrieben   | —                              | ich trieb            | triebe.         |             |
| Treten, <i>to tread</i>                 | getreten    | du trittst, er tritt           | ich trat             | träte           | tritt.      |
| Triefen, <i>to drop</i>                 | getroffen   | —                              | ich troff            | tröffe.         |             |
| Trinken, <i>to drink</i>                | getrunken   | —                              | ich trank            | tränke.         |             |
| Trügen, <i>to deceive</i>               | getrogen    | —                              | ich trog             | tröge.          |             |
| Verderben, <i>to decay</i> <sup>3</sup> | verdorben   | du verdirbst, er verdirbt      | ich verdarb          | verdorb         | verdirb.    |

<sup>1</sup> *Spalten*, with an active signification, is regular.

<sup>2</sup> *Stecken*, to put, as an active verb, is regular.

<sup>3</sup> *Verderben*, to destroy, is regular.



## GERMAN IRREGULAR VERBS.

| INFINITIVE.                                               | PART. PAST. | PRESENT INDICATIVE           | IMP. IND.     | IMP. SUBJ.   | IMPERATIVE. |
|-----------------------------------------------------------|-------------|------------------------------|---------------|--------------|-------------|
| Verdrieszen, <i>to vex</i>                                | verdrossen  | —                            | es verdross   | verdrüsse.   | vergis.     |
| Vergessen, <i>to forget</i>                               | vergessen   | du vergisst, er vergisst     | ich vergass   | vergäme      |             |
| Verhehlen, <i>to conceal</i>                              | verhohlen*  | —                            | ich verhehlte | verhehlete.  |             |
| Verlieren, <i>to lose</i>                                 | verloren    | —                            | ich verlor    | verlöre.     |             |
| Verwirren, <i>to confuse</i>                              | verworren*  | —                            | ich verworr*  | verwörrte.*  |             |
| Verzeihen, <i>to forgive</i>                              | verziehen   | —                            | ich verzieh   | verziehe.    | wirb.       |
| Wachsen, <i>to wax, grow</i>                              | gewachsen   | du wächst, er wächst         | ich wuchs     | wüchse.      |             |
| Wägen, <i>to weigh</i>                                    | gewogen     | —                            | ich wog       | wöge.        |             |
| Waschen, <i>to wash</i>                                   | gewaschen*  | du wäschst, er wäscht*       | ich wusch*    | wüsche.*     |             |
| Weben, <i>to weave</i>                                    | gewoben*    | —                            | ich wob*      | wöbe.*       |             |
| Weichen, <i>to yield</i> <sup>1</sup>                     | gewichen    | —                            | ich wich      | wiche.       |             |
| Weisen, <i>to show</i>                                    | gewiesen    | —                            | ich wies      | wiese.       |             |
| Wenden, <i>to turn</i>                                    | gewandt*    | —                            | ich wandte*   | wendete.     |             |
| Werben, <i>to sue for</i>                                 | geworben    | du wirbst, er wirbt          | ich warb      | wärbe, würbe |             |
| Werden, <i>to become.</i> (See conjug. of verb, page iv.) |             |                              |               |              |             |
| Werfen, <i>to throw</i>                                   | geworfen    | du wirfst, er wirft          | ich warf      | wärfe, würfe |             |
| Wiegen, <i>to weigh</i> <sup>2</sup>                      | gewogen     | —                            | ich wog       | wöge.        |             |
| Winden, <i>to wind</i>                                    | gewunden    | —                            | ich wand      | wände.       |             |
| Wirren, <i>to entangle</i>                                | geworren*   | —                            | ich worr*     | wörrte.*     |             |
| Wissen, <i>to know</i>                                    | gewusst     | ich weiß, du weißt, er weiß  | ich wußte     | wüßte.       |             |
| Wollen, <i>will</i>                                       | gewollt     | ich will, du willst, er will | ich wollte    | wollte.      |             |
| Zeihen, <i>to accuse of</i>                               | gezihen     | —                            | ich zieh      | ziehe.       |             |
| Ziehen, <i>to pull, to draw</i>                           | gezogen     | —                            | ich zog       | züge.        |             |
| Zwingen, <i>to compel</i>                                 | gezwungen   | —                            | ich zwang     | zwänge.      |             |

<sup>1</sup> Weichen, to moisten, to soften, is regular.<sup>2</sup> Wiegen, to rock, is regular.

## TERMINATIONS OF FRENCH VERBS.

The French language has four conjugations. Verbs ending in *er* belong to the first; verbs in *ir* to the second; those in *oir* or *avoir* to the third, and those in *re* to the fourth. The present participle always ends in *ant*, the past participle has no termination common to all verbs; it generally ends in *é*, *i*, or *u*, as *parlé*, *fini*, *reçu*, *vendu*. The following terminations generally added to the root of the verb indicate the different moods and tenses.

|                          | <i>Je</i> | <i>tu</i>  | <i>il, elle</i> | <i>nous</i> | <i>vous</i> | <i>ils, elles</i> |
|--------------------------|-----------|------------|-----------------|-------------|-------------|-------------------|
| Indicative Present. A.   | —e,       | —es,       | —e,             |             |             |                   |
|                          | —es,      | —es,       | —e,             |             |             |                   |
|                          | —ds,      | —ds,       | —d,             |             |             |                   |
|                          | —ns,      | —ns,       | —t,             | —ons*,      | —ez*,       | —ent*,            |
|                          | —ts,      | —ts,       | —t,             |             |             |                   |
|                          | —s,       | —s,        | —t,             |             |             |                   |
| Imperfect. B.            | —x,       | —x,        | —t,             |             |             |                   |
|                          | —ais*,    | —ais*,     | —ait*,          | —ions*,     | —iez*,      | —aient.*          |
|                          | —ai,      | —as†,      | —a,             | —âmes,      | —âtes,      | —èrent.           |
| Preterit. C.             | —is,      | —is†,      | —it,            | —îmes,      | —îtes,      | —irent.           |
|                          | —ins,     | —ins†,     | —int,           | —înmes,     | —întes,     | —inrent.          |
|                          | —us,      | —us†,      | —ut,            | —ûmes,      | —ûtes,      | —urent.           |
| Future. D.               | —rai,     | —ras,      | —ra,            | —rons,      | —rez,       | —ront.            |
| Conditional. E.          | —rais,    | —rais,     | —rait,          | —rions,     | —riez,      | —raient.          |
| Subj. pres. F.           | —e*,      | —es*,      | —e*,            | —ions*,     | —iez*,      | —ent.*            |
| Subj. imper-<br>fect. G. | —asse†,   | —asses,    | —ât,            | —assions,   | —assiez,    | —assent.          |
|                          | —isset†,  | —isseries, | —ît,            | —issions,   | —issiez,    | —issent.          |

† Add *se* to this second person to form the imperfect of the subjunctive.

(The three plural persons of the ind. pres. and the imperative, the imperfect ind. and the subj. pres. are formed from the pres. part. by changing *ant* into the subjoined terminations:—)\*

(Plural terminations common to the four conjugations.)

\* But verbs in *avoir* change *oient* into *oivent* in the third person plural indicative present, and into *oive*, *oives*, *oive*, *oivent*, in the subjunctive present. The imperative also makes *oive*, *oivent*.

Terminations common to the first and second conjugations, as in *parler*, *ouvrir*.

Terminations belonging to the fourth conjugation, as in *vaincre*.

Terminations belonging to the fourth conjugation, as in *rendre*.

Terminations common to the second and fourth conjugations, as in *sentir*, *tenir*, *peindre*.

Terminations common to the second and fourth conjugations, as *vêtir*, *mettre*, *battre*.

Terminations common to the second, third, and fourth conjugations, as in *finir*, *recevoir*, *dire*.

Terminations belonging to the third conjugation, as in *pouvoir*, *vouloir*, *valoir*.

Terminations common to all four conjugations.

Terminations belonging to the first conj., as in *parler*.

Terminations common to the second, third, and fourth conjugations, as in *finir*, *voir*, *rendre*.

Terminations belonging to the second conjugation, as in *tenir*, *venir*.

Terminations common to the third and fourth conjugations, as in *recevoir*, *croire*.

Terminations common to all four conjugations.

Terminations common to all four conjugations.

Terminations common to all four conjugations.

Terminations belonging to the first conjugation.

Terminations common to the second, third, and fourth conjugations, as in *finir*, *voir*, *rendre*.

## TERMINATIONS OF FRENCH VERBS.

|                     |   |                                                                    |                                                                                                                                                                                                                   |                                                                                                                           |  |
|---------------------|---|--------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--|
| Subj. Imperfect. a. | { | —insse†, —inssea, —înt,                                            | —inssions, —inssiez, —inssent.                                                                                                                                                                                    | Terminations common to the second conjugation, as in <i>tenir, venir</i> .                                                |  |
|                     |   | —usset, —ussez, —ût,                                               | —ussions, —ussiez, —ussent.                                                                                                                                                                                       |                                                                                                                           |  |
| Imperat. n.         | { | —e, —e,                                                            | The imperative is formed from the Ind. pres., by omitting the pronouns <i>je, nous, vous</i> , but has no first person singular.<br>—ons*, —ez*, —ent*.<br>(Plural terminations common to all four conjugations.) | Terminations common to the third and fourth conjugations, as in <i>recevoir, boire</i> .                                  |  |
|                     |   | —a, —e,                                                            |                                                                                                                                                                                                                   | Terminations common to the first and second conjugations, as in <i>parler, ouvrir</i> .                                   |  |
|                     |   | The third person sing. and plur. are like the subjunctive present. |                                                                                                                                                                                                                   | Terminations common to the second, third, and fourth conjugations, as in <i>finir, recevoir, rendre, &amp;c., &amp;c.</i> |  |
|                     |   |                                                                    |                                                                                                                                                                                                                   |                                                                                                                           |  |

## OBSERVATIONS.

Verbs ending in *ger*, as *manger*, preserve the *e* before terminations commencing with *a* or *o*; as, *mangeant, je mangeais, nous mangeons*.

In verbs ending in *cer*, as *avancer*, the soft sound is indicated by placing a cedilla (,) under the *c* whenever it is followed by *a* or *o*; as, *avançant, j'avancais, nous avançons*.

In verbs ending in *eler, eter*, as *appeler, jeter*, the *l* and *t* are doubled before *e* mute; as, *j'appelle, je jette*; but they are not doubled when the *e* which follows them is sounded, as in *il appela, ils appellèrent*.

In verbs ending in *éter, éler*, the letters *t* and *l* are never doubled, but the acute accent is changed into the grave (') accent before any termination commencing with an *e* mute; as, *révéler, il révélâ, nous révélâmes*.

In the same manner verbs having in their root a silent *e* or an accented *é* require the grave accent when followed by a termination containing an *e* mute; as, *enlever, j'enlevai; espérer, j'espérai*.

Verbs ending in *ger* having an accented *é* in the root are the only ones that preserve the acute accent; as, *protéger, il protége, il protégea, ils protégèrent*.

Verbs ending in *oyer, uyer*, change the *y* into *i* before *e* mute; as, *envoyer, j'envoie, ils envoient, j'appuierai, nous appuierons*.

Verbs of which the present participle ends in *yant* change the *y* into *i* before an *e* mute; as, *fuir, fuyant, ils fuient, que je fuie, fuyez*.

In verbs ending in *ayer, eyer*, the *y* is generally preserved under similar circumstances; as, *payer, je paye, je payerai or je paierai, &c., &c.*

Whenever the participle present, *ant*, of any verb is preceded by *y* or *t*, as, *payer, payant, prier, priant*, the first and second persons plural of the imperfect of the indicative and the present of the subjunctive, require an additional *i*; as, *que nous priions, que vous priiez, nous payions, vous payiez*.

*Bénir* has two past participles, *béni bénie*, and *bénit, bénite*; the latter refers to consecrated things, as, *une chapelle bénite*, a consecrated place; *une entreprise bénie de Dieu*, an undertaking blessed by God.

*Fleurir*. When this verb means to flourish instead of to blossom, its participle present is *florissant*, and its imperfect *florissait*; as, *une ville florissante*, a flourishing city; *cette ville florissait*.

The verb *resoudre*, meaning to resolve, to determine, makes in the past participle *resolu*, and when it means to resolve into, to change into, it makes *resous* without a feminine.

# TERMINATIONS OF FRENCH VERBS.

xxi

## TABLE OF THE PRIMITIVE TENSES OF THE FOUR REGULAR CONJUGATIONS.

### First Conjugation.

| INFINITIVE.      | PARTICIPLES. |       | INDICATIVE. |                    |
|------------------|--------------|-------|-------------|--------------------|
| Present.         | Present.     | Past. | Present.    | Preterit definite. |
| Parler, to speak | Parlant      | Parlé | Je parle    | Je parlai.         |

### Second Conjugation.

|                        |              |          |              |                 |
|------------------------|--------------|----------|--------------|-----------------|
| Punir, to punish       | Punissant    | Puni     | Je punis     | Je punis.       |
| Sentir, to feel, smell | Sentant      | Senti    | Je sens      | Je sentis.      |
| Mentir, to lie         | Mentant      | Menti    | Je mens      | Je mentis.      |
| Se repentir, to repent | Se repentant | Repenti  | Je me repens | Je me repentis. |
| Partir, to set out     | Partant      | Parti    | Je pars      | Je partis.      |
| Sortir, to go out      | Sortant      | Sorti    | Je sors      | Je sortis.      |
| Dormir, to sleep       | Dormant      | Dormi    | Je dors      | Je dormis.      |
| Servir, to serve       | Servant      | Servi    | Je sers      | Je servis.      |
| Ouvrir, to open        | Ouvrant      | Ouvert   | J'ouvre      | J'ouvris.       |
| Couvrir, to cover      | Couvrant     | Couvert  | Je couvre    | Je couvris.     |
| Offrir, to offer       | Offrant      | Offert   | J'offre      | J'offris.       |
| Souffrir, to suffer    | Souffrant    | Souffert | Je souffre   | Je souffris.    |

## TERMINATIONS OF FRENCH VERBS.

## Third Conjugation.

| INFINITIVE.                            | PARTICIPLES.       |            | INDICATIVE.          |                      |
|----------------------------------------|--------------------|------------|----------------------|----------------------|
| Present.                               | Present.           | Past.      | Present.             | Preterit definite.   |
| Recevoir, to receive<br>Devoir, to owe | Recevant<br>Devant | Reçu<br>Dû | Je reçois<br>Je dois | Je reçus.<br>Je dus. |

## Fourth Conjugation.

|                        |             |          |            |               |
|------------------------|-------------|----------|------------|---------------|
| Répandre, to spill     | Répandant   | Répandu  | Je répands | Je répandis.  |
| Rendre, to restore     | Rendant     | Rendu    | Je rends   | Je rendis.    |
| Fondre, to melt        | Fondant     | Fondu    | Je fonds   | Je fondis.    |
| Répondre, to answer    | Répondant   | Répondu  | Je réponds | Je répondis.  |
| Tondre, to shear       | Tondant     | Tondu    | Je tonds   | Je tondis.    |
| Perdre, to lose        | Perdant     | Perdu    | Je perds   | Je perdis.    |
| Mordre, to bite        | Mordant     | Mordu    | Je mords   | Je mordis.    |
| Tordre, to twist       | Tordant     | Tordu    | Je tords   | Je tordis.    |
| Plaire, to please      | Plaisant    | Plu      | Je plais   | Je plus.      |
| Taire, to be silent    | Taisant     | Tu       | Je tais    | Je tus.       |
| Paraître, to appear    | Paraissant  | Paru     | Je parais  | Je parus.     |
| Croître, to grow       | Croissant   | Crû      | Je crois   | Je crus.      |
| Connaître, to know     | Connaissant | Connu    | Je connais | Je connus.    |
| Repaitre, to feed      | Repaissant  | Repu     | Je repais  | Je repus.     |
| Réduire, to reduce     | Réduisant   | Réduit   | Je réduis  | Je réduisis.  |
| Instruire, to instruct | Instruisant | Instruit | J'instruis | J'instruisis. |
| Craindre, to fear      | Craignant   | Crain    | Je crains  | Je craignis.  |
| Peindre, to paint      | Peignant    | Peint    | Je peins   | Je peignis.   |
| Joindre, to join       | Joignant    | Joint    | Je joins   | Je joignis.   |

# TABLE OF FRENCH IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS.

## First Conjugation.

| INFINITIVE.             | PARTICIPLES. |        | INDICATIVE. |              |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                              |
|-------------------------|--------------|--------|-------------|--------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
|                         | Present.     | Past.  | Present.    | Prot. defin. |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                              |
| Aller, <i>to go</i>     | Allant       | Allé   | Je vais     | J'allai.     | <i>Present of the indicative.</i> Je vais, tu vas, il va, nous allons, vous allez, ils vont.— <i>Fut.</i> J'irai, tu iras, &c.— <i>Cond.</i> J'irais, tu irais, &c.— <i>Imper.</i> Va, allez, allez.— <i>Pres. subj.</i> Que j'aile, que tu ailles, qu'il aille, que nous allions, que vous alliez, qu'ils aillent.<br><i>Fut.</i> J'enverrai, tu enverras, &c.— <i>Cond.</i> J'enverrais, tu enverrais, &c. |
| Envoyer, <i>to send</i> | Envoyant     | Envoyé | J'envoie    | J'envoyai.   |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                              |

## Second Conjugation.

|                                |             |          |               |               |                                                                                     |
|--------------------------------|-------------|----------|---------------|---------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Fleurir, <i>to blossom</i>     | Fleurissant | Fleuri   | Je fleuris    | Je fleuris.   | —                                                                                   |
| Haïr, <i>to hate</i>           | Haïssant    | Haï      | Je haïs       | Je haïs.      | —                                                                                   |
| Gésir,* <i>to lie</i>          | Gisant      | —        | Il git        | —             | —                                                                                   |
| Bouillir, <i>to boil</i>       | Bouillant   | Bouilli  | Je bous       | Je bouillis.  | —                                                                                   |
| Ebouillir, <i>to boil away</i> | —           | Ebouilli | —             | —             | —                                                                                   |
| Courir, <i>to run</i>          | Courant     | Couru    | Je cours      | Je cours.     | <i>Fut.</i> Je courrai, tu courras, &c.— <i>Cond.</i> Je courrais, tu courrais, &c. |
| Faillir, <i>to fail</i>        | Faillant*   | Failli   | Je faux*      | Je faillis.   |                                                                                     |
| Défaillir, <i>to faint</i>     | —           | Défailli | Nous défail-  | Je défaillis. |                                                                                     |
| Fuir, <i>to run away</i>       | Fuyant      | Fui      | Je fuis [lons | Je fuis.      |                                                                                     |

\* The forms marked with an asterisk are obsolete.

## FRENCH IRREGULAR VERBS.

## Second Conjugation—(continued).

| INFINITIVE.                              | PARTICIPLES. |            | INDICATIVE.   |                 |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  |
|------------------------------------------|--------------|------------|---------------|-----------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
|                                          | Present.     | Past.      | Present.      | Prot. defn.     |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  |
| Mourir, <i>to die</i>                    | Mourant      | Mort       | Je meurs      | Je mourus.      | <p><i>Fut.</i> Je mourrai, tu mourras, &amp;c. — <i>Cond.</i> Je mourrais, tu mourrais, &amp;c. — <i>Pres. subjunct.</i> Que je meure, que tu meures, qu'il meure, <i>que nous mourions, que vous mouriez, qu'ils meurent.</i></p> <p><i>Pres. ind.</i> J'acquies, tu acquies, il acquies, nous acquies, vous acquies, ils acquies. — <i>Fut.</i> J'acquies, tu acquies, &amp;c. — <i>Cond.</i> J'acquies, tu acquies, &amp;c. — <i>Pres. subj.</i> Que j'acquies, que tu acquies, qu'il acquies, <i>que nous acquies, que vous acquies, qu'ils acquies.</i></p> |
| Acquies, <i>to acquies</i>               | Acquies      | Acquis     | J'acquies     | J'acquies.      |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  |
| Conquies, <i>to conquer</i>              | Conquies     | Conquis    | Je conquies   | Je conquies.    | <p>—</p> <p>—</p> <p>—</p> <p>—</p> <p>—</p> <p>—</p>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                            |
| Ouir, <i>to hear</i>                     | Oyant*       | Ouï        | —             | J'ouï.          |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  |
| Vêtir, <i>to clothe</i>                  | Vêtant       | Vêtu       | Je vêts       | Je vêtis.       | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |
| Cueillir, <i>to gather</i>               | Cueillant    | Cueilli    | Je cueille    | Je cueillis.    | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |
| Saillir, <i>to project, to gush out</i>  | Saillant     | Sailli     | Il saille     | Il saillit.     | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |
| Tressaillir, <i>to start, to shudder</i> | Tressaillant | Tressailli | Je tressaille | Je tressaillis. | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |
| Tenir, <i>to hold</i>                    | Tenant       | Tenu       | Je tiens      | Je tins.        | <p><i>Pres. ind.</i> Je tiens, tu tiens, il tient, nous tenons, vous tenez, ils tiennent. — <i>Fut.</i> Je tiendrai, tu tiendras, &amp;c. — <i>Cond.</i> Je tiendrais, tu tiendrais, &amp;c. — <i>Pres. subj.</i> Que je tiens, que tu tiens, qu'il tiens, <i>que nous tenions, que vous teniez, qu'ils tiennent.</i></p>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                        |

\* The forms marked with an asterisk are obsolete.

# FRENCH IRREGULAR VERBS.

xiv

## Second Conjugation—(continued).

| INFINITIVE.           | PARTICIPLES. |       | INDICATIVE. |              |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                        |
|-----------------------|--------------|-------|-------------|--------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
|                       | Present.     | Past. | Present.    | Pret. defin. |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                        |
| Venir, <i>to come</i> | Venant       | Venu  | Je viens    | Je vins.     | <i>Pres. ind.</i> Je viens, tu viens, il vient, <i>nous venons, vous venez</i> , ils viennent.— <i>Fut.</i> Je viendrai, tu viendras, &c.— <i>Cond.</i> Je viendrais, tu viendrais, &c.— <i>Present subj.</i> Que je vienne, que tu viennes, qu'il vienne, <i>que nous venions, que vous veniez</i> , qu'ils viennent. |

## Third Conjugation.

|                                       |          |       |            |             |                                                                                                                                                                                                                         |
|---------------------------------------|----------|-------|------------|-------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Avoir, <i>to have</i>                 | Ayant    | Eu    | J'ai       | J'eus.      | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                       |
| Ravoir, <i>to have again</i>          | —        | —     | —          | —           | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                       |
| Choir, <i>to fall</i>                 | —        | Chu   | —          | —           | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                       |
| Déchoir, <i>to decay</i>              | —        | Déchu | Je déchois | Je déchus.  | <i>Fut.</i> Je décherrai, tu décherras, &c.— <i>Cond.</i> Je décherrais, tu décherrais, &c.<br><i>Fut.</i> J'écherrai, tu écherras, &c.— <i>Cond.</i> J'écherrais, tu écherrais, &c.                                    |
| Echoir, <i>to fall, to become due</i> | Echéant  | Echu  | Il échoit  | J'échus.    |                                                                                                                                                                                                                         |
| Falloir, <i>to be necessary</i>       | —        | Fallu | Il faut    | Il fallut.  | <i>Fut.</i> Il faudra.— <i>Cond.</i> Il faudrait.— <i>Pres. subj.</i> Qu'il faille.                                                                                                                                     |
| Mouvoir, <i>to move</i>               | Mouvant  | Mu    | Je meus    | Je mus.     | <i>Pres. ind.</i> Je meus, tu meus, il meut, <i>nous mouvons, vous mouvez</i> , ils meuvent.— <i>Pres. subj.</i> Que je meuve, que tu meuves, qu'il meuve, <i>que nous mouvions, que vous mouviez</i> , qu'ils meuvent. |
| Promouvoir, <i>to promote</i>         | —        | Promu | —          | Je promus.* |                                                                                                                                                                                                                         |
| Pleuvoir, <i>to rain</i>              | Pleuvant | Plu   | Il pleut   | Il plut.    | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                       |

\* The forms marked with an asterisk are obsolete.



## FRENCH IRREGULAR VERBS.

## Third Conjugation—(continued).

| INFINITIVE.                               | PARTICIPLES. |        | INDICATIVE.              |             |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
|-------------------------------------------|--------------|--------|--------------------------|-------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
|                                           | Present.     | Past.  | Present.                 | Prot. defn. |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
| Pouvoir, <i>to be able</i>                | Pouvant      | Pu     | Je puis                  | Je pus.     | <p><i>Pres. ind.</i> Je peux or je puis, tu peux, il peut, nous pouvons, vous pouvez, ils peuvent.—<i>Fut.</i> Je pourrai, tu pourras, &amp;c.—<i>Cond.</i> Je pourrais, tu pourrais, &amp;c.—<i>Pres. subj.</i> Que je puisse, que tu puisses, &amp;c.</p> <p><i>Pres. ind.</i> Je sais, tu sais, il sait, nous savons, vous savez, ils savent.—<i>Imperf. ind.</i> Je savais, tu savais, &amp;c.—<i>Fut.</i> J'aurai, tu auras, &amp;c.—<i>Cond.</i> Je saurais, tu saurais, &amp;c.—<i>Imp.</i> Sache, sachez, sachez, ils savaient, &amp;c.—<i>Fut.</i> Il saura, ils sauront, &amp;c.—<i>Cond.</i> Il saurait, ils sauraient, &amp;c.</p> <p><i>Sub.</i> Qu'il sache, qu'ils sachent, &amp;c.</p> <p><i>Pres. ind.</i> Je m'assieds, tu t'assieds, il s'assied, nous nous asseyons, vous vous asseyez, ils s'assiedent.—<i>Fut.</i> Je m'assiérai, tu t'assiéras, &amp;c.—<i>We may also say:</i> je m'asseierai, tu t'asseieras, &amp;c.—<i>Cond.</i> Je m'assiérais, tu t'assiérais, &amp;c.—<i>Also:</i> je m'asseiera, &amp;c.</p> <p>—</p> <p><i>Fut.</i> Je verrai, tu verras, &amp;c.—<i>Cond.</i> Je verrais, tu verrais, &amp;c.</p> <p>—</p> <p><i>Pres. ind.</i> Je vaudrais, tu vaudrais, il vaudrait, nous vaudrions, vous vaudriez, ils vaudraient.—<i>Fut.</i> Je vaudrai, tu vaudras, &amp;c.—<i>Cond.</i> Je vaudrais, tu vaudrais, &amp;c.—<i>No Imperative.</i>—<i>Pres. subj.</i> Que je vaille, que tu vailles, qu'il vaille, que nous valions, que vous valiez, qu'ils valaient.</p> |
| Savoir, <i>to know</i>                    | Sachant      | Su     | Je sais                  | Je sus.     |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
| Seoir*, <i>to become, fit</i>             | Seyant       | —      | { Il sied, ils<br>sient. | —           |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
| Seoir*, <i>to sit</i>                     | Séant        | Sis    |                          | —           |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
| Asseoir, <i>to sit down</i>               | Asseyant     | Assis  | J'assieds                | J'assis.    |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
| Surseoir, <i>to suspend, to supersede</i> | —            | Sursis | Je sursois               | Je sursis.  |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
| Voir, <i>to see</i>                       | Voyant       | Vu     | Je vois                  | Je vis.     |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
| Prévoir, <i>to foresee</i>                | Prévoyant    | Prévu  | Je prévois               | Je prévis.  |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
| Pourvoir, <i>to provide</i>               | Pourvoyant   | Pourvu | Je pourvois              | Je pourvus. |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
| Valoir, <i>to be worth</i>                | Valant       | Valu   | Je vaudrais              | Je valus.   |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |

\* The forms marked with an asterisk are almost obsolete.

# FRENCH IRREGULAR VERBS.

## Third Conjugation—(continued).

XIV

| INFINITIVE.            | PARTICIPLES. |       | INDICATIVE. |              |
|------------------------|--------------|-------|-------------|--------------|
|                        | Present.     | Past. | Present.    | Pres. défin. |
| Vouloir, to be willing | Voulant      | Voulu | Je veux     | Je voulais.  |

*Prévaloir* like *valoir*, except in the pres. subj., in which it makes, *que je prévaille, que tu prévailles, qu'il prévaille, que nous prévalions, que vous prévaliez, qu'ils prévalent.*  
*Pres. ind.* Je veux, tu veux, il veut, nous voulons, vous voulez, ils veulent. — *Fut.* Je voudrai, tu voudras, &c.—*Cond.* Je voudrais, tu voudrais, &c.—*No Imperative.*—*Pres. subj.* Que je veuille, que tu veuilles, qu'il veuille, que nous voulions, que vous vouliez, qu'ils veuillent.

## Fourth Conjugation.

|                                |            |                |           |             |
|--------------------------------|------------|----------------|-----------|-------------|
| Soudre, to solve               | Solvant    | —              | Je résous | —           |
| Résoudre, to resolve           | Résolvant  | Résous, résolu | —         | Je résolus. |
| Absoudre, to absolve           | Absolvant  | Absous         | J'absous  | —           |
| Dissoudre, to dissolve         | Dissolvant | Dissous        | —         | —           |
| Coudre, to sew                 | Cousant    | Cousu          | Je couds  | Je cousis.  |
| Soudre, to gush from the earth | —          | —              | Il sourd  | —           |
| Mettre, to put                 | Mettant    | Mis            | Je mets   | Je mis.     |
| Moudre, to grind               | Moulant    | Moulu          | Je mouds  | Je moulus.  |
| Prendre, to take               | Prenant    | Pris           | Je prends | Je pris.    |
| Rompre, to break               | Rompant    | Rompu          | Je romps  | Je rompis.  |

*Pres. ind.* Je prends, tu prends, il prend, nous prenons, vous prenez, ils prennent.—*Pres. subj.* Que je prenne, que tu prennes, qu'il prenne, que nous prenions, que vous preniez, qu'ils prennent  
*Pres. ind.* Il rompt

## FRENCH IRREGULAR VERBS.

## Fourth Conjugation—(continued).

| INFINITIVE.                         | PARTICIPLES. |           | INDICATIVE.  |                |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  |
|-------------------------------------|--------------|-----------|--------------|----------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
|                                     | Present.     | Past.     | Present.     | Prot. defin.   |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  |
| Suivre, <i>to follow</i>            | Suivant      | Suivi     | Je suis      | Je suivis.     | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |
| S'ensuivre, <i>to follow</i>        | S'ensuivant  | Ensuiwi   | Il s'ensuit  | Il s'ensuivit. | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |
| Vaincre, <i>to conquer</i>          | Vainquant    | Vaincu    | Je vaincs    | Je vainquis.   | { Pres. ind. Je vaincs, tu vaincs, il vaine, nous vainquons, vous vainquez, ils vainquent.                                                                                                                                                                                       |
| Battre, <i>to beat</i>              | Battant      | Battu     | Je bats      | Je battis.     | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |
| Etre, <i>to be</i>                  | Etant        | Eté       | Je suis      | Je fus.        | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |
| Vivre, <i>to live</i>               | Vivant       | Vécu      | Je vis       | Je vécus.      | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |
| Braire, <i>to bray</i>              | —            | —         | Il brait     | —              | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |
| Faire, <i>to do, make</i>           | Faisant      | Fait      | Je fais      | Je fis.        | { Pres. ind. Je fais, tu fais, il fait, nous faisons, vous faites, ils font.—Fut. Je ferai, tu feras, &c.—Cond. Je ferais, tu ferais, &c.—Pres. subj. Que je fasse, que tu fasses, &c.—Contrefaire, défaire, refaire, surfaire and satisfaire are conjugated in the same manner. |
| Traire, <i>to milk</i>              | Trayant      | Trait     | Je traie     | —              | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |
| Naître, <i>to be born</i>           | Naissant     | Né        | Je nais      | Je naquis.     | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |
| Renaitre, <i>to be born again</i>   | Renaissant   | —         | Je renais    | Je renaquis.   | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |
| Paitre, <i>to feed</i>              | Paissant     | Pu        | Je pais      | —              | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |
| Bruire, <i>to roar</i>              | Bruyant      | —         | —            | —              | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |
| Luire, <i>to shine</i>              | Luisant      | Lui       | Je luis      | —              | Bruire has only il bruyait, ils bruyaient.                                                                                                                                                                                                                                       |
| Nuire, <i>to hurt</i>               | Nuisant      | Nui       | Je nuis      | Je nuisis.     | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |
| Confire, <i>to preserve, pickle</i> | Confisant    | Confit    | Je confis    | Je confis.     | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |
| Suffire, <i>to suffice</i>          | Suffisant    | Suffi     | Je suffis    | Je suffis.     | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |
| Circoncire, <i>to circumcise</i>    | Circoncisant | Circoncis | Je circoncis | Je circoncis.  | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |

# FRENCH IRREGULAR VERBS.

xxix

## Fourth Conjugation—(continued).

| INDICATIVE.             | PARTICIPLES. |               | INDICATIVE. |              |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                         |
|-------------------------|--------------|---------------|-------------|--------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Present.                | Present.     | Past.         | Present.    | Pret. défin. |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                         |
| Dire, to say, tell      | Disant       | Dit           | Je dis      | Je dis.      | <p><i>Pres. ind. Je dis, tu dis, il dit, nous disons, vous dites, ils disent.—Dédire, contredire, interdire, médire, prédire, make : vous dédisez, vous contredisez, vous médisez, vous prédisiez.—The other persons and tenses are conjugated like dire.</i></p> <p>—</p> <p>—</p> <p>—</p> <p>—</p> <p>—</p> <p>—</p> |
| Médire, to slander      | Médisant     | Médit         | Je médis    | Je médis.    |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                         |
| Maudire, to curse       | Maudissant   | Maudit        | Je maudis   | Je maudis.   |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                         |
| Ecrire, to write        | Ecrivant     | Ecrit         | J'écris     | J'écrivis.   |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                         |
| Lire, to read           | Lisant       | Lu            | Je lis      | Je lus.      |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                         |
| Rire, to laugh          | Riant        | Ri            | Je ris      | Je ris.      |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                         |
| Frيره, to fry           | —            | Frit          | Je fris     | —            | —                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                       |
| Boire, to drink         | Buvant       | Bu            | Je bois     | Je bus.      | <p><i>Pres. ind. Je bois, tu bois, il boit, nous buvons, vous buvez, ils boivent.—Pres. subj. Que je boive, que tu boives, qu'il boive, que nous buvions, que vous buviez, qu'ils boivent.</i></p> <p>—</p> <p>—</p> <p>—</p> <p>—</p> <p>—</p> <p>—</p>                                                                |
| Clore, clorre, to close | —            | Clos          | Je clos     | —            |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                         |
| Conclude, to conclude   | Concluant    | Conclu        | Je conclus  | Je conclus.  |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                         |
| Exclure, to exclude     | Excluant     | Exclu, exclus | J'exclus    | J'exclus.    |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                         |
| Croire, to believe      | Croyant      | Cru           | Je crois    | Je crus.     |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                         |
| Poindre, to dawn        | —            | —             | Il point    | —            |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                         |

# TERMINATIONS OF ITALIAN VERBS.

In Italian there are three conjugations. Verbs ending in *are* belong to the 1st, in *ere* long and *ere* short to the 2nd, and verbs in *ire* belong to the 3rd. The following terminations must be added to the root of the verb to form the different moods and tenses:—

## THE THREE REGULAR CONJUGATIONS.

### First Conjugation, —are.

| Ind. Present. | Imperfect. | Preterit. | Future. | Conditional. | Imperative. | Present Subj. | Imp. Subj. | Infinitive. |
|---------------|------------|-----------|---------|--------------|-------------|---------------|------------|-------------|
| —o            | —áva, —o   | —ái       | —erò    | —eréi        | —           | —i            | —ási       | —áre.       |
| —i            | —ávi       | —ásti     | —erái   | —erésti      | —a          | —i            | —ási       | —ánda.      |
| —a            | —áva       | —ò        | —erà    | —erébbe      | —i          | —i            | —ási       | —áto.       |
| —iámo         | —avámo     | —ámmo     | —erémo  | —erémmo      | —iámo       | —iámo         | —ássimo    | —           |
| —áte          | —aváte     | —áste     | —eréte  | —eréste      | —áte        | —iáte         | —áste      | —           |
| —ano          | —ávano     | —árono    | —eránno | —erébbero    | —ino        | —ino          | —ássero    | —           |

### Second Conjugation, —ere.

|       |          |                 |         |           |       |       |         |        |
|-------|----------|-----------------|---------|-----------|-------|-------|---------|--------|
| —o    | —éva, —o | —éi, —étti      | —erò    | —eréi     | —     | —a    | —ési    | —ere.  |
| —i    | —évi     | —ésti           | —erái   | —erésti   | —i    | —a    | —ési    | —énda. |
| —e    | —éva     | —è, —étte       | —erà    | —erébbe   | —a    | —a    | —ési    | —éto.  |
| —iámo | —evámo   | —émmo           | —erémo  | —erémmo   | —iámo | —iámo | —éssimo | —      |
| —éte  | —eváte   | —éste           | —eréte  | —eréste   | —éte  | —iáte | —éste   | —      |
| —ono  | —évano   | —érono, —ettero | —eránno | —erébbero | —ano  | —ano  | —éssero | —      |

### Third Conjugation, —ire.

|                        |          |        |         |           |                        |                        |         |        |
|------------------------|----------|--------|---------|-----------|------------------------|------------------------|---------|--------|
| —o, —isco <sup>1</sup> | —íva, —o | —íi    | —irò    | —iréi     | —                      | —a, —isca <sup>1</sup> | —íssi   | —íre.  |
| —i, —isci              | —íví     | —ísti  | —irái   | —irésti   | —i, —isci <sup>1</sup> | —a, —isca              | —íssi   | —éndo. |
| —e, —isce              | —íva     | —ì     | —irà    | —irébbe   | —a, —isca              | —a, —isca              | —íssi   | —íto.  |
| —iámo                  | —ivámo   | —ímmo  | —irémo  | —irémmo   | —iámo                  | —iámo                  | —íssimo | —      |
| —íte                   | —iváte   | —íste  | —iréte  | —iréste   | —íte                   | —iáte                  | —íste   | —      |
| —ono, —iscono          | —ívano   | —írono | —iránno | —irébbero | —ano, —iscano          | —ano, —iscano          | —íssero | —      |

The compound tenses are formed by adding the past participle to the tenses of the auxiliary verbs.

In verbs ending in *care* and *gare* an *h* is to be put before all the terminations beginning with *e* or *i* to harden the sound of the *c* and *g*; as, *toccare, tocco, tocchi, toccherò*.

Verbs ending in *ciare, giare* lose the *i* in the future and conditional; as, *mangiare, cacciare*; *mangerò, mangerei*, and *cuccerò, caccerei*.

Verbs ending in *gliare*; as *pigliare*, drop the *i* belonging to the root of the verb before the terminations commencing with *i*, as *pigli-a*, *pigl-i*, and not *pigli-i*.

<sup>1</sup> See List of Verbs in —ire, page xxxvii. All verbs in —ire are long, corresponding with the fourth conjugation in Latin.

# ITALIAN IRREGULAR VERBS.

xx

## OBSERVATIONS.

1. All the following verbs have the accent of Prosody indicated.
2. All persons not contained in the following tables are regularly formed.
3. The preterit is formed in the following manner: the third singular from the first by changing the *i* into *e*, and the third person plural *t* adding *ro* to the third singular. Ex.: *Arei, aree, arsero.*
4. Compound verbs are conjugated as their primitives.
5. All verbs which are irregular in the present indicative are so in the imperative and subjunctive present.
6. The verbs marked with an asterisk (\*), and reflective verbs, are conjugated with the verb *essere*.

## IRREGULAR VERBS.

### First Conjugation, —are.

The first conjugation has only four irregular verbs: *andare, dare, fare, and stare.*

| INFINITIVE.                            | GERUND.   | PART. | INDICATIVE PRESENT.                                   | PRETERIT.                                       | IMPERATIVE.                    | SUBJUNCTIVE.                            |
|----------------------------------------|-----------|-------|-------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------|-----------------------------------------|
| *And-äre, to go }<br>(1.) <sup>2</sup> | ándo      | —ito  | { vo, vado, vái, va<br>— — — — —<br>vanno             | — — —<br>— — —<br>— — —                         | ... va, váda<br>— — —<br>— — — | váda, — váda, — váda.<br>— — —<br>— — — |
| D-äre, to give }<br>(2.)               | —ando     | —ito  | { — —ái, —<br>— — — — —<br>—anno                      | —étti, —ésti, —étte<br>—émmo, —éste, —étero     | ... — — —<br>— — —<br>— — —    | —ia, — — —<br>— — —<br>— — —            |
| F-äre, to do, to }<br>make (3.)        | —acendo   | —atto | { —o, —<br>—accio, —ái, —<br>—acciamo, — — —<br>—anno | —éci, —acésti, —éce<br>—acémmo, —acéste, —écero | ... — — —<br>— — —<br>— — —    | —accia, — — —<br>— — —<br>— — —         |
| *St-äre, to remain                     | See D-arc | —     | —                                                     | —                                               | —                              | —                                       |

### Second Conjugation, —ere and —ire.

|                                                   |          |                     |                                                  |                                                 |                                               |                                      |
|---------------------------------------------------|----------|---------------------|--------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| Addú-ere, ad-<br>dú-rré, to bring<br>forward (4.) | —cendo   | addóto              | { —co, —ci, —ce<br>—ciamo, —cete, —cono          | —ssi, —césti, —sse<br>—cémmo, —céste, —ssero    | ... —ci, —ca<br>—ciamo, —cete, —cano          | —ca, — — —<br>—ciamo, —ciate, —cano. |
| B-ère, to drink }<br>(5.)                         | —cendo   | —eváto <sup>3</sup> | { —éo, —éi, —ée<br>—eiamo, —eete, —éono          | —évvi, —césti, —évve<br>—eémmo, —céste, —évvero | ... —éi, —éa<br>—eiamo, —eete, —éano          | —éa, — — —<br>—eiamo, —ciate, —éano  |
| Cógli-ere, to<br>gather (6.)                      | —        | cólto               | { cóigo, cógli<br>— — — — —<br>—cogono           | cólai, — — cólise<br>— — — — —<br>—cólsero      | ... cógli, cólga<br>— — — — —<br>—cogano      | cólga, — — —<br>— — — — —<br>—cogano |
| Dol-ère, to com-<br>plain (7.)                    | Reflect. | —                   | { —go, duóli, duóle<br>—dogliamo, — — —<br>—gono | —ái, — — —<br>— — — — —<br>—sero                | ... duóli, — — —<br>—dogliamo, — — —<br>—gono | — — — — —<br>— — — — —<br>— — — — —  |

<sup>2</sup> See references to figures 1, 2, 3, 4, &c., page xxxix.

<sup>3</sup> Bere is regular.

# ITALIAN IRREGULAR VERBS.

## Second Conjugation, —ere and —ire—(continued).

| ITIVE.                                          | GERUND. | PART.               | INDICATIVE PRESENT.                                  | PRETERIT.                                                        | IMPERATIVE.                             | SUBJUNCTIVE.                                                              |                                                                           |
|-------------------------------------------------|---------|---------------------|------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>to owe</i> }                                 | —       | —                   | { dévo, dévi, déve<br>dobbiamo, —, débbono           | — — —                                                            | ... dévi, débba<br>dobbiamo, —, débbono | débba, débba, débba,<br>dobbiamo, —, débbono, débba, débba, débba         |                                                                           |
| <i>to lie</i> }                                 | —       | —luto               | { —cio, —, —ciono<br>—ciamo, —, —ciamo               | —qui, —, —que<br>—quero                                          | ... —cia<br>—ciammo, —, —ciammo         | —cia, —cia, —cia,<br>—ciammo, —, —ciammo, —cia, —cia, —cia                |                                                                           |
| <i>re, to ap-<br/>r</i> (9.) }                  | —       | { —so<br>—so        | { páio, —, —páiono<br>paiamo, —, —paiamo             | —vi, —, —ve<br>—vero                                             | ... páia<br>paiamo, —, —paiamo          | páia, páia, páia,<br>paiamo, —, —paiamo, páia, páia, páia                 |                                                                           |
| <i>re, pónere,<br/>place, to put</i><br>(10.) } | —néndo  | —sto                | { —ngo, —ni, —ne<br>—níamo, —néte, —ngono            | —si, —nésti, —se<br>—némmo, —néste, —sero                        | ... —ni, —nga<br>—níamo, —néte, —ngano  | —nga, —nga, —nga,<br>—níamo, —néte, —néte, —níamo, —néte, —néte           |                                                                           |
| <i>to be able</i><br>(11.) }                    | —       | —                   | { pòsso, puóí, puó<br>possiamo, —, —possiamo         | — — —                                                            | ... — — —<br>— — —                      | pòssa, pòssa, pòssa,<br>possiamo, —, —possiamo, possiamo, —, —possiamo    |                                                                           |
| <i>Riman-ère, to<br/>remain</i> (12.) }         | —       | { rimáso<br>rimasto | { —ngo, —ni, —ne<br>—níamo, —néte, —ngono            | rimási, —, rimási<br>rimásero                                    | ... —ga<br>—gano                        | —ga, —ga, —ga,<br>— — —, — — —, — — —                                     |                                                                           |
| <i>to know</i><br>(13.) }                       | —       | —                   | { so, sái, sa<br>—piamo, —, —piamo                   | séppi, —, séppe<br>séppero                                       | ... —pi, —pia<br>—piamo, —piate, —piamo | —pia, —pia, —pia,<br>—piamo, —piate, —piate, —piate, —piate               |                                                                           |
| <i>to sit<br/>down</i> }                        | —       | —                   | { séggo, siédi, siéde<br>— — —, — — —                | — — —                                                            | ... siédi, ségga<br>— — —               | ségga, —, ségga,<br>— — —, — — —, — — —                                   |                                                                           |
| <i>to be<br/>accustomed</i> }                   | —       | —lito               | { sòglio, suóli, suóle<br>sogliamo, —, —sogliamo     | All other tenses are conjugated with essere and the past solito. |                                         |                                                                           | sòglio, sòglio, sòglio,<br>sogliamo, —, —sogliamo, sogliamo, —, —sogliamo |
| <i>to unroot</i> }                              | —       | —vélito             | { avéigo, —, —avéigono<br>— — —, — — —               | avéiai, —, avéiao<br>avéiasero                                   | ... —avéiga<br>avéigano                 | avéiga, avéiga, avéiga,<br>— — —, — — —, — — —                            |                                                                           |
| <i>to hold</i><br>(14.) }                       | —       | —                   | { —go, tiéni, tiéne<br>— — —, — — —                  | —ni, —, —ne<br>—nero                                             | ... tiéni, —ga<br>—gano                 | —ga, —ga, —ga,<br>— — —, — — —, — — —                                     |                                                                           |
| <i>to draw</i> (15.) }                          | —       | —tto                | { —ggo, —ggi, — —<br>—gghiamo, —, —gghiamo           | —ssi, —, —sse<br>—ssero                                          | ... —ggi, —gga<br>—gghiamo, —gghano     | —gga, —gga, —gga,<br>—gghiamo, —gghano, —gghano                           |                                                                           |
|                                                 |         | —                   | { váglio, —, —<br>—go, — —<br>vagliamo, —, —vagliamo | —si, —, —se<br>— — —, — — —                                      | ... — — —<br>vagliamo, —, —vagliano     | váglio, váglio, váglio,<br>vagliamo, —, —vagliano, vagliamo, —, —vagliano |                                                                           |
|                                                 |         |                     | — — —, — — —<br>— — —, — — —                         | —li, —, —le<br>— — —, — — —                                      | ... — — —<br>... — — —                  | vóglio, vóglio, vóglio,<br>vogliamo, —, —vogliano, vogliamo, —, —vogliano |                                                                           |

## LISTS OF ITALIAN IRREGULAR VERBS.

VERBS IN *-ere* AND *-ire*.

| INFINITIVE.                                                  | PAST PART.            | PRETERIT.     | INFINITIVE.                           | PAST PART.       | PRETERIT.        |
|--------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------|---------------|---------------------------------------|------------------|------------------|
| Accénd- <i>ere</i> , to light                                | accéso                | accési.       | Connétt- <i>ere</i> , to connect      | connéssó         | connéssi.        |
| Accórg- <i>ere</i> , to perceive                             | accórto               | accórsi.      | Conósc- <i>ere</i> , to know          | —iúto            | conóbbi.         |
| Affígg- <i>ere</i> , to afflict                              | affísso               | affís-si.     | Conquid- <i>ere</i> , to conquer      | conquísó         | conquísì.        |
| Affígg- <i>ere</i> , to afflict                              | affitto               | afflissi.     | Consist- <i>ere</i> , to consist      | —íto             | —éi.             |
| Allúd- <i>ere</i> , to allude                                | allúso                | allúsi.       | Consúm- <i>ere</i> , to consume       | consúnto         | consúnsi.        |
| Ancíd- <i>ere</i> , to kill                                  | anciso                | ancési.       | *Córr- <i>ere</i> , to run            | córso            | córsi.           |
| Ard- <i>ere</i> , to burn                                    | arso                  | arai.         | *Crésc- <i>ere</i> , to grow          | —iúto            | crébbi.          |
| *Ascénd- <i>ere</i> , to ascend                              | ascéso                | ascési.       | Crocifígg- <i>ere</i> , to crucify    | crocifísso       | crocifíssi.      |
| Ascónd- <i>ere</i> , to conceal                              | { ascósto<br>ascóso   | ascósi.       | Cuóc- <i>ere</i> , } to cook          | cótto            | cóssi.           |
| Assid- <i>ére</i> , to sit down                              | assáso                | assási.       | Cóc- <i>ere</i> , } to cook           | decísó           | decísi.          |
| Assist- <i>ere</i> , to assist                               | —íto                  | —éi.          | Decíd- <i>ere</i> , to decide         |                  |                  |
| Assólv- <i>ere</i> , to absolve                              | { assolúto<br>assólto | —éi.          | Dedú-rre, } to deduce                 | see Addúrre.     |                  |
| *Assórb- <i>ere</i> , to absorb                              | assórto               | assól-si.     | Dedúc- <i>ere</i> , } to deduce       |                  |                  |
| Assúm- <i>ere</i> , to assume                                | assúnto               | —éi.          | Depím- <i>ere</i> , to depress        | depréso          | depréssi.        |
| *Cad- <i>ére</i> , to fall (18.)                             | —úto                  | assúnsi.      | Difén-dere, to defend                 | diféso           | difési.          |
| Chiád- <i>ere</i> , to ask                                   | chiéstó               | caddi.        | Diríg- <i>ere</i> , to direct         | dirétto          | diréssi.         |
| Chiád- <i>ere</i> , to shut                                  | chiúso                | chiési.       | Discút- <i>ere</i> , to discuss       | discússo         | discússi.        |
| Cíng- <i>ere</i> , Cígn- <i>ere</i> , to sur-<br>round, bind | chínso                | chiúsi.       | Dispérd- <i>ere</i> , to disperse     | dispérso         | dispérsi.        |
| Circoncíd- <i>ere</i> , to circumcise                        | cínto                 | cínsi.        | Distingu- <i>ere</i> , to distinguish | distínto         | distínsi.        |
| Collíd- <i>ere</i> , to connive                              | círcincísó            | círcincési.   | Dissuád- <i>ere</i> , to dissuade     | disuásó          | disuási.         |
| Comprím- <i>ere</i> , to compress                            | collúso               | collúsi.      | Divíd- <i>ere</i> , to divide         | divísó           | divísi.          |
| Concéd- <i>ere</i> , to concede                              | compréso              | compréssi.    | Elíd- <i>ere</i> , } to elude         | { elísó<br>elúso | elísì.<br>elúsi. |
| Conclúd- <i>ere</i> , to conclude                            | { —úto<br>concéssó    | —éi or —etti. | Erg- <i>ere</i> , to erect            | erto             | ersi.            |
| Condú-rre, } to conduct                                      | conclúso              | conclúsi.     | Erig- <i>ere</i> , to raise           | erétto           | eréssi.          |
| Condúc- <i>ere</i> , }                                       | see Addúrre.          |               | Esclúd- <i>ere</i> , to exclude       | esclúso          | esclúsi.         |
|                                                              |                       |               | Esig- <i>ere</i> , to exact           | esátto           | —éi.             |
|                                                              |                       |               | Esist- <i>ere</i> , to exist          | —íto             | —éi.             |
|                                                              |                       |               | Espell- <i>ere</i> , to expel         | espúlso          | espúl-si.        |



## ITALIAN IRREGULAR VERBS.

VERBS IN —ERE AND —IRE— (continued).

| INFINITIVE.                                                                  | PAST PART.   | PRETERIT.   | INFINITIVE.                                                       | PAST PART.   | PRETERIT.      |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------|-------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------|----------------|
| Esprim-ere, <i>to express</i>                                                | espréso      | espréssi.   | Métt-ere, <i>to put</i>                                           | méso         | { mísi.        |
| Estingu-ere, <i>to extinguish</i>                                            | estinto      | estínsi.    | Mórd-ere, <i>to bite</i>                                          | móro         | { móssi.       |
| Fénd-ere, <i>to split</i> (conjugate }<br>its compounds as <i>préndere</i> ) | { —úto       | —éi.        | Muóv-ere, } <i>to move</i>                                        | móso         | móssi.         |
|                                                                              | { féso       | —étti.      | Mov-ere, }                                                        | náto         | nássi.         |
| Figg-ere, <i>to fix</i>                                                      | { físo       | físsi.      | * Násc-ere, <i>to be born</i>                                     | néto         | néssi.         |
|                                                                              | { fitto      | fítti.      | Neglig-ere, <i>to neglect</i>                                     | negléto      | negléssi.      |
| Fing-ere, <i>to feign</i>                                                    | finto        | fínsi.      | Nuóc-ere, } <i>to hurt</i>                                        | —iúto        | nóssi.         |
| Fónd-ere, <i>to melt</i>                                                     | fúso         | fússi.      | Noc-ere, }                                                        | offéto       | offéssi.       |
| Fráng-ere, } <i>to break</i>                                                 | fráto        | frássi.     | Opprim-ere, <i>to oppress</i>                                     | oppréso      | oppréssi.      |
| Frágn-ere, }                                                                 | fráto        | frássi.     | Pásc-ere, <i>to feed</i>                                          | —iúto        | —éi.           |
| Frígg-ere, <i>to fry</i>                                                     | fritto       | fríssi.     | Pénd-ere, <i>to hang</i> (its com-<br>pounds as <i>préndere</i> ) | péso         | péssi.         |
| Génuflett-ere, <i>to kneel</i>                                               | génufléso    | génufléssi. | Percuót-ere, <i>to strike</i>                                     | percóso      | percóssi.      |
| * Giúgn-ere, } <i>to arrive</i>                                              | giúto        | giússi.     | Pérd-ere, <i>to lose</i>                                          | { —úto       | { —éi or —étti |
| Illúd-ere, <i>to deceive</i>                                                 | illúso       | illússi.    | Persist-ere, <i>to persist</i>                                    | { péso       | { péssi.       |
| Impéll-ere, <i>to impel</i>                                                  | impúlso      | impúlssi.   | Persuád-ere, <i>to persuade</i>                                   | —íto         | —éi.           |
| Imprim-ere, <i>to impress</i>                                                | impréso      | impréssi.   | Piac-ére, <i>to please</i>                                        | persuáso     | persuássi.     |
| Incid-ere, <i>to engrave</i>                                                 | inciso       | incíssi.    | Piágnere, } <i>to weep</i>                                        | see Giacére  |                |
| Inclúd-ere, <i>to include</i>                                                | inclúso      | inclússi.   | Piágnere, }                                                       | piáto        | piássi.        |
| Indurre, } <i>to induce</i>                                                  | see Addúrre. |             | Píngere, } <i>to paint</i>                                        | píto         | píssi.         |
| Indúc-ere, }                                                                 | —íto         | —éi.        | Pígnere, }                                                        | póto         | póssi.         |
| Insist-ere, <i>to insist</i>                                                 | intercéso    | intercéssi. | Pórgere, <i>to offer</i>                                          | prefísso     | prefíssi.      |
| Intercéd-ere, <i>to intercede</i>                                            | intríso      | intríssi.   | Prefigg-ere, <i>to prefix</i>                                     | —úto         | { —éi or —étti |
| Intríd-ere, <i>to dip</i>                                                    | see Addúrre. |             | Prém-ere, <i>to press</i>                                         | présó        | présí.         |
| Introdú-rre, } <i>to introduce</i>                                           |              |             | Prénd-ere, <i>to take</i>                                         | presúto      | presússi.      |
| Introdúc-ere, }                                                              |              |             | Presúm-ere, <i>to presume</i>                                     | see Addúrre. |                |
| Intrúd-ere, <i>to intrude</i>                                                | intrúso      | intrússi.   | Prodú-rre, } <i>to produce</i>                                    |              |                |
| Invád-ere, <i>to invade</i>                                                  | inváso       | invási.     |                                                                   |              |                |
| Léd-ere, <i>to offend</i>                                                    | léso         | léssi.      |                                                                   |              |                |
| Légg-ere, <i>to read</i>                                                     | léto         | léssi.      |                                                                   |              |                |
| Mérg-ere, <i>to plunge</i>                                                   | mérso        | méssi.      |                                                                   |              |                |
| Misc-ere, <i>to mix</i>                                                      | —iúto        | —éi.        |                                                                   |              |                |

# ITALIAN IRREGULAR VERBS.

xxxv

## VERBS IN —ere AND —ire— (continued).

| INFINITIVE.                      | PAST PART.    | PRETERIT.       | INFINITIVE.                          | PAST PART.    | PRETERIT.       |
|----------------------------------|---------------|-----------------|--------------------------------------|---------------|-----------------|
| Protégg-ere, <i>to protect</i>   | protétto      | protéssi.       | Spánd-ere, <i>to spread</i>          | spáso         | spási.          |
| Púng-ere, } <i>to prick</i>      | púnto         | púnsi.          | Spárg-ere, <i>to spread</i>          | spárso        | spársi.         |
| Pugn-ere, } <i>to prick</i>      |               |                 | Spéng-ere, } <i>to extinguish</i>    | spénto        | spénsi.         |
| Rád-ere, <i>to shave</i>         | ráso          | rási.           | Spegn-ere, } <i>to extinguish</i>    | —úto          | spérsi.         |
| Recíd-ere, <i>to cut</i>         | recíso        | recísi.         | Spérg-ere, <i>to disperse</i>        | spérso        | spérsi.         |
| Redím-ere, <i>to redeem</i>      | redénto       | redénsi.        | String-ere, } <i>to tighten</i>      | strétto       | strínsi.        |
| Régg-ere, <i>to govern</i>       | rétto         | rési.           | Strign-ere, } <i>to tighten</i>      | strútto       | strússi.        |
| Rénd-ere, <i>to restore</i>      | { réso        | rési.           | Strúgg-ere, <i>to melt</i>           | { —úto        | { —éi or —étti. |
|                                  | { —úto        | { —éi or —étti. | Succéd-ere, <i>to succeed</i>        | { —úto        | { —éi or —étti. |
| Reprím-ere, <i>to repress</i>    | représo       | représsi.       | Sussíst-ere, <i>to subsist</i>       | { —úto        | { —éi or —étti. |
| Ríd-ere, <i>to laugh</i>         | ríso          | rísi.           | Tac-ére, <i>to be silent</i>         | { —úto        | { —éi or —étti. |
| Ridú-rre, } <i>to reduce</i>     | see Addúrre   |                 | Téng-ere, <i>to present, tighten</i> | téso          | tési.           |
| Ridúc-ere, } <i>to reduce</i>    |               |                 | Térg-ere, <i>to wipe</i>             | térso         | térsi.          |
| Rifiétt-ere, <i>to reflect</i>   | { —úto        | —éi.            | Tíng-ere, } <i>to dye</i>            | tínto         | tínsi.          |
|                                  | { riflétto    | refléssi.       | Tígn-ere, } <i>to dye</i>            |               |                 |
| Rilúc-ere, <i>to shine again</i> | .....         | { —éi.          | Tógli-ere, } <i>to take away</i>     | see Cógliere. |                 |
|                                  |               | { riflússi.     | Tóre, } <i>to take away</i>          |               |                 |
| Risólv-ere, <i>to resolve</i>    | { risolúto    | —éi or —étti.   | Tónd-ere, <i>to shear</i>            | tóso          | tósi.           |
|                                  | { risólto     | risólússi.      | Tóre-ere, <i>to twist</i>            | tórto         | tórsi.          |
| Rispónd-ere, <i>to answer</i>    | rispósto      | rispóssi.       | Tradú-rre, } <i>to translate</i>     | see Addúrre.  |                 |
| Ród-ere, <i>to gnaw</i>          | róso          | rósi.           | Tradúc-ere, } <i>to translate</i>    |               |                 |
| Rómp-ere, <i>to break</i>        | rótto         | rúppi.          | Uccíd-ere, <i>to kill</i>            | uccíso        | uccísi.         |
| Scégli-ere, <i>to select</i>     | see Cógliere. | scési.          | Ung-ere, } <i>to anoint</i>          | únto          | únsi.           |
| * Scénd-ere, <i>to descend</i>   | scéso         | scórsi.         | Ugn-ere, } <i>to anoint</i>          |               |                 |
| Sciogli-ere, <i>to unbind</i>    | see Cógliere. | scríssi.        | Ved-ére, <i>to see</i> (19.)         | { —úto        | vídi.           |
| Scórg-ere, <i>to discover</i>    | scórto        | scóssi.         | Vinc-ere, <i>to conquer</i>          | { visto       | víddi.          |
| Scrív-ere, <i>to write</i>       | scrítto       |                 | Viv-ere, <i>to live</i> (20.)        | vínto         | vínsi.          |
| Scuót-ere, <i>to shake</i>       | scóso         |                 |                                      | { —úto        | víssi.          |
| Sedú-rre, } <i>to seduce</i>     | see Addúrre.  |                 |                                      | { vissúto     | vólússi.        |
| Sedúc-ere, } <i>to seduce</i>    |               |                 |                                      |               |                 |
| Sólv-ere, <i>to solve</i>        | solúto        | —éi.            |                                      |               |                 |
| * Sórg-ere, <i>to get up</i>     | sórto         | sórsi.          |                                      |               |                 |

# ULAR VERBS.

tion. —ire.

| RIT.          | IMPERATIVE. |        |         | SUBJUNCTIVE. |             |          |
|---------------|-------------|--------|---------|--------------|-------------|----------|
| isti, —isse   | ...         | —      | —ica    | —ica,        | —ica        | —ica     |
| iste, —issero | —iciamo,    | —      | —icano  | —iciamo,     | —iciate,    | —icano.  |
| —             | ...         | muóri, | muóia   | muóia,       | muóia,      | muóia.   |
| —             | muoiámo,    | —      | muóiano | muoiámo,     | muoiáte,    | muóiano. |
| —             | ...         | —i,    | —ga     | —ga,         | —ga,        | —ga.     |
| —             | { sagliámo, | —      | —gano   | { sagliámo,  | { sagliáte, | —gano.   |
|               | { —ghiamo,  |        |         | { —ghiamo,   | { —ghiate,  |          |
| —             | ...         | ódi,   | óda     | óda,         | óda,        | óda.     |
| —             | —           | —      | ódano   | —            | —           | ódano.   |
| —             | ...         | ésci,  | ésca    | ésca,        | ésca,       | ésca.    |
| —             | —           | —      | éscano  | —            | —           | éscano.  |
| —ne           | ...         | viéni, | —ga     | —ga,         | —ga,        | —ga.     |
| —nero         | { —ghiamo   | —      | —gano   | { —ghiamo,   | { —ghiate,  | —gano.   |

—ire.

| INFINITIVE.        | FAST PART. | PRETERIT.          |
|--------------------|------------|--------------------|
| Copr-ire, to cover | copérto    | { —fi.<br>copérsi. |

## LIST OF VERBS IN —IRE

THAT TAKE —*isco*, ETC.<sup>1</sup>, IN THE IND. PRES., SUBJ. PRES., AND IMPERATIVE.

Abbellire, to *embellish*  
 Abhorrire<sup>2</sup>, to *abhor*  
 Abolire, to *abolish*  
 \*Abortire, to *miscarry*  
 Addolcire, to *soften*  
 Adempire, to *fulfil*  
 Aderire, to *adhere*  
 Aggradire, to *accept*  
 Alleggerire, to *assuage*  
 Ambire, to *aspire*  
 Ammolire, to *soften*  
 Ammonire, to *admonish*  
 Ammorbidire, to *soften*  
 Ammutire, } to *become dumb*  
 Ammutolire, }  
 Annichilire, to *annihilate*  
 Annobilire, to *ennoble*  
 Appassire, to *wither*  
 Appetire, to *desire*  
 Applaudire, to *applaud*  
 Ardire<sup>3</sup>, to *dare*  
 Arricchire, to *enrich*  
 Arrossire, to *blush*  
 Arrostitire, to *roast*  
 Arruginire, to *grow rusty*  
 Assalire<sup>4</sup>, to *attack*  
 Asserire, to *assert*  
 Assopire, to *set asleep*

Assorbire, to *absorb*  
 Assordire, to *deafen*  
 Assortire, to *sort*  
 Atterrire, to *affright*  
 Attribuire, to *attribute*  
 Attristire, to *grieve*  
 Avvillire, to *vilify*  
 Balbutire, } to *stammer*  
 Balbuzzire, }  
 Bandire, to *banish*  
 Bianchire, to *whiten*  
 Brunire, to *burnish*  
 Capire, to *understand*  
 Chiarire, to *explain*  
 Colorire, to *dye*  
 Colpire, to *strike*  
 Compartire, to *divide*  
 Compatire, to *pity*  
 Compire, to *finish*  
 Concepire, to *conceive*  
 Condire, to *season*  
 Conferire, to *confer*  
 Contribuire, to *contribute*  
 Costituire, to *constitute*  
 Costruire, to *construct*  
 Custodire, to *guard*  
 Definire, to *define*  
 Differire, to *differ*

Digerire, to *digest*  
 Diminuire, to *diminish*  
 Esaudire, to *grant*  
 Eseguire, to *execute*  
 Esibire, to *exhibit*  
 Fallire, to *fail*  
 Favorire, to *favour*  
 Ferire<sup>5</sup>, to *wound*  
 Finire, to *finish*  
 \*Fiorire, to *flourish*  
 Forbire, to *scrub*  
 Fornire, to *furnish*  
 Garantire, to *warrant*  
 Gemire, to *groan*  
 Gestire, to *gesticulate*  
 Gioire, to *enjoy*  
 Gradire, to *accept*  
 Guarire, to *cure*  
 Guarnire, to *garnish*  
 \*Imbastardire, to *corrupt*  
 \*Imbestialire, to *grow mad*  
 \*Imbruttire, to *become ugly*  
 Immorbidire, to *soften*  
 \*Impadronirsi, to *seize*  
 Impallidire, to *grow pale*  
 Impaurire, to *terrify*  
 \*Impazzire, to *grow mad*  
 Impedire, to *hinder*

<sup>1</sup> See Table of Terminations, page xxx. <sup>2</sup> This verb also makes in the pres. tense *abborro, abborri, abborre, abborrono*. <sup>3</sup> The first person plur. of this verb, ind. pres., subj. pres., and imperative is *abbiamo ardire*, instead of *ardiamo*, which belongs to the verb *ardere, to burn*; for the same reason the second person plur. subj. pres. is *abbiate ardire* and the pres. participle *avendo ardire*. <sup>4</sup> This verb also makes *assalto, assalti, assale, assalgono*, in the pres. tense, and *assalse* in the third person sing. of the preterit. <sup>5</sup> *Ferire* makes also *fero, feri, fere, ferono*, in the pres. tense, and *feruto* in the past participles.

Impiccolire, to diminish  
 \*Impietrire, to petrify  
 \*Impigrire, to grow lazy  
 Impoverire, to impoverish  
 \*Impoltronire, to grow idle  
 Imputridire, to putrify  
 \*Inacidire, to grow sour  
 \*Inaridire, to wither  
 Inasprire, to exasperate  
 \*Incallire, to grow hard  
 Incenerire, to burn to ashes  
 Incivilire, to grow civil  
 Incolorirsi, to colour  
 Incoraggiare, to encourage  
 \*Incrudire, to exasperate  
 Indebolire, to weaken  
 Indurire, to harden  
 Infastidire, to trouble  
 Inferire, to infer  
 \*Inferocire, to become cruel  
 Influire, to influence  
 Ingagliardire, to grow brisk  
 \*Ingelosire, to grow jealous  
 Ingentilire, to ennoble  
 \*Ingerirsi, to meddle  
 \*Ingiallire, to grow yellow  
 \*Ingobbire, to become humpbacked  
 Ingrandire, to increase  
 \*Inspidire, to become insipid  
 \*Insolentire, to grow saucy

Inscrivere, to insert  
 \*Insuperbire, to grow proud  
 Intenerire, to mollify  
 Intiepidire, to cool  
 Intimidire, to frighten  
 \*Intisichire, to grow consumptive  
 Invaghire, to fall in love  
 \*Inverdire, to grow green  
 Invigorire, to strengthen  
 Inumidire, to moisten  
 \*Irrugginire, to rust  
 \*Marcire, to rot  
 Mentire, to lie  
 Muggire, to bellow  
 Munire, to furnish  
 Obbedire, to obey  
 Ordire, to warp  
 Patire, to endure  
 \*Partire, to depart  
 Partorire, to bring forth  
 Preferire, to prefer  
 Proibire, to prohibit  
 Profferire, to utter  
 Proseguire, to pursue  
 Pulire, to clean  
 Punire, to punish  
 \*Rancidire, to grow rank  
 Rapire, to ravish  
 Restituire, to restore

\*Rimbambire, to grow childish  
 \*Ringiovenire, to grow young  
 Riverire, to respect  
 Ruggire, to roar  
 Sbalordire, to astonish  
 \*Sbigottire, to despond  
 Scaturire, to flow  
 Schermire, to fence  
 Schernire, to mock  
 \*Scolorire, to fade  
 Seppellire, to bury  
 Smaltire, to digest  
 \*Smarrire, to lose  
 Smentire, to give the lie  
 Sminuire, to diminish  
 Sorbire, to absorb  
 \*Sparire, to disappear  
 Spedire, to dispatch  
 Stabilire, to establish  
 \*Stordire, to stun  
 \*Stupire, to amaze  
 \*Svanire, to vanish  
 Suggestire, to suggest  
 Supplyre, to supply  
 Tradire, to betray  
 Tramortire, to faint away  
 Trasgredire, to transgress  
 Ubbidire, to obey  
 Unire, to unite

IRREGULAR TENSES OF THE VERBS TO WHICH FIGURES ARE ANNEXED IN  
THE PRECEDING TABLES.

| FUTURE.    | COND.     | IMP. IND.                        | IMP. SUBJ. | FUTURE.     | COND.    | IMP. IND. | IMP. SUBJ. |
|------------|-----------|----------------------------------|------------|-------------|----------|-----------|------------|
| 1. Andrò   | andréi    | —<br>facéva<br>adducéva<br>beéva | déssi.     | 12. Rimarrò | rimarréi | dicéva    | dicéssi.   |
| 2. Darò    | daréi     |                                  | facéssi.   | 13. Saprò   | sapréi   |           |            |
| 3. Farò    | faréi     |                                  | adducéssi. | 14. Terrò   | terréi   |           |            |
| 4. Addurrò | addurréi  |                                  | beéssi.    | 15. Trarrò  | trarréi  |           |            |
| 5. . . . . | . . . . . |                                  |            | 16. Varrò   | varréi   |           |            |
| 6. { Corrà | corréi    | porréva                          | porréssi.  | 17. Vorrò   | vorréi   |           |            |
| { Coglièrò | coglièrèi |                                  |            | 18. Cadrò   | cadréi   |           |            |
| 7. Dorrò   | dorréi    |                                  |            | 19. Vedrà   | vedréi   |           |            |
| 8. Dovrà   | dovréi    |                                  |            | 20. Vivrà   | vivréi   |           |            |
| 9. Parrò   | parréi    |                                  |            | 21. Dirò    | diréi    |           |            |
| 10. Porrò  | porréi    |                                  |            | 22. Verrò   | verrei   |           |            |
| 11. Potrò  | potréi    |                                  |            |             |          |           |            |

IMPERSONAL VERBS.

Accáde, *avviene, it happens.*  
 Básta, *it suffices.*  
 Bisógna, *it is necessary.*  
 Grándina, *it hails.*  
 Lampéggia, baléna, *it lightens.*

Névica, *it snows.*  
 Non oecórre, *it is not necessary.*  
 Páre, *it seems.*  
 Pióve, *it rains.*  
 Tuóna, *it thunders.*

These verbs have only the third person of each tense, and generally follow the regular conjugations.

Some verbs accompanied by the pronouns *mi, ti, gli, le, ei, vi, loro*, become impersonal, and also some active verbs accompanied by the pronoun *si*; as, *mi piace*, I like; *si dice*, it is said; *mi rincresce*, I am sorry.

## DEFECTIVE VERBS.

| INFINITIVE.                                                               | PRESENT.                            | IMPERF.                                                 | PRETERIT.                                             | FUTURE.                                         | CONDITIONAL.                                         | PRES. SUBJ.                                                      | IMP. SUBJ.                   | PAST PART.                            |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| * Calére, <i>to care</i><br>Lícere, } <i>to be permitted</i><br>Lécere, } | mi calé<br>mi fíce, or<br>léce      | mi caléva                                               | mi calse                                              | mi calerà                                       | mi calerébbe                                         | mi cáglia<br><br>AND IMPER.<br>riéd-a<br>—a<br>—a<br>eghino —ano | mi calése                    | calúto.<br>mi è lícito,<br>or lécito. |
| Riédere, <i>to return</i>                                                 | riédo<br>—i<br>—e<br>riédono        |                                                         |                                                       |                                                 |                                                      |                                                                  |                              |                                       |
| Scérnere, <i>to discern</i>                                               | scérno<br>—i<br>—e<br>—iámo<br>—ete |                                                         | (in poetry,<br>egli scerse)                           |                                                 |                                                      |                                                                  |                              |                                       |
| * Gíre, <i>to go</i> (a verb seldom<br>used in prose).                    | (voi) gíte                          | gíva<br>gívi<br>gíva, gía<br>gívámo<br>gíváte<br>gívano | gíi<br>gísti<br>gí or gío<br>gímmo<br>gíste<br>gírono | gírò<br>—rái<br>—rà<br>—rémo<br>—réte<br>—ráuno | gírúi<br>—esti<br>—ebbe<br>—emmo<br>—este<br>—ebbero | IMPERATIVE.<br>gíte (voi)<br><br><br>IMPERATIVE.<br>íte (voi)    | gíssi<br>gíssi<br>gisse, &c. | gíto.                                 |
| * Ire, <i>to go</i>                                                       |                                     | íva<br>ivano                                            |                                                       | irò<br>irái<br>irà, &c.                         |                                                      |                                                                  |                              | íto.                                  |
| Olíre, <i>to smell good</i>                                               |                                     | olíva<br>olívi<br>olíva<br>olívano                      |                                                       |                                                 |                                                      |                                                                  |                              |                                       |

# MONEY TABLE, SHOWING THE USUAL VALUE OF FRENCH COINS IN ENGLAND

from a napoleon down to five centimes.

| fr. | s. | d.    | cent. | sous. | d.                 |
|-----|----|-------|-------|-------|--------------------|
| 20  | =  | 16 8  | 100   | =     | 20 (or 1 franc) 10 |
| 19  | =  | 15 10 | 95    | =     | 19 9½              |
| 18  | =  | 15 0  | 90    | =     | 18 9               |
| 17  | =  | 14 2  | 85    | =     | 17 8½              |
| 16  | =  | 13 4  | 80    | =     | 16 8               |
| 15  | =  | 12 6  | 75    | =     | 15 7½              |
| 14  | =  | 11 8  | 70    | =     | 14 7               |
| 13  | =  | 10 10 | 65    | =     | 13 6½              |
| 12  | =  | 10 0  | 60    | =     | 12 6               |
| 11  | =  | 9 2   | 55    | =     | 11 5½              |
| 10  | =  | 8 4   | 50    | =     | 10 5               |
| 9   | =  | 7 6   | 45    | =     | 9 4½               |
| 8   | =  | 6 8   | 40    | =     | 8 4                |
| 7   | =  | 5 10  | 35    | =     | 7 3½               |
| 6   | =  | 5 0   | 30    | =     | 6 3                |
| 5   | =  | 4 2   | 25    | =     | 5 2½               |
| 4   | =  | 3 4   | 20    | =     | 4 2                |
| 3   | =  | 2 6   | 15    | =     | 3 1½               |
| 2   | =  | 1 8   | 10    | =     | 2 (or 1 décime) 1  |
| 1   | =  | 10    | 5     | =     | 1 ½                |

# TABLE OF FRENCH MEASURES AND WEIGHTS REDUCED TO ENGLISH DITTO.

| Measure of Weight. |          |      |            | Measure of Capacity.             | Long Measure. |               |
|--------------------|----------|------|------------|----------------------------------|---------------|---------------|
|                    | grammes. | lbs. | oz. deims. |                                  |               | feet. inches. |
| 1 kilogramme       | = 1000   | = 2  | 3 4½       | 1 litre = 2·113 wine pints.      | 1 mètre       | = 3 3·871     |
| 1 livre (pound)    | = 500    | = 1  | 1 10½      | Measure of Surface.              | 1 pied (foot) | = 1 1·123     |
| 1 once (oz.)       | = 31·3   | =    | 1 1½       | 1 centiare = 1·196 square yards. | 1 aune (yard) | = 3 10·114    |



## MONEY TABLE,

| PLACES.             | COINS.                                                   | Value in Sterling.  | Standard Weight. |
|---------------------|----------------------------------------------------------|---------------------|------------------|
|                     |                                                          | s. d.               | dwt. gr. m.      |
| AUSTRIA . . . . .   | <b>*Souverain</b> ... ..                                 | 13 10 <sup>92</sup> | 3 13 15          |
|                     | <b>*Double ducat</b> ... ..                              | 18 9 <sup>97</sup>  | 4 20 5           |
|                     | Florin or Half rixdollar = 60 <i>Kreuzers</i> ... ..     | 2 1 <sup>07</sup>   | 8 2 1            |
|                     | Halbepopf or 10 <i>Kreuzer</i> piece ... ..              | 4 <sup>01</sup>     | 1 7 1            |
|                     | Lira, new = 100 <i>Centesimi</i> ... ..                  | 7 <sup>37</sup>     | 2 9 0            |
| AUSTRIAN ITALY . .  | <b>*Ducat</b> ... ..                                     | 9 4 <sup>12</sup>   | 2 19 11          |
| BAVARIA . . . . .   | Piece of 48 grotes ... ..                                | 2 3 <sup>64</sup>   | 8 22 1           |
| BREMEN . . . . .    | Tael = 10 Mace = 100 Canderin = 1000 <i>Cash</i> ... ..  | 5 7 <sup>30</sup>   |                  |
| CHINA, BIRMAH . .   | Rigsbank Dollar = 96 <i>Skilling</i> ... ..              | 2 2 <sup>36</sup>   | 9 18 2           |
| DENMARK . . . . .   | <b>*Mohur Sicca</b> of Bengal ... ..                     | 30 1 <sup>04</sup>  | 8 15 0           |
| EAST-INDIES . . . . | <b>*Rupee, Bombay</b> (1818) ... ..                      | 29 1 <sup>78</sup>  | 7 11 13          |
|                     | <b>*Rupee, Madras</b> = 15 Silver Rupee (1818) ... ..    | 29 2 <sup>42</sup>  | 7 12 0           |
|                     | Company's Rupee = 16 Annas = 192 <i>Pice</i> ... ..      | 1 11 <sup>11</sup>  | 7 22 0           |
|                     | Sicca Rupee = 1 $\frac{1}{16}$ of Company's Rupee ... .. | 2 0 <sup>54</sup>   | 7 22 0           |
|                     | Bombay Rupee = 400 <i>Reas</i> (1818) ... ..             | 1 11 <sup>01</sup>  | 7 10 4           |
|                     | Gulden of the Dutch E. I. Company ... ..                 | 1 8 <sup>72</sup>   | 6 16 6           |
| EGYPT . . . . .     | <b>*Sequin</b> ... ..                                    | 5 3 <sup>97</sup>   | 1 16 16          |
|                     | Plaster or Grouch = 40 <i>Paras</i> ... ..               | 2 <sup>79</sup>     | 1 20 8           |
| FRANCE, BELGIUM AND | <b>*Napoléon</b> or 20 Franc piece ... ..                | 15 10 <sup>50</sup> | 4 1 10           |
| SARDINIA . . . . .  | Franc = 100 <i>Centimes</i> ... ..                       | 9 <sup>69</sup>     | 3 3 1            |
| FRANKFORT . . . . . | <b>*Ducat</b> ... ..                                     | 9 4 <sup>34</sup>   | 2 9 14           |
| GERMANY . . . . .   | Imperial Ducat ... ..                                    | 9 3 <sup>70</sup>   | 2 9 8            |
| S. WEST . . . . .   | Florin = 60 <i>Kreutzers</i> ... ..                      | 1 7 <sup>77</sup>   | 6 9 2            |
| GREECE . . . . .    | Drachmi = 100 <i>Lepti</i> ... ..                        | 8 <sup>41</sup>     | 2 21 5           |
| GREAT-BRITAIN . .   | <b>*Sovereign</b> = 20 Shillings ... ..                  | 20 0 <sup>00</sup>  | 5 3 5            |
|                     | Shilling = 12 <i>Pence</i> ... ..                        | 1 <sup>00</sup>     | 3 15 6           |
| HOLLAND AND JAVA .  | Florin or Guilder ... ..                                 | 1 8 <sup>49</sup>   | 6 14 14          |
| MALTA . . . . .     | Ounce = 30 <i>Tari</i> ... ..                            | 3 11 <sup>11</sup>  | 15 4 14          |
| NAPLES . . . . .    | Ducat = 10 <i>Carlini</i> ... ..                         | 3 5 <sup>20</sup>   | 13 7 0           |
|                     | Carline = 10 <i>Grani</i> ... ..                         | 3 <sup>99</sup>     | 13 11 4          |

\* The gold coins are distinguished by capitals; those in italics are of copper or other inferior metal.

# SHOWING THE BRITISH VALUE OF FOREIGN COINS.

xlili

| PLACES.             | COINS.                                                                                                                                                                               | Value in Sterling. |        | Standard Weight. |     |    |
|---------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------|--------|------------------|-----|----|
|                     |                                                                                                                                                                                      | s.                 | d.     | dwt.             | gr. | m. |
| NORWAY . . . . .    | Species Dollar = 120 <i>Skilling</i> ... ..                                                                                                                                          | 4                  | 4 ·87  | 18               | 15  | 16 |
| PORTUGAL . . . . .  | * <i>Dobraon</i> = 24,000 <i>Reis</i> ... ..                                                                                                                                         | 134                | 3 ·96  | 34               | 12  | 0  |
|                     | * <i>Crusado</i> new = 480 <i>Reis</i> ... ..                                                                                                                                        | 2                  | 7 ·43  | 0                | 16  | 2  |
| PRUSSIA . . . . .   | * <i>Frederick</i> d'or ... ..                                                                                                                                                       | 16                 | 3 ·42  | 4                | 4   | 13 |
|                     | Dollar or Thaler = 30 Silver Groschen ... ..                                                                                                                                         | 2                  | 11 ·27 | 11               | 9   | 0  |
|                     | Piece of 6 Silver Groschen ... ..                                                                                                                                                    |                    | 8 ·69  | 2                | 19  | 6  |
| ROME . . . . .      | * <i>Sequin</i> (1760) ... ..                                                                                                                                                        | 9                  | 2 ·86  | 2                | 9   | 0  |
|                     | Scudo (since 1753) = 10 <i>Paoli</i> ... ..                                                                                                                                          | 4                  | 3 ·87  | 16               | 17  | 13 |
|                     | <i>Paolo</i> = 10 <i>Baiocchi</i> ... ..                                                                                                                                             |                    | 5 ·19  | 1                | 16  | 4  |
|                     | <i>Grosso</i> = 5 <i>Baiocchi</i> ... ..                                                                                                                                             |                    | 2 ·58  | 0                | 20  | 0  |
| RUSSIA . . . . .    | * <i>Imperial</i> of 10 Rubles ... ..                                                                                                                                                | 32                 | 2 ·31  | 8                | 6   | 8  |
|                     | Ruble = 100 <i>Copecks</i> ... ..                                                                                                                                                    | 3                  | 2 ·83  | 12               | 12  | 12 |
| SICILY . . . . .    | <i>Oncia</i> = 30 <i>Tari</i> ... ..                                                                                                                                                 | 10                 | 3 ·60  | 2                | 15  | 8  |
|                     | Scudo = 12 <i>Tarins</i> = 120 <i>Grani</i> ... ..                                                                                                                                   | 4                  | 0 ·62  | 15               | 16  | 6  |
| SPAIN (ALSO PERU) . | * <i>Quadruple Pistole</i> ... ..                                                                                                                                                    | 63                 | 9 ·62  | 16               | 9   | 6  |
|                     | * <i>Pistole</i> of 1801 ... ..                                                                                                                                                      | 15                 | 11 ·35 | 4                | 2   | 6  |
|                     | Dollar of late coinage... ..                                                                                                                                                         | 4                  | 3 ·79  | 16               | 17  | 0  |
|                     | Real of new plate (1795) ... ..                                                                                                                                                      |                    | 5 ·04  | 1                | 15  | 0  |
| SWEDEN . . . . .    | * <i>Ducat</i> ... ..                                                                                                                                                                | 9                  | 2 ·22  | 2                | 0   | 12 |
|                     | <i>Rixdollar</i> = 48 <i>Skilling</i> ... ..                                                                                                                                         | 4                  | 7 ·22  | 17               | 19  | 10 |
| SWITZERLAND . . .   | The new coinage (1850), distinguished by the word "Helvetia" on the obverse, consists of francs and centimes, and is in conformity with that of France. See French Coins, page xlii. |                    |        |                  |     |    |
| TURKEY . . . . .    | * <i>Sequin</i> <i>fonducli</i> ... ..                                                                                                                                               | 7                  | 6 ·26  | 1                | 22  | 7  |
|                     | <i>Piastre</i> (1818) = 40 <i>Paras</i> ... ..                                                                                                                                       |                    | 9 ·45  | 3                | 1   | 4  |
| TUSCANY . . . . .   | <i>Lira</i> = 100 <i>Centesimi</i> ... ..                                                                                                                                            |                    | 7 ·45  | 2                | 9   | 16 |
|                     | <i>Paolo</i> ... ..                                                                                                                                                                  |                    | 5 ·19  | 1                | 16  | 4  |
| UNITED STATES . .   | Dollar 1802 = 100 <i>Cents</i> ... ..                                                                                                                                                | 4                  | 3 ·42  | 16               | 14  | 0  |
|                     | * <i>Eagle</i> ... ..                                                                                                                                                                | 43                 | 6 ·66  | 11               | 4   | 8  |

**COMMERCIAL TERMS.**

Acceptance,  
 Acceptor,  
 Accountant.  
 Agent or Factor,  
 Arbitration,  
 Auction,  
 Banker,  
 Bankrupt or Insolvent,  
 Barter,  
 Broker,  
 Buyer,  
 Cashier,  
 Cocket,  
 Consignment,  
 Contract,  
 Convoy,  
 Creditor,  
 Custom-house,  
 Debtor,  
 Discount,  
 Draft,  
 Drawer,  
 Drawee,  
 Duty,  
 Endorser,  
 Exchange,  
 Exporter,  
 Re-verse,

Impost,  
 Importer,  
 Inventory,  
 Journal,  
 Loan,  
 Mart,  
 Merchant,  
 Mortgage, negotiate,  
 Net weight,  
 Notary public,  
 Note of hand,  
 Partner,  
 Power of attorney,  
 Premium,  
 Remittance,  
 Receipt,  
 Retail,  
 Retail (to),  
 Sample,  
 Stamp,  
 Schedule,  
 Seller,  
 Tariff,  
 Underwriter,  
 Usance,  
 Vendor,  
 Vendee,  
 Voucher,  
 Wanted,  
 Warehouse,

Annahme, Acceptation,  
 Acceptant,  
 Rechner,  
 Agent,  
 Entscheidung, Arbitrage,  
 Versteigerung, Auction,  
 Geldwechsler, Banquier,  
 Bankerott,  
 Tausch, Baratt, Troc,  
 Mäkler, Courtier,  
 Einkäufer,  
 Kassirer,  
 Zollsiegel,  
 Uebermachung, Consignation,  
 Vertrag, Contract,  
 Bedeckung, Ccnvoi,  
 Gläubiger,  
 Zollhaus, Douane,  
 Schuldner, Debitor,  
 Abrechnung, Abzug, Disconto,  
 Tratte, Ziehung,  
 Zieber, Entnehmer,  
 Bezogener,  
 Zoll, Taxe,  
 Endossör, Indossent,  
 Börse, Wechsel-bank, Cours,  
 Ausführrer,  
 Accise,  
 Abtretung, Faillite,  
 Fracht, Ladung,  
 Burgschaft, Garantie,  
 Einfuhr, Import,

Impost,  
 Einführer,  
 Inventarium,  
 Tagebuch, Journal,  
 Anleihe,  
 Markt,  
 Kaufmann, Negociant,  
 Hypothek,  
 Netto (Gewicht),  
 Notarius,  
 Promessa, Verschreibung,  
 Associé,  
 Vollmacht,  
 Preis,  
 Remise,  
 Empfangsschein, Acquit,  
 Kleinhandel, Detailhandel,  
 Kleinhandel treiben,  
 Probe, Muster, Echantill  
 Stempel,  
 Liste, Zettel,  
 Verkäufer,  
 Zollverzeichnis, Tarif,  
 Assecurant,  
 Uso,  
 Verkäufer,  
 Käufer,  
 Schein, Document,  
 Wird gesucht, or ge/  
 Packhaus, Niederlag/  
 Kai, Werft,  
 Großhandel,

# COMMERCIAL TERMS.

xi

Acceptation,  
 Accepteur,  
 Compteur,  
 Agent.  
 Arbitrage,  
 Encan,  
 Banquier,  
 Banqueroutier,  
 Troc,  
 Courtier,  
 Acheteur,  
 Caissier,  
 Permis de douane,  
 Consignation,  
 Convention,  
 Convoi, escorte,  
 Créancier,  
 La douane,  
 Débiteur,  
 Escompte,  
 Traite,  
 Tireur,  
 Payeur,  
 Droit,  
 Endosseur,  
 La bourse, le cours,  
 Expéditeur, exportateur,  
 Accise,  
 Faillite,  
 Fret,  
 Garantie,  
 Importation,

Impôt,  
 Importeur,  
 Inventaire,  
 Journal,  
 Prêt, emprunt,  
 Marché,  
 Négociant,  
 Hypothèque,  
 Net, poids net,  
 Notaire,  
 Promesse,  
 Associé,  
 Pouvoir,  
 Prime,  
 Remise,  
 Quittance,  
 Détail,  
 Détailler,  
 Echantillon,  
 Timbre,  
 Cédule,  
 Vendeur,  
 Tarif,  
 Assureur,  
 Usance,  
 Vendeur,  
 Acheteur,  
 Preuve,  
 On demande,  
 Magasin,  
 Quai,  
 En gros,

Accettazione,  
 Accettatore,  
 Arimmetico, calculatore,  
 Agente,  
 Arbitrato,  
 Incanto,  
 Banchiere,  
 Mercante fallito,  
 Baratto,  
 Rigattiere,  
 Compratore,  
 Cassiere,  
 Licenza della dogana,  
 Consegnaione,  
 Contratto,  
 Convoglio, scorta,  
 Creditore,  
 La dogana,  
 Debitore,  
 Sconto,  
 Cambiale, tratta,  
 Traente,  
 Pagatore,  
 Dazio,  
 Indossatore, giratario,  
 La borsa, cambio, baratto,  
 Asportatore,  
 Tassa,  
 Fallimento,  
 Nolo, noleggio,  
 Guarentia,  
 Entrata di robe, importazione,

Imposta.  
 Importatore.  
 Inventario.  
 Giornale.  
 Prestito.  
 Fiera, mercato.  
 Mercante.  
 Ipoteca.  
 Netto.  
 Notario.  
 Promessa.  
 Socio.  
 Potenza.  
 Premio.  
 Rimessa.  
 Ricevuta.  
 Minuto.  
 Vendere a minuto.  
 Esempio.  
 Bolla.  
 Sedola.  
 Venditore,  
 Tariffa.  
 Assicuratore.  
 Uso.  
 Venditore.  
 Compratore.  
 Testimonianza.  
 Si domanda.  
 Magazzino.  
 Molo.  
 Vendita all'ingrosso

## BILLS, RECEIPTS, &amp;c.

*Receipt for Money.*

LONDON, —  
Received from (or of) Mr. — the sum of three hundred and fifty pounds five shillings and fivepence for goods as per invoice, dated 4th October, 1850.

£350 5 5

*Promissory Note, or Note of Hand.*

LONDON, —  
Three months after date I promise to pay Mr. — or order the sum of eighty-six pounds ten shillings and sixpence for value received.

£86 10 6

*Bill of Exchange.*

LIVERPOOL, —  
Two months after date pay to Mr. Thomas Smith or order the sum of three hundred and fifty pounds eighteen shillings and tenpence, for value received.

£350 18 10

Accepted,

E. JONES.

To Mr. Edward Jones, Liverpool.

£566 10 0

LONDON, —  
At sight (or — days after date) pay to Messrs. Roberts & Co. the sum of five hundred and sixty-six pounds and ten shillings for value received, and place it to account as per advice.

Accepted,

A. JOHNSON.

To Mr. Arthur Johnson, Liverpool.

*Quittung oder Empfangschein.*

LONDON, den —  
Ich bescheinige hiermit von Herrn — die Summe von hundert und fünfzig Pfund Sterling fünf Schilling und Pence Werth in Waaren laut meiner Factura von 4<sup>ten</sup> Oct. 1850, richtig empfangen zu haben.

£350 5 5

*Verschreibung.*

LONDON, den —  
In drei Monaten verpflichte ich mich an Herrn — oder dessen Order die Summe von sechs und achtzig Pfund Sterling zehn Schilling und sechs Pence Werth in Waaren empfangen zu bezahlen.

£86 10 6

*Wechselbrief.*

LIVERPOOL, den —  
Nach zwei Monaten belieben Sie zu zahlen, an Herrn Thomas Smith oder dessen Order in London die Summe von drei hundert und fünfzig Pfund Sterling achtzehn Schilling und zehn Pence Werth Waaren empfangen.

Gut für £350 18 10

Acceptirt,

E. JONES.

An Herrn Edward Jones, Liverpool.

Gut für £566 10 0

LONDON, den —  
Nach Sicht (oder — Tagen) belieben Sie zu zahlen an Herrn Roberts & Comp<sup>ns</sup> die Summe von fünf hundert sechs und sechzig Pfund Sterling zehn Schilling Werth empfangen, und stellen Sie dieselbe auf Rechnung laut Bericht.

Acceptirt,

A. JOHNSON.

An Herrn Arthur Johnson, Liverpool.

# BILLS, RECEIPTS, &c.

xlvii

## *Reçu.*

LONDRES, le —  
trois cent cinquante livres  
contre marchandises portées  
Q.

## *payer.*

LONDRES, le —  
le payer à M. — ou à son  
livres sterling dix schellings

## *ingé.*

LIVERPOOL, le —  
à payer à Monsieur Thomas  
somme de trois cent cinquante  
dix pence, valeur reçue.

Accepté,

E. JONES.

LONDRES, le —  
ous plaira payer à Messieurs  
cent soixante-six livres ster-  
que vous passerez en compte

Accepté,

A. JOHNSON.

1.

## *Ricevuta.*

LONDRA, li —  
Io sottoscritto, confesso d' avere ricevuto dal Signor — la  
somma di tre cento cinquanta lire sterline cinque scellini cinque  
denari per mercanzie secondo la mia polizza.

£350 5 5

## *Promessa di Pagamento.*

LONDRA, li —  
A tre mese data pagherò al Signor — o al suo ordine la  
somma di ottanta sei lire sterline dieci scellini e sei denari per  
valuta ricevuta.

£86 10 6

## *Cambiale.*

Per £350 18 10

LIVERPOOL, li —  
A due mese vista compiacetevi di pagare al Signor Thomas  
Smith o al suo ordine la somma di tre cento cinquanta lire ster-  
line diciotto scellini e dieci denari valuta ricevuta.

Accettata,

E. JONES.

Al Signor Edward Jones, a Liverpool.

Per £566 10 0

LONDRA, li —  
A vista (o — giorni vista) compiacetevi di pagare ai Signori  
Robarts e Comp<sup>a</sup> la somma di cinque cento sessanta sei lire  
sterline dieci scellini valuta ricevuta, e ponete in conto secondo  
l' avviso.

Protesa.

A. JOHNSON.

Al Signor Arthur Johnson, a Liverpool.

PARIS, — the —

Sir,

Having to take up a bill, and being short of cash, I take the liberty of troubling you for the small balance of our account now due to me (or in my favour).

I am, Sir,

Your very humble servant,

D. P. T.

LONDON, — the —

Sir,

I have received yours of the——. I remit you by this day's post a bill of exchange (payable at sight) upon Messrs. —— & Co. for ——.

I am, Sir,

Your very obedient servant,

J. C. B.

PARIS, — the —

Sir,

—— together with your

Mein F

Da ich einer  
heit, Sie in Ri  
zwischen uns i

Ich l

Mein !

Ich habe  
überschicke i  
Herrn—— u

Meir

Ich habe

# MERCANTILE CORRESPONDENCE.

xliv

PARIS, le —

Monsieur,

Ayant à payer un effet, et manquant de fonds pour le moment, je prends la liberté de vous importuner au sujet de la petite balance de notre compte qui se trouve en ma faveur.

J'ai l'honneur d'être, Monsieur,

Votre très-humble serviteur,

D. P. T.

LONDRES, le —

Monsieur,

J'ai reçu votre lettre du —. Je remets ci-joint par le courrier une lettre de change (payable à vue) sur Messieurs — et C<sup>e</sup> de —.

J'ai l'honneur d'être, Monsieur,

Votre très-humble serviteur,

J. C. B.

PARIS, le —

Monsieur,

J'ai sous les yeux votre lettre du — avec votre traite sur Messieurs — et C<sup>e</sup> de — livres sterling — schellings et — pence; elle a été acceptée et j'en ai porté le montant à votre compte.

J'ai l'honneur d'être, Monsieur,

Votre très-humble serviteur,

D. P. T.

A Monsieur —,

Banquier (or Négociant),

(à) Londres

PARIGI, li —

Signore,

Dovendo pagare una cambiale, e mancando in questo momento di danaro, ardisco domandarle (or domandarvi) il poco di che Ella mi è (or mi siete) debitore a saldo del nostro conto.

Ho l'onore di dirmi, Signore,

Suo (or vostro) umilissimo servitore,

D. P. T.

LONDRA, li —

Signore,

Ho ricevuto la sua (or la vostra) lettera del —. Le (or vi) spedisco colla posta corrente una cambiale (a vista) pei Signori — e Compagnia di —.

Ho l'onore di dirmi, Signore,

Suo umilissimo servitore,

J. C. B.

PARIGI, li —

Signore,

Sto appunto rileggendo la sua (or vostra) lettera del — colla sua (or vostra) cambiale sui Signori — e Compagnia di — lire sterline — scellini — denari; fu accettata, ed ho messo la somma totale nel suo (or vostro) conto.

Ho l'onore di dirmi, Signore,

Suo umilissimo servitore,

D. P. T.

Al Signore —,

Banchiere (or Negoziante),

(a) Londra.





LONDON

PRINTED BY SPOTTISWOODE AND CO.

NEW-STREET SQUARE



